

*W. M. McKelvey*

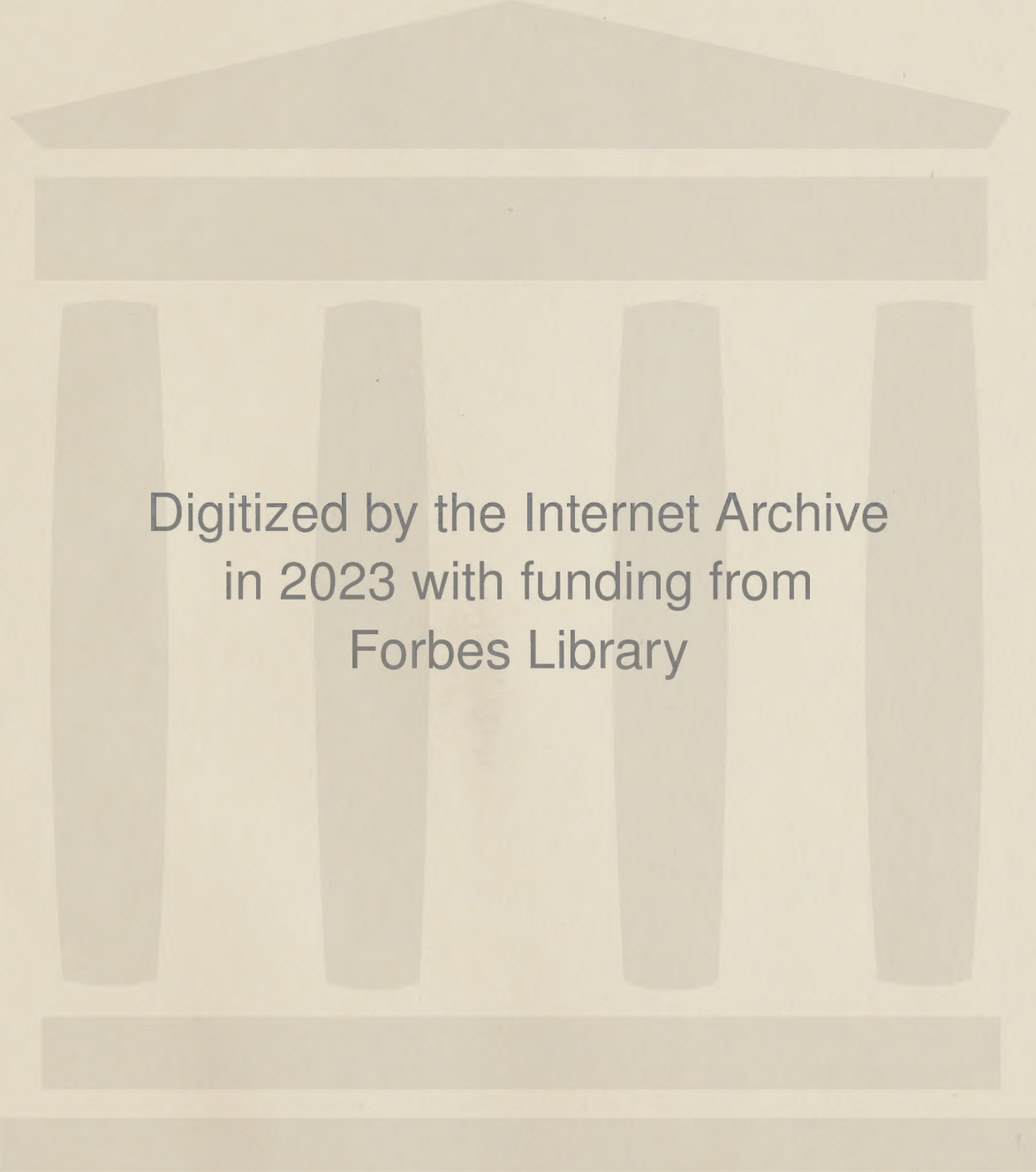












Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2023 with funding from  
Forbes Library











Miscellaneous - No. 7.

Begun 1850. - in Maine.



# Contents

Norridgewock	pages 1. 2. 3.
Natural History of Selborne, & Antiquities	4-18
Burtons Melancholly	14. 29
Geology of Maine	30. 41
English Poets & Prose writers in R.s. Dec.	- 42
History of East Retford and West Retford.	43-46.
Syell's Travels & Geology in N. A.	- 47-48
Pictorial History of England	50-167.
Thomas Arnold's Works	168-174
<sup>magazine in Progress &amp; English Church</sup> Many Things or Miscellaneous	175 178.
The Doctor, or old English House, &c	180. 181.
Miscellaneous, (Dancing, Passage from England)	182-185
England, Education, Vicar of Bray, &c	
History of Maine & other things regarding Maine	186-219
History of New Netherlands & Illaps.	220-243
Rev Thomas Smith of Kalmouth &	244-247
Rev Samuel Deane of do.	248-267
Abnaki Language, from Râle	268-269
Temperature of the weather - from Dr. Holyoke.	
Sermons & Discourses on Various occasions	
and Treatises - "Peril of the Times", "Family Duties", "The Lords Day", "Winter & Summer", Election Sermons, "Legacy of Peace", "Debts Discharge", "Gaming Humor", "Love of God", "Power of the Fraternity", "Defects of Preachers", "Funeral Sermons", "Thanksgiving Sermons", About Allie O. Piracles, on Earthquake, Ordination Sermons, &c	270-293
Herbert's "Country Parson" & his poems	294-300.
Swift's "Parson"	300.
Bishop Hopkins, Sermons &c	301. 302
Things in England from Weekly Dispatch.	302. 305.
Old Nations about Women	306. 307
Oppression of the Poor, and Rich & Poor	308. 309
The Clergy	309.
Influence of Authority	310-315
Things in England - Water in London. High & Low.	316.
Marriage in Scotland	317.
Things in England -	
Church of E. Report about Crimes	318
Pauperism, Mortality in England, Geneva, &c	319
Geneva Morals before Calvin	319
Newspapers in England	320. 321
Wales, Education, Morals &c	322. 325
Wahornet	322



Contents	Pages
British ministers, Pitt, Fox, & Scotch Duke. } Equal Laws of Inheritance - Mexicans } French Foundlings & Conscripts }	326.
English Roads, Turnpikes, Education	327.
Lotteries at Rome, Women in France, Naples } French Students, Corruption of Manners }	328
Hevers of wood,	329
Quakers	330.
The Expense & Delay of the Laws	331.
English Tithes. Chastity in E. & W.	332
Servants, Crimes	
Sand on Floor, Vipers, Stews, Strawberries } To Strip Naked. Marginal Notes. }	333
Spirits (Glenvil) Servants,	334-343
Hooker's Ecclesiastical Polity	344-349
Burnet's Reformation	350-361.
Quirrot's Civilization	362-364
Prostitution	365-367
French Revolution (Alison)	366.
English Puritans	



# Norridgewock.

"The History of Norridgewock" by Wm. Allen.  
Printed at Norridgewock 1849: Pages 252.

Norridgewock, he says, signifies "smooth water between the rapids or Falls." He gives no authority.

Indian names of the Kennebeck, & of the village.

Called Orantsoak, from the source of Moose river down through Moosehead Lake, to the Falls a short distance above the town of Norridgewock. This was name of the lake.

Nanrantsoak, from Norridgewock Falls to Snowegan Falls.

Kanapais (allm). (Father Rasles says Kinibeki, from Snowegan Falls, to Merry Meeting Bay.

Sagadahock, from Merry Meeting Bay to the mouth of the river.

Rasles in a letter dated Nanrantsoak Oct. 1722, says "the village in which I live is called Nanrantsoak on the banks of a river which empties into the sea 30 leagues below. He says in a letter dated at Nanrantsoak Oct. 18. 1723, the place is 84 leagues from Pentagouet and Pentagouet 100 leagues from Port Royal.

Rasles says of the river, Oct. 18. 1723; "it should be marked on the maps by the name of Kinibeki" viz. "the river that flows through my mission". "The river empties into the sea at Sanklerank, which is only 5 or 6 leagues from Pemaquid." He says his village is 40 leagues above Sanklerank (or 10 leagues + 30 leagues in 1722.)

Rasles last letter dated Aug. <sup>12</sup>/<sub>23</sub> 1724 (the day he was slain) is dated at "Norridgewock" in the translation, but was doubtless Nanrantsoak in the original. He seems not to have known the name of Norridgewock for his village, nor that of Nanrantsoak for the river.

Nanrantsoak was on a Point or Peninsula the river going southward, eastward and in a northeast direction. This neck of land contained 100 acres of interval. The village stood on an elevated part, about 12 feet above the interval, which lay to the south and east. There were fertile intervals of peat on the north side of the river, on Sandy river.

Allen, as well as others, speaks of the taste & judgment of the Indians, in selecting situations for villages and forts; such spots were always distinguished by the beauty of the surrounding scenery. He did not reflect - that in choosing the best situations for defence, they were selected on projecting banks of streams; not on account of beauty of scenery, but simply because they were convenient for defence & offence.



## Norridgewock.

Fort Richmond, he says, was near Swan Island, built 1719.  
Fort Weston. " was Freshnoc, now Augusta, " 1754.  
Fort Halifax " was Ticonic, now Waterville, 1755.

Allen says "the Norridgewocks were the principal actors in the destruction of Deerfield and Hatfield, Massac. Murders". He says there was war between France and England in 1666; that the eastern Indians enlisted with the French; that the "Norridgewocks were the principal actors," &c. as above; that they mustered at Hecbee and made their route (to Deerfield & Hatfield) by way of Montreal & returned laden with plunder & captives, exhibiting the scalps of the English, &c. "In 1675, occurred King Philip's war."

Allen exhibits strange ignorance. He represents that Deerfield & Hatfield were destroyed in 1666, ~~or in a~~ war that began in 1666!! and by Norridgewocks!! some ~~of~~ years before Philip's war began!! What gross errors!

Fishing. The Falls two miles above Norridgewock village, was one of the best fishing places on the river, which abounded with salmon, shad and alewives.

C. M. 291  
u. 3. 60. Rusler obtained Wax for the church, from the wax berries that grew on bushes on the islands.

C. M. 291  
u. 3. 60. Maple Sugar, is mentioned by Rusler 1722. The Indian women collected the sap and boiled it.

Indian living. Rusler says in 1723 that the game was destroyed in that part of the country. Elk and roebuck were not found; and bears and weavers were very rare. The Indians lived chiefly on Indian corn, beans and pumpkins. They ate acorns also, boiled in water & ashes to take away the bitterness. Twice a year they went to the seashore to procure food, where they remained some time. They hunted ducks & other birds "some months". Rusler says they repaired to a river not far distant from their village, at a particular season of the year, and caught fish. The fish ascended during a month, in such numbers, that 50,000 barrels might be filled in a day. They are "a kind of large herrings" very agreeable to the taste, crowding upon one another to the depth of a foot. The Indians dry them 8 or 10 days, and live on them while they plant their fields. It seems to include hoeing the corn in the woods, "planting their fields. After the corn is hoed the last time ("the last tillage") they go to the seashore to get provisions, having no other resource until harvest. He refers to their going to the seashore in winter, or when there is snow.



Father Rasle, Rale, Ruser, often contradicts himself. He says the Indians "have scarcely any thing on which to live but Indian corn, beans and pumpkins," yet he goes on to mention the vast quantities of fish they take at the Falls; and their spending some months every year on the seashore in hunting ducks &c.

That Rasle excited the Indians against the English is plain enough, from his letters; and he seems to have planned & contrived for them. He says he assisted in their councils, & gave his opinions; and he says "my advice always fixes their resolutions." "They do not even hold their feasts without inviting me".

The Indians were zealous Catholics, and this says Rasle, "is the bond that unites them to the French." "The only tie which unites the Indians so closely to the French is their firm attachment to the Catholic faith." It is evident that politics had as much to do as religion in converting the Indians to the Catholic faith. When they were made Catholic, they were sure allies of France, and enemies of the English.

Rasle says "the whole nation of the Abnaki is Christian"; and he speaks of the danger of their being "replunged into their former heathenism" in their own view, if they have much dealings with the English. They could trade with the English by going one or two days journey, but they preferred to make a fortnight's journey to Quebec, because their faith was so dear to them, & they were made to believe that if they detached themselves from the French alliance, they would lose the exercise of their religion, &c. The traders & missionaries of the French seem to have been united in inducing the Indians to submit to great inconveniences, rather than have much to do with the English.

This religion of the Indians, which would be endangered was evidently more heathenism, with some attention to rites, and ceremonies. It was not at all the religion of Christ. It had nothing to do with love, humanity, holiness.

Rasle's Dictionary of the Abnaki Dialect, in French and Indian, was published in 1833. Where is it to be found? The manuscript seems to have been written on about 250 pages, or more than that, in quarto, (or all probably.) — It was published in the Publications of the Mass. Academy of Arts & Sciences.

Narantsonate. So Charlevoix spells the place called Norridgewock.

[See more about Rasle, &c. Conn. J. Ill. 2. 91.  
Destruction of Rasle's village Mass. 1. 113.]



4. "The Natural History and Antiquities of  
Selborne, in the county of Southampton"  
By Rev. Gilbert White M.A. (born 1720/died 1793.  
First published 1788. This is a new edition  
with notes, 1837. — Written 1767—1787.

Common Report.

m. 18  
134. "There is such a propensity in mankind towards  
deceiving and being deceived, that one cannot safely  
relate any thing from common report, without  
expressing some degree of doubt and suspicion".  
Shunk.

White calls this animal "Squonck or Stonck,"  
and he takes the name from Ray's Quadrupeds.

Com. 9. 244. Superstition [Lansdown. 2. 209.] 8. 393.

"It is the hardest thing in the world to shake off  
superstitious prejudices." In 1757, the people of  
Tring in Hertfordshire seized two old people, on  
suspicion of witchcraft, & by trying experiments,  
drowned them in a horse pond.

m. 1. 340. In Selborne, is a row of ashes, which by the  
seams and long cicatrices down their sides, show  
that they were formerly cleft asunder. These trees  
were severed and held open by wedges, while  
ruptured children, stripped naked, were pushed  
through the apertures, under a persuasion that  
the poor babes would be cured of their infirmity.  
After the operation, the tree was plastered with loam  
and swathed up. It was believed that if the parts  
grew together again, the child was cured; but if the  
cleft continued to gape, the operation would be ineffectual.  
White cut down two or three such trees by his  
garden, one of which did not grow together.

A note says such things were done near Enfield  
in 1750. The rupture was umbilical hernia in  
children.

m. 1. 49. Superstitions about the shrewmouse & shrewask.  
Disappearance of leprosy, &c in England.

He ascribes the eradication of some old disorders  
to the smaller quantity of salted meat & fish now eaten;  
to the use of linen next to the skin; to better bread;  
to the profusion of roots, fruits, legumes & greens.

There a four hundred years ago, there were no enclosures,  
no sown grasses, no field turneps nor carrots nor hay;  
and the cattle that grew fat in summer were killed  
for winter use, or turned out soon after Michaelmas  
to shift as they could through the winter. There was no  
fresh meat in winter or spring.



# Natural History of Selborne.

Changes favorable to health continued.

Cur. 337 "The use of linen changes, shirts or shifts, in the rooms of sordid and filthy woollen, long worn next to the skin!"

[A note suggests that wearing clean flannel next to the skin is often serviceable, or frequent changes of flannel.]

Use of wheaten bread instead of the old sort of miserable bread made of barley or beans. He supposes that those who have a poor diet are more liable to the itch than others.

U. 11. 133 The consumption of garden vegetables has vastly increased. Laborers have their gardens; and farmers provide beans, peas and greens for their hinds to eat with their bacon.

Cur. 2. 173. Potatoes have prevailed in Selborne only 20 years; much esteemed by poor now, who would not have tasted of them in the last reign. [This was written in 1778. The last reign was that of George II.]

Cur. 9. 354. Hooting Owls.

"About an hour before day I hear with extreme delight, the loud, clear, and sonorous note of the tawny owl, resounding far and near through hill and dale. Mr. Waterton."

Cur. 2. 12. Voice of Geese and Poultry.

"The voice of the goose is trumpet-like and clanking; the hiss of the gander is formidable and full of menace."

Cur. 8. 21. "Of all occurrences of a hen's life, that of laying seems to be the most important. When she is disburdened, she rushes forth with clamorous joy, which the cock and the other hens immediately adopt. The tumult catches from yard to yard and spreads to every homestead within hearing till at last the whole village is in an uproar."

U. 2. 245. The Cock is distinguished by his crowing, as the Countryman's clock or *larren* - in all ages.

Field Crickets (*Gryllus campestris*).

They chirp all night and day from the middle of May to middle of July, - are most vigorous in hot weather; are heard to a considerable distance in the night. Disappear in August.

House Crickets (*Gryllus domesticus*). p. 11.

They reside within our dwellings; open communication from one room to another. Very fond of kitchens and bakers' ovens, on account of warmth, are always noisy. Often heard by day, yet their natural time of moving & chirping is in the night. They are thirsty and voracious - often troublesome pests.

P.S. When Bingley, in his "Knowledge", says the noise of the House cricket is exactly *cree-cree*. The French call it *cri-cri* Harris.



# 6. White's Selborne

He kept the "Naturalists Calendar" from 1768 to 1793. He noted the time of leafing and flowering of plants; the time of the appearing of birds, insects, &c. and other things in regard to them.

He puts down but two plants that flower in September or Syrian Hellebores, and wild honeysuckle a second time.

In October only two plants flower, viz. Strawberry tree and Chinese Holly oak [First begin Aug 21; second July 7.

In November, two plants flower, Primula vulgaris and Hepatica. [Later on often in December or later.

In December, five or six plants begin to blossom: - viz. Furze, Primula polyantha, fetid Hellebore; Eggs & or Bellis perennis, Mezerion, snowdrops usually till January.

## Flowers in January.

Winter Aconite, (Helleborus hiemalis. Jan 1. to Feb 18

Fetid Hellebore (Helleborus foetidus. Jan 2 to Feb 14

Primula polyantha. -- -- -- Jan. 2. to April 12

Disy, Mezerion, Pansy or tree dead Violet. Jan. 2. to April 12

Pea & Vetch. Groundsel or Senecio vulgaris. Jan. to Feb.

Hazel (Corylus Avellana) Catkins open Jan 3 Feb 28

Anemone hepatica . . . . . Flowers Jan 4. to Feb 18

Primula vulgaris . . . . . " Jan 6 to Ap. 7

Wall Flower; Stock Flower; Black Hellebore.

Snowdrops, White dead Vetch.

Trumpet Honeysuckle . . . . . Jan. 13

Creeping Crowfoot, Veronica agrestis.

Candleston . . . . . Flowering Jan. 16 to March 11

Crocus vernus . . . . . do Jan. 18 to March 10.

## Flowers in February

Barren Strawberry. — Butcher's Broom.

Laurustine (Viburnum tinus. Coltsfoot. Feb 15 to March 23

Paffodil (Narcissus pseudonarcissus. Feb 24 to Ap. 7

Willow; Sweet violet; Filbert.

Apricot Tree . . . . . Feb. - [Feb. 28 to Ap. 5.

## March Flowers

Pea & or, flowers March 2 to April 17.

Shepherd's purse; Lungwort. Stitchwort

Common Elder, March 13 to 20. Laurel

Gooseberry March 17 to April 11

Wood Anemone (Anemone nemorosa) March 17 to Ap. 22

Fumaria bulbosa; Elm (Ulmus campestris) March 19 to Ap. 24

Marsh Marigold; Periwinkle (Vinca minor)

Daphne laureola; Golden Saxifrage; Double Hyacinth.



# White's Selborne

## Naturalists Calendar—continued.

### April Flowers.

Ash, April 1 to May 4.—Cheeked Daffodil (*Fritillaria*  
*Crowlip* (*Primula veris*).—Ground Ivy (*Glechoma hederacea*).  
 Box Tree. Elm or Ulmus *Campestris*. Gooseberry  
 Currant. Pear tree April 3. to May 21.  
 Wyck Elm (*Ulmus glabra* or *montana*). Blackthorn  
 Crown Imperial April 8 to 24. Beech April 10 to May 8.  
 Larch Tree — April 14 to May. Wild Cherry  
 Garden Cherry Ap 18 to May 11. Plum April 18 to May 5.  
 Hawthorn / Ap 20 to June 11. — Wild Strawberry  
 Apple Tree Ap 22 to May 25. — *Prunus avium*.  
 Sycamore (*Acer pseudoplatanus*). — *Lonicera periclymenum*  
 Viburnum *lanceolatum*. May 5–17. May 3–30.

### Flowers in May.

Beech again! May 15–26. Maple (*Acer campestris*) May 16  
 Barberry May 17–26. Orange Lily (*L. bulbiferum*) May 18  
 Walnut May 18. — *Saccharifera* May 19. June 9.  
 Horse chestnut May 20 to June 9. Lilac [Ap 15 to May 30.  
 Columbine — May 20. — Lily of the Valley white May 21.  
 Mountain Ash — May 23 to June 8. Gelder Rose, May 26.  
 Common Elder May 26, June 25. Sanicle May 27. June 13.  
 Ragged Robin — Burnet. — Foxglove, Cornflower  
 Rasperry. — May 30 to June 21. Kirk Robert May 30.  
 Figwort. Gromwell. Peony May 20 to June 15

### June Flowers.

Rose (*Rosa Hortensis*) June 1 to 21. — Hawkweed. Waterflag.  
 Rye June 2. — Groundstungus. Pink.  
 Syringa June 5. — *Silene inflata*, Begony  
 Bittersweet — June 11. — Walnut June 12.  
 Willow herb. — Wheat June 13, July 22  
 Cornflower — June 13. — Buckthorn June 16.  
 Dogrose (*Rosa canina*) June 17. — Mullerin June 18  
 Dogwood (*Cornus sanguinea*) June 21. — *Scabiosa arvensis* June 21  
 Great Valerian — — — *Carduus crispus*  
 Verbena *officinalis* June 24. Selfheal *Prunella vulgaris* June 24  
 Agrimonia *cupatoria* June 24–29. — Common Mallow, Dwarf  
 Hypericum *perforatum* June 26. — Henbane.  
 Death Nightshade. — — — Lime Tree June 28 to July 31  
*Carduus lanceolatus* June 28. July 12. *Spiraea ulmaria* June 28  
 Day lily (*Hemerocallis flava*) June 30. July 4. *Galium verum*  
 Musk Mallow — June 31.

The following are the plants which are



# White's Selborne

## Naturalists Calendar - continued.

Mr White's Calendar is, as put together in this volume, very defective. In half of his dates of the first occurrence of leafing, flowering, &c he has but one date; that is he noted but one year, and this seems to have been the year 1768. Of leafing, indeed, he does not give the time of a dozen plants in all the years. Many plants are repeated, and their time of flowering put down two or three times.

Oh, the carelessness and disorder of these book-makers! I refer not to Mr. White, for he published no "Naturalists Calendar," but I allude here to J. Aikin, who selected these things from White's works - imperfect undoubtedly in the original.

William Markwick Esq. kept a Calendar of Nature, in Sussex, which is apparently much more perfect than Mr. White's, and is printed in a parallel column with Mr. White's. There is a great disagreement between them; and yet Selborne parish joins the county of Sussex and the climate cannot be very different.

P.S. This seems more perfect than White's Calendar, yet I think it is hardly to be depended on. I know not what to make of Markwick's two dates, but suppose they refer to the beginning & ending of flowering - that is, the continuance of flowering is from the first to the second date. But this is not explained. Indeed, the whole of White's & Markwick's Calendar is of little value, in my estimation.

Selborne is rather mountainous, and probably later as to vegetation than Sussex.

Leafing in Norfolk 1765. See Nat. Hist. 2. 293.







# Naturalists Calendar. by Wm Markwick.

## Flowers.

*Acer campestre* Apr. 24. May 27.  
*Barberry* Apr. 28. June 4  
*Orange Lily* June 14. July 22  
*Walnut* April 10. June 1  
*Saint John* May 21. July 28  
*Peony* April 18. May 26  
*Horse Chestnut* April 19. June 7  
*Lilac* April 15. May 30  
*Columbine* May 6. June 13  
*Lily of the valley* April 27. June 13  
*Yellow Rose* May 10. June 6  
*Common Elder* May 6. June 17  
*Morus nigra* May 20. June 11  
*Sannicle* Apr. 23. June 4  
*Aquino* May 9. June 11  
*Clagged Robin* May 12. June 8  
*Burnet* April 30. Aug. 7  
*Foxglove* May 23. June 15  
*Cornflag* June 9. July 8  
*Rosberry* May 10. June 16  
*Herb Robert* March 7. May 16  
*Figwort* May 12. June 20  
*Cosa Hortensis* June 7. July 1  
*Rye* May 27.  
*Pink* May 26. July 6  
*Syringa* P. cor. May 16. June 23  
*Lilium Martagon* June 18. July 19  
*Bladder campion* May 4. July 13  
*Solanum dulcamara* May 15. June 20  
*Epilobium angustifolium* June 7. July 28  
*Wheat* June 4 - 30  
*Comfrey* May 4. June 23  
*Buckthorn* May 25  
*Logrose* May 24. June 21  
*Chelidonium (V.T.)* June 10. July 22  
*Cornus sanguinea* May 28. June 27  
*Valeriana officinalis* May 22. July 21  
*Barbena officinalis* June 10. July 17  
*Panella vulgaris* June 7 - 23  
*Agrimony (Eup.)* June 7. July 9  
*Althaea sylvestris* May 27. July 12  
*Althaea rotundifolia* May 12. July 30  
*Hydrisum perforatum* June 15. July 12  
*Lime tree* June 12. July 5  
*Carduus lanceolatus* June 27. July 18  
*Spiraea ulmaria* June 16. July 24  
*Xerocallis flava* May 9. June 9  
*Galium verum* June 22. Aug 3  
*Black mallow* June 9. July 14

## Flowers, &c.

*Carduus acanthoides*  
*Carduus arvensis* June 15. July 15  
*Cockle* May 14. July 25  
*Feverfew* June 19. July 24  
*Privet* June 3. July 13  
*Toadflax* June 21. Aug. 3  
 [Whortleberries ripe. July 4 - 21]  
*Gentiana cyanus* May 15. Oct 14  
*Typha latifolia* June 29. July 21  
*Calendula officinalis* May 20. July 16  
*Round leaved bellflower* June 12. July 20  
*Calamint* July 9.  
*Cow Wheat* May 2. June 22  
 [Crabberries ripe July 9 - 27]  
*White Lily (cand.)* June 21. July 22  
*Conium mac.* June 4. July 20  
*Lilium Chalced.* June 21. Aug. 6  
*Potatoe* June 3. July 12  
*Solidago virgaurea* July 7. Aug. 29  
*Oenothera biennis* June 12. July 18  
 [Peas cut. July 13. Aug. 15]  
 [Apricots ripe. July 5. Aug. 16]  
 [Hay Harvest begins July 17. Aug. 7]  
*Hops* July 20. Aug. 17  
*Trifolium pratense* May 2. June 7  
*Black wheat* June 27. July 10  
 [Wheat Harvest begins July 18. Aug. 26]  
*Alisma plantago* May 31. July 21  
 [Secundo Aprilis begins to depart. Aug. 5]  
*Sunflower* July 4. Aug. 22  
 [Oats cut July 26. Aug. 19]  
 [Barley cut July 27. Sept 4]  
*Campanula bells* June 5. Aug. 11  
*Rhus cotinus* June 5. July 20  
*Burdock* June 17. Aug. 4  
*Wormwood* July 22. Aug. 21  
 [Birds assume spring notes Aug. 16. W  
 [Flies abound in windows Aug. 18. W  
 [Hoppicking begins Sept 1 - 15  
 [Beeches begin to be yellow. Sept 5. 27  
*Syring Nibis cuss* July 20. Sept 28  
 [Wood owls hoot. Sept 14. Nov. 9. W  
 [Beans cut (V. faba) Aug. 9. Oct 14  
 [Wheat sown Sept 23. Oct 19  
 Oct 3. Nov. 9. W  
*Daisy (Bellis per.)* Dec. 26 - 31.  
*Panmula polyantha* Dec. 31.



# Whites, Selborne.

## Roosting.

u. 8. 357. Poultry like to roost up high, outrees or in buildings.  
u. 2. 12 Ducks & Geese like to float on water all night,  
to keep out of danger.

Luc. 11. 117. Cockroaches, from America were in England  
but Mr White had seen them but a few years.

p. 5. House crickets come out of their lurking holes in  
the night, like cockroaches.

u. 11. 141. Flies of many species in England retire into houses  
and swarm on windows, "in the decline of the year".  
When mornings and evenings are chilly.

M. 1. 114. Glowworms he mentions; says nothing about wintered ones.

u. 11. 141. Falling of leaves.

The Walnut first becomes naked.

The Mulberry, Ash, and Horse chestnut come next.

Apple & Peach Trees remain green till latter part of Nov.

Young Beeches do not cast their leaves till Spring. The  
New leaves push them off.

"Cartway" is a word used by White in reference to  
a road. "cartway of the village".

u. 17. 15. 224. Wells in Selborne are 63 feet deep, on an average.  
Water is hard.

"Broadleaved Elm, or ~~wey~~ hazel," is his name  
for the *Ulmus folio latissimo scabro* of Ray,  
or *Ulmus montana* of others, [sometimes called Wild Elm].

u. 112. Twins born in Selborne 1720 to 1779, or 60 years,  
13 pairs. All births in that time about 1000, or 16  
in a year.

Water Rats. Some web footed behind; some not  
web footed at all. White. — A note says White  
is in error. There is no web footed rat, but  
there is an amphibious *Mus*, called water rat.

u. 2. 248. Ancient settlers in England built by brooks  
and rivulets, that they might get water without  
digging wells.

## Rush Lights.

u. 11. 297. White's account of rush-lights, or candles with rush  
wicks, see Mss. 8. 391. Asbrey noticed them  
about 1673. The earliest Irish candles were peeled  
rushes dipped in grease & placed in lamps of oil.

## Swallows.

u. 11. 297. White of Selborne took much pains to employ a  
considerable portion of his body to ascertain what  
of swallows in the summer whether they migrated, or  
were concealed in England during the winter. He concluded  
that at swif, martins, & swallows generally flew to some  
climate; & that some that raised a second brood  
remained behind & crept into some chink  
and remained torpid till spring. He said  
retired to the bottom of holes or under  
grass & mud.



## White's Antiquities of Salborne

The Church dates back to reign of Henry VIII. Is plain and unadorned. 54 feet in length by 47 in breadth. Has three aisles, viz. South, Middle and North aisles. The pulpit is at east end of the middle aisle; at the west end is an organ loft & organ. Beams of this aisle used to be hung with garlands in honor of young women, reputed to have died virgins. The font of stone is at the bottom of the south aisle, between west and south doors.

North aisle is narrow and low with a sloping ceiling, reaching within 9 or 10 feet of the floor. It had originally a flat roof covered with lead. This aisle has no door, there being no path to that side of the church.

"The pews are of all dimensions & heights being patched up according to the fancy of the owners." On close examination, it will be found "that the middle aisle had formerly on each side, a regular row of benches of solid oak, all alike, with a loose backboard to each." White considers these coeval with the church. The south aisle has also a row of these benches, but some are decayed and others disguised by modern alterations.

The south aisle at the east end is called the South Chancel.

At the upper end of the aisle, running out to the north, stands a transept, known by name of the North Chancel, 21 feet from S. to E. and 19 feet from E. to W.

There are places where Images & crucifixes formerly stood.

The Chancel properly so called, (the others were formerly prior to chantry's) is coeval with the church; is 31 feet in length by 16½ feet in breadth, and is wainscoted all round as high as the bottom of the windows; and is one step higher than the body of the church. The space for the communion table is raised 2 steps above the rest of the floor, & railed in with oaken balusters.

The Windows are simple, unadorned, lancet windows, some single, some double, & some in triplets. At east end of chancel are two; in north wall two, & in south wall two; these are unequal in width and height; even two on N. side are not alike. At E. end of south aisle there is a large lancet window in a triplet; a small narrow one in S. wall (besides the two above, which are broad & squat.) a double lancet one in West end. The appearance is very irregular.



# White's Antiquities of Selborne.

## The old church, continued.

In the north aisle are two windows; and in the north transept a large triple window; and over it a round one.

The church and chancel were open to the tiles and shingles, showing the naked rafters and threatening the congregation with the fall of a spar or a blow from a piece of loose masonry before the year 1683. About 1683 the coved roofs of the church & chancel were ceiled. [Coved, arched over. W. 6.]

The Belfry at the west end, is a part of a square embattled tower, 45 feet high, more modern than the church. There are 5 bells.

There is a modern porch, to the south, & a gothic doorway.

The roof of the south aisle, & the south side of the roof of the middle aisle, are covered with oaken shingles, instead of tiles, on account of their lightness. The shingles that face the north are known to have endured more than a century. They are "left from quartered timber" and never warp.

The church does not stand east & west, but bears much to the north of east.

## The vicarage House

This is an old, roomy edifice. The Hall was formerly open to the roof,\* as in old times; but a floor was afterwards flung across, & the space above divided into chambers. (\* see Misc. 8. 407)

M. 2. 115. 181. A Yew Tree in the churchyard is 23 feet in circumference, & supports a head of suitable extent

The Priory of Selborne. Licentiousness & disorders of the Monks.

Misc. 1. 208  
" 2. 298  
" 5. 143  
Shingles are very ancient, for roofing. Tiles were not much in use until 1500, or later. [wood tile used by Chaucer. Walter Tylor said to be a tiler by Borners.]

[Baldy says] (No 5. p. 143) they were oak. 4 or 5 by 8 to 12 inches. 1 inch thick at one end - wedge like.

176. Swallows or Hirundines, or Martins.

M. 2. 25 House Swallow or Chimney Swallow } This comes first. - April 13 or 14. Builds in chimneys and elsewhere.

M. 2. 25 Swift or Black Martin } This comes, the 3d. 10 or 12 days after House Swallow. Builds in castles, towers, steeples, &c. April 21 or 26

Bank Martin. All built away from man. Build nests in sand-banks.

M. 2. 25 House Martin. This is the 2d corner. Swallows, or April 20 or 21.

[Ed. inc. 14 species of Hirundo in England - come in the following order -  
1st. 495 3rd April & one in May - 1 Chimney Swallow (Hirundo rustica)  
2 House martin (Hirundo urbea). 3 Bank martin (Hirundo ruficapilla) 4 Swift or Black martin, comes in May but comes to 3d above.]



# Burton's Melancholy.

"The Anatomy of Melancholy, what it is, with all the kinds, causes, symptoms, prognostics and several cures of it. By Democritus Junior. 16th Edition. London 1840. [He died 1640, first edition 1621, or Feb. 8. 1576] (sup. page 112.9 ff.)

There was an edition printed in 1651, from which this was taken. The author was dead in 1651, having died since the preceding edition. At least three editions were published in his life time - five, I think. The book is said by me to be a leading as never was read!" (M. 18.87)

Burton calls his age a scribbling age, when there was no end to writing books. He says they poured out of one vessel into another; repeated what they found in the writings of others. The libraries and shops were filled with these papers, "and every close stool and jakes." "Lequent cacantes." They serve to put under pies, to lay spice in, and keep roast meat from burning." It is Latin for jakes is cloaca. "We are" says "oppressed with books!" (M. 11.234)

Burton says he drank no wine; he was a "sotor aquae". "I call asquide, asquade", he says. He calls himself a "divine"; he belonged to the profession of divinity.

He gives his reasons for meddling with "physic". He quotes an author that says "physicians spend their days in unprofitable questions and disputations" - or as Burton says, in intricate subtilties about goats wool, about moonshine in the water, and leave the chief treasures of nature untouched.

He says, "Physicians often become divines; that Jesuits and both divines and physicians profess; that many poor country vicars, for want of other means turn quacksalvers, and empiricks."

p. 309 The Rich.

As a fat body is more subject to diseases, so are rich men to absurdities and fooleries." He quotes this from Democritus of old.

Burton thinks fools & madmen were much more numerous in his age than in that of old Democritus.

Burton was very severe upon the catholics and their mummeries; called the monks fornicators. He also he censures severely the "schismatics in another extreme". He is indignant at wars & bloodshed and the statesmen & princes who promote such things. "Murphy says, are killed as so many sheep for devil's food, 40,000 at once, to satisfy the spleen lust, ambition, & of the men, or a few men they care not what mischief they procure, if they can enrich themselves, and the hacking, newing, massacres, murders & desolations go on for aye to age."



## Burton's Melancholy.

## War continued

MS. B. 401.  
vol. 2. 138

"Of 15000 proletarians slain in a battle, scarce 15 are recorded in History, or perhaps only one the general". Men are persuaded by Christians that this hellish course of life is holy; that if they die in the field, they shall go directly to heaven; it was so among the heathen of old. Bloody butchers, wicked destroyers, hell-hounds, are honored, applauded, rewarded! A sheep-stealer is hanged, but a great man in office may rob provinces & undo thousands, & be honored for doing it!

MS. B. 8. 361

## LXXV.

Burton mentions, "so many lawyers & so little justice, so many magistrates and so little care of common good; so many laws, and so many disorders; so many thousand suits in one court, & times, so violently followed; the judge punishes, others and does worse than he; the wolf pronounces sentence and the lamb is executed. Laws are made, not kept; only some silly ones are punished. Great men commit sins with impunity for a poor man is severely punished. He reports fornication, &c. The "right worshipful sir" of the "right offence at all. Laws & customs compel men to beg or steal, & then hang them for theft.

He says men go to law for every trifling; they are ready to defame, lie, disgrace, backbite, rail, bear false witness, swear, forswear, fight & wrangle, spend their goods, lives, friends, undo one another, to enrich an harpist advocate, or some corrupt judge. He would root those causes of wrangling & a multitude of lawyers.

Money.  
MS. B. 2. 144

Burton says the goddess we adore is Dea moneta queen money. which steers our hearts, hands and affections.

He is dreadfully severe on the selfishness, vices and follies of men; and especially of great men, so called. He seems to think the world must more wicked than in the days of "our forefathers"; — He often refers to the innumerable lawsuits of those days.

## England.

Burton says & cannot deny but that England is a noble, flourishing kingdom. They have the true gospel preached, church discipline established, long peace and quietness, no invasions nor rebellions, "have a wise learned, religious king, another kuma, a second Augustus, a true Josiah, most worthy senator, a learned clergy, obedient commonalty, &c".

[He must have written in time of James I.]



16 Burton's Melancholly.

England - continued.

Some Thistles grow among the Roses of England.

1. Idleness, he says, is the bane ("malus genius") of England, & by reason of idleness they have swarms of rogues, beggars, thieves, drunkards & discontented persons. He thinks England ~~was~~ had more people under the Heptarchy and in the Conqueror's time than when he wrote! Strange delusion!

6. m. g. 261 "In most of our cities, we live wholly by tipling; many a stale houses, malting are their best ploughs; their greatest traffick, to sell ale." "most of the cities are in mean estate, ruinous most part, floor & full of beggars by reason of their idleness & riot, &c. Drunkenness seemed to be very common.

He reports hospitals and pest-houses built by those who having fraud & rapine oppressed others all their lives, & then given something to public uses; which is to steal a goose and stick down a feather, to rob thousands to relieve ten.

Burton's Utopia.

He had monarchical government, orders, nobility, &c. in his Utopia. He was inclined to be very severe in his punishments. He would in some circumstances hang a man that ~~could~~ pay his debts; cut off the hand of one who committed sacrilege; cut out the tongue of one who was guilty of perjury; punish murder and adultery with death, but not theft.

Men should not marry till 25; women not till 20. Every calling to have a distinct attire. Mourning attire to be done away.

(All the preceding is from his Remarks to the reader, a sort of preface.

9. 30 Hydrophobias, from the bite of a mad dog, "is well known in every village" in England, he says.

Devils. Burton with all his learning & sagacity believed all the old stories about the devils causing tempests, thunder, lightning, tearing oaks, firing steeples, and houses, striking men & beasts, and causing whirlwinds, suicides, plagues, shipwrecks, inundations &c. He believed in several sorts of devils and swallowed all the fables related respecting them - He divides them into fiery, aerial, terrestrial, watery, subterranean, &c.

Con. g. 422 Witches, are instruments of the devil. Burton says many deny witches at all, as Wierus, Lorchomer, Biarmannus, Ewichius, Einwaldus, our countryman Scott, &c. They laugh at all such stories.



# Burton's Melancholy.

17

Can. 9. 422

## Witches - continued

Burton says that "most Lawyers, Divines, Physicians, Philosophers," &c. (and he names many) are "on the contrary," that is, they believe in witches. He quotes many authorities to show what witches can do, and King James among the rest. He seems to include men among his witches. He says witches can cause tempests, storms; make friends enemies; tell any man where his friends are and what they are doing; bring sweethearts to them by night upon a goats back flying in the air; hurt and infect men, beasts, vines, corn, plants; make women abortive, make men & women barren; fly in the air and meet when they will; steal children from their cradles and put deformed ones in their rooms; can walk in fiery furnaces; can represent dead men's shapes, and alter and turn themselves and others into several forms; some can command winds, feed thousands suddenly, reveal secrets, & future events, tell what is done in far countries, make the dead appear, & do many such miracles, yet the devil forsakes them at last & they come to bad ends. They can cause or cure most diseases, and this is Melancholy among the rest. He gives his authorities for all these things.

Can. 9. 242.

Stars, he thinks, are a cause of diseases of Melancholy. Paracelsus says a physician can do nothing without a knowledge of the stars: "Medicus sine coeli peritiâ nihil est." &c. are his words. He says men are made lunatics by the moon's motion, but in another place refers all to the stars. This is the opinion of many Galenists & Philosophers. But that the stars cause Melancholy & madness.

Burton has many silly notions about the causes of Melancholy and signs of it. He seems to have swallowed most of the absurdity and nonsense that then passed for knowledge.

Can. 9. 261.

Drinking. 'Tis the felicity, life & soul of our tradesmen & the merry toge in an ale house. They will labor hard all day, to be drunk at night.

The Professions. Burton says most students apply themselves to the professions of Law, Physic and Divinity, & neglect other things. They desire to make money, & get preferment, & honor. Yet these men often fail.

Lawyers he takes first. So less severe than in his preface (p. 15. 18.



## Barton's Melancholy.

con. g. 264 **Physicians.** "There are in every village so many mountebanks, empiricks, quack-salvers, Paracelsians (as they call themselves) wizards, alchemists, poor rears, east apothecaries, physicians men, barbers and goodwives, professing great skill, that I make great doubt how they shall be maintained, or who shall be their patients?"

Many of both sorts (lawyers & physicians) are harpies, covetous, clamorous, impudent.

**Divines.** Of all professional men, they are the most distressed and miserable.

John Hovson in a sermon preached at Paul's Cross Nov. 4. 1597, estimates that an education at the University, for maintenance, books & degrees, "before we come to any perfection" <sup>cost</sup> 500 pounds. Then he says they must pay a large sum in order to purchase a vicarage of 50<sup>th</sup> per annum, and of necessity become entangled in simony and perjury.

Barton complains of these grasping patrons; he had experienced their tender mercies. He complains of the detestable custom of buying and selling livings. He says these simoniacal patrons fear neither God nor the Devil.

MS. A. 1. 371  
2. 280 He is very severe upon the ignorance of great men so called, and rich men. They are "barbarous idiots, dull, illiterate, proud." They think they are qualified, if they can read and write; but are unfit for any employment, except fighting and acting as a country justice, "which every yeoman can likewise do." They leave science learning, and business to younger brothers & poor men's sons. Students & young learning and divines were dependent on such patrons, and used base flattery and mean arts to secure their patronage.

MS. A. 1. 290 **The Gentry.** (same as above.) "I may not deny but that we have a sprinkling of our gentry, here and there one, excellently well learned, but they are few in respect of the multitude" — "apparent & rare natures." "The major part are actually bent for hawks and hounds, & carried away many times with impetuous lust, gaming & drinking." "Their sole discourse is dogs, hawks, horses and what news!" "Yet these men must be our patrons, governors, statesmen, magistrates, noble, great and wise, by inheritance." [Southey quotes this & other parts in his "Coleridge Passages"]



p 309  
Gentry & others. O patrician blood! says  
Burton. I honor some of you - some are men  
of worth & learning; "but of your rank, there are a  
delashed, corrupt, covetous, illiterate crew,  
no better than stocks, a seditious prophanes,  
pernicious company, irreligious, impious,  
stupid, enemies to learning, confounders of  
the Church & the ruin of a commonwealth."  
As patrons they are hard taskmasters, and  
seek only their own advantage in disposing  
of Church livings. "Omnia Roma  
venalia," is an old saying; There is no good  
to be done without money. The best parson  
is the one that can be hired the cheapest. The  
parson or chaplain or clerk must in all  
things conform to the wishes of the patron.  
He says much on this subject.

The Rich, however vicious & unjust, are honored  
and praised; and may go to heaven, and be  
canonized for saints.

"Most men are esteemed according to their  
clothes, in our gullish times."

p 309 The Poor, however honest, wise, learned, are  
contemned and neglected. If a man be poor,  
he is esteemed a knave, a fool, a wicked, a  
wicked & odious fellow. They are believed to be  
born "to labor, to misery, to carry burdens, to  
lick salt, to empty jakes, carry out dirt and  
dung-hills, sweep chimnies, rub horse heels, &c.  
Some of them even as so many foot stools for  
rich men to tread on, blocks for them to sit  
on, horse back, or as walls for them to piss on."  
They are ugly to behold, rusty & squalid because  
they are poor. They are commonly rude, silly  
superstitious, nasty <sup>(u. 2. 294)</sup> lousy, dejected.

Some in a little better condition are so  
preyed upon by officers, landlords, and are  
so fleeced by herpetual exactions that they  
cannot live in some countries. When they  
have done their best, they are often forced  
to beg or steal or starve. It is this misery  
in all ages that hath caused uprisings, seditions  
thefts, murders.

p 308 "Poverty alone makes men thieves, rebels,  
murderers, traitors, assassins, bear false witness,  
lie, dissemble, &c. to relieve their necessities."



## 20) Burton's Melancholy.

### Cure for Melancholy

Begin with prayer and then use physic. Use both, and not one of these alone. We must seek a skillful, honest physician, not the mountebanks, quack-servers and empiricks that are in almost every street. Many physicians thought a man could not be a good physician without a knowledge of astrology, & Burton seemed to rather favor those. He complains of those who draw out the cure to get more pay; of those who give physic to everyone that comes to get a fee; of those who prescribe too much physic to a patient, & injure him. Men often recover when left to themselves. He cautions against changing the physician.

Medicines are plants, metals, animals, &c.

Diet, he thinks, is the principal part of the cure for many diseases. He says people eat too much for health. He says the English are liberal feeders to the point. He is for a sparing dinner and a liberal supper.

Exercise is important. "but amongst us

all idleness is the badge of gentility"; "to be so calling, not to labor, to be a mere spectator, a drone, fruges consumere natus, to have no necessary employment, to sit to eat, to hawk, hunt, &c. are the sole exercise almost and ordinary actions of our nobility." They are all for pastimes, tis all their study, all their invention tends to this alone, to drive away time, as if they were born to no other ends.

### Sports.

all playing is a good sport in quiet seasons. <sup>ancient nations,</sup>

Hawking and Hunting are ordinary sports. Fowling and Fishing, also.

Fowling is done with guns, lime, nets, glades, gibbets, strings, carts, pitfalls, pipes, calls, stalking-horses, setting dogs, coys ducks, &c.

Other Sports & recreations.

Cricket, bowling, shooting, keel pinn, trunks, coits, pitching bars, hurling, wrestling, leaping, running, fencing, mustering, swimming, waters, foiles, foot ball, baloon, quintains, riding, running at rings, tilts & tournaiments, horse races, wild goose chases, - then last a sport of gentlemen. Those before riding are sports of country people.



Burton's Melancholy.  
More English Recreations.

cockfighting.

In winter, we have cards, tables and dice, shovelboard, chess, philosopher's game, small trunks, shuttlecock, billiards, music, masks, singing, dancing, elegances, jests, frolics, riddles, catches, penposers, questions and commands, merry tales, yerrant knights, queers, lovers, lords, ladies, giants, & war's, thieves, cheaters, witches, fairies, goblins, friens, & others, which some love to tell & others to hear.

"News are welcome to all our ears." We inquire after news.

Some men delight to take tobacco drink all day in a tavern or alehouse, discourse, sing, jest, roar, talk of a cock and bull over a pot; or tell old stories by the fire side, or in the sun, as old folks usually do.

Gaming destroys many.

Chess play is good for some men; bad for some.

Dancing, singing, masking, mumming, stage plays, are heavily censured by some doctors, but may be approved if soberly used.

Burton goes for the King's Declaration, for May games, wakes, whitsunales, &c.

He approves of what is done in some places, where they have shows & spectacles, "that the people may be busied about such toys, and not be perniciously idle." He thinks house servants should have half a day in the week for merry meetings, or some feasts like Roman Saturnals.

Physic.

He mentions some countries where the people were healthy without physicians. Quotes various writings against physicians, yet professes to honor a physician.

He notices various herbs used for medicines says Galeottus reckons up 800 simples. He seems to believe in the absurdities of his day about medicines, or rather in the nonsense of preceding centuries, but condemns some things. Or in other words, he believes in much that is worthless, but rejects what some have said or done.



22 Burton's Melancholy.  
Medicines. [See Cont. 4. 244.]

Cont. 9. 273. He quotes Fuchsius - "many an old wife or country woman, doth often more good with a few known and common garden herbs, than our Bonbast physicians, with all their prodigious, sumptuous, far-fetched, rare, conjectural medicines!" I'aschius says European medicines are sufficient for all diseases. He mentions several physicians who went against exotic medicines. Yet it seems that exotic medicines were much used.

Burton's Medicines for Melancholy, derived from other writers.

Borage, Bugloss Bawme (Balm,) Scorzonera, Betony, Marigold, Hop, Wormwood, Centaury, Pennyroyal, Endive, Succory, Dandelion, Fumitory, Cuscuta, Scelopendria, Mugwort, Liverwort, Maidenhair, Rose, Violet, Capers, Fetherfew, Scordium, Stoechas, Rosemary, Rosolis, Saffron, Oeyme, Sassafras, Blessed Thistle, &c. Some recommend an old cock, a Harts head, a boy's heart, water of the Nile, goats milk, &c. [The writers whom he quotes of that former ages, are unworthy of credit; they knew not what they were writing about, neither does Burton himself. I call kinds of silly stories & nonsensical prescriptions are quoted - such as were believed when Burton wrote.]

Some recommended coral, ruby, topaz, beryl, Chalcedony, "a stone found in the belly of a swallow, called Chelidonium", emerald, sapphire, the bone in a stag's heart, Bezoar stone, &c. to cure melancholy.

Minerals & Chemicals. There was a great contest and dispute about these. Burton thought both parties were in extremes.

Extr. 11. round Medicines were much recommended by some; strange mixtures were made with strange names; "300 simples in a julep, potion or pill!" are mentioned, but it is not said that so many were ever put together. Burton went for compound medicines. "Mixt diseases, must have mixed remedies."

He mentions syrups, juleps, decoctions, &c.

Ointments, Liniments, Emplastus, Cataplasms, Salves, Cerates, &c.

Vomits - of Asarum, of Laurel, of Scilla, of white hellebore, of Camomile, of Tobacco,



Tobacco;

con. 9. 277  
11. 7. 221.

He says, is a good vomit and a virtuous herb, if used medicinally; — "but as it is commonly abused by most men, who take it as tinkers do ale, 'tis a plague, a mischief, a violent purger of goods, lands, health, & Ulick, & civilish & damned tobacco, the ruin and overthrow of body and soul".

Purges for Melancholy.

Polypod, epithyme, miralcolans of 5 kinds, stoechas, fumitory, dodder, herb mercury, roots of capers, genista or broom, pennyroyal, origan, fetthufew, ammoniac salt, salt peter, alypus dragon root, centaury, dittany, dragon root, colutea, sene, aloes, lapis lazuli, black hellebore, &c.

Compound Purges for Melancholy  
Confections, electuaries, pills, & several sorts, (manna, rhubarb, agarick, &c. sum simple) potions, coles, and others.

Recipes. Burton says he might insert some recipes, but he was loth to incur the censure of Foresters, — "against those who divulge & publish medicines [Remedia et medicamenta] in their mother tongue, and make them common to every body."

Surgical Remedies

- 1 Blood letting — (three kinds,) at a vein in the arm, or in the head or knees, or elsewhere.
- 2 Cupping glasses with or without scarification.
- 3 Horse leeches. are used in melancholy, applied especially to the hemorrhoids.

& cauteris or searing with hot irons. Because these are terrible, diaphoresis and sinapismus are invented — blisters are raised by plasters, and ~~and~~ eating medicines of pitch, mustard seed, and the like, applied.

Issues to be kept open, are made in several parts.

Burton quotes & relies upon what physicians of his age and former ages had written; he rejects many things, but what he receives is no more rational than what he rejects. Nearly the whole would be rejected at this day as pernicious or useless.



## 24 Burton's Melancholy

p. 382, "  
(m. 9)  
224 Coffea". He says the Turks have a drink called coffa, so named, of a berry as black as soot, and as bitter, which they sip of as warm as they can suffer: they spend much time in these coffa houses, which are somewhat like our taverns and alehouses; and there they sit chatting and drinking, to drive away the time and to be merry together, because they find by experience that kind of drink helpeth digestion & procureth alacrity. Some take opium for this purpose.

One of his medicines is "a ram's head that never meddled with an ewe, cut off with a blow & only the horns taken away; boil it well, mix in wool together, &c. He quotes two authors.

... & clove to smell to.

A ram's lungs applied hot to the fore part of the head. For this he quotes Piso.

Bags of herbs to be applied to the heart.

Con. g. 244

Amulets & things to be borne about — as

Iron work gathered on a Friday, hung about the neck.

Con. g. 1. 338.

A ring made of the hoof of an asses right fore foot, carried about.

Such things, Burton says, are not to be altogether rejected.

Con. g. 1. 338.

A wolf's ring helps the colic;

A spider helps an ague;

Con. g. 1. 338.

Burton being at home, at Lindly, in Leicestershire, saw his mother apply a spider for an ague; the spider was "in a nut shell lapped in silk", and carried as an amulet.

Con. g. 244

m. 16

218

"I knew my mother to have excellent skill in chirurgery, sore eyes, aches, &c. and such experimental medicines, as all the country where she dwelt can witness, to have done many famous & good cures upon divers poor folks". Yet he thought the spider experiment was absurd at first, but found this medicine in three authors, & he was to give more credit to this and other amulets.

To procure sleep.

Use poppy, violets, lettuce, hempseed, &c.

Opium, Burton says, "is most part used outwardly by to smell in a ball", though taken within by the Turks for a cordial.

For a flushed face, "water of rogs & sparrow" is good; also, to anoint the face with hare's blood.

Virgins may be bled in the arms for melancholy.



## Burton's Melancholy.

There is no end to the medicines and applications to be used to cure melancholy. And all quoted from what Burton considered creditable authorities.

Cauteries, issues & cuppings are recommended as well as bleedings.

## Love Melancholy.

He has almost 200 pages of this.

He thinks there is not much of Gospel love in the world. Christian love would make a heaven upon earth. We hate, contemn, insult, vex, torture, calumniate and abuse one another. To get and enrich ourselves, we care not how we get it, how many we make, whom we oppress, whom we injure, children, widows, &c.

Those who do good, do it, for the most part, from vainglory & emulation. Such is the charity of our times. Show me among the only roads, a devout, honest, meek, merciful loving man!

p 306 "Show a virtuous woman, a constant wife, a good neighbor, a true friend, &c.

Beloved in Africa are not so scant!"

We live in an iron age where love is cold, justice fled, and virtue expelled, all goodness gone, vice abounds, the devil is loose. Where is charity? Every man is for himself, his own ends, the devil for all. What laws, what endless contentions, brawls, quarrels!

He relates the strangest & most improbable stories about love.

p 306 He is very severe upon women, unjustly so:—  
"of woman's unnatural, unsatiable lust what country, what village doth not complain?"

Princes and great men are fully lust and adultery. Also monks, friars, &c. Those that are full fed and idle.

He must have been a believer in total depravity. He seems to have supposed that there was hardly an honest, virtuous man or woman in England.

Philtres, charms, love-potions were much used and had been in past ages, as Burton believed. Love was produced by witchcraft, also.

Burton is almost as filthy & obscene as Montaigne. He calls himself a bachelor.



## 25 Burton's Melancholy.

### Love Melancholy - continued

p. 308 Women. He commonly writes disparagingly of women.

Vices of Women's minds: - "pride, envy, inconstancy, weakness, malice, selfwill, lightness, insatiable lust, jealousy". He quotes Eccles. 7. 26. & Prov. 31. 10. and various authors - ancient & modern, against women; and yet he says he has not written a tenth of what is contained in certain authors. - He apologises a little and says he honors the sex, as all good men do; is not bitter against them; & says what is written in *Epistola*, "may most part," be understood of men. This is a lame apology. He evidently has no respect for women and does not believe that they are virtuous or possess valuable qualities. They are in general bad, in his view; and to say that men are no better, does not help the matter. He represents married life as full of cares, contentions, miseries; and the wife as a torment to the husband. "Marriage is an hell," he says. "Marriage is a bondage, a thralldom, a yoke, a hindrance to all good enterprises". Yet not evil in itself, it seems to think there is no truth, no fidelity, no love between man & wife, generally.

Morlocks and Munks, he thinks, are full of lust, and fornication. He quotes Ulricas who says that 6000 skulls & bones of infants were taken out of a fishpond, near a nunnery; which made Pope Gregory permit the marriage of priests.

Sollar mine says it is better to commit fornication than to break the vow of celibacy, by marriage.

Coster says it is a greater sin for a priest to marry than to keep a concubine at home.

George Wicelius, a Danish divine, says you will not find three priests of 3000, that are not troubled with lust.

Burton writes as if Europe was full of stumpticks "Malum est mulier, sed necessarium malum". This Burton quotes, with apparent approbation.

He finally praises women & marriage. There are good as well as bad wives.



Jealousie. Seats in Church. Musc. 2. 299.

11. 12. 43.

Ulpian, the Spanish ambassador in England or Legate, said it was a filthy custom for men and women to sit promiscuously in churches together, as in England. Ordale replied that it was a filthy custom in Spain, where they could not contain themselves from lascivious thoughts in their holy places, but not with us.

11. 11. 43.

So Cline says the Spaniards & Italians will not suffer women to be near men in the church without a partition between.

Baronius relates that the emperor Ricinius decreed that men & women should not be together in the church.

Very different in England. "England is a paradise for women, and hell for horses; Italy a paradise for horses, a hell for women; as the proverb goes.

p. 306

Women, according to Scaliger, have "inconstancy, treachery, suspicion, dissimulation, superstition, pride, desire of sovereignty, bitterness and jealousy". — Burton quotes this, yet says comparisons are odious, & that men and women are both bad.

"All women are slippery, often unfaithful to their husbands." He quotes this from Aemilius Silvius.

"Great men as an horse neigh after their neighbor's wives", that is, "most part are thus affected". "They fear no laws and dare freely keep whores at their wives noses". "It is too frequent with noblemen to be dishonest." Can't think "piety, chastity & such like virtues are for private men; not to be much looked after in courts." "What Suetonius said of the good princes of his time, that they might all be engraven in one ring, we may truly hold of chaste potentates of our age."

Caesar was prodigiously lascivious, as well as other valiant men. Philipe the 9th left 14 bastards. Laurence Meleias, wondrously incontinent. This vice is not predominant in grandees only, for Sallustius, in account of France, says every soldier is esteemed a coward, who is not a notorious whoremaster. "In Italy, he is not a gentleman who hath not a courtesan & mistress besides his wife."



## Burton's Melancholy.

Catholics, he says, make severe laws against Adultery, present Death; and withal make fornication a venial sin. They appoint and permit Stews, and hold them as necessary as churches. They have whole colleges of courtesans in their towns and cities. They hold it impossible for idle, young, rich persons, and monks & friars to live honest, & so tolerate brothels and stews. <sup>He says the Papists begin with "collapsed ladies", &c. See Mss. 2. 246</sup>

## Religious Melancholy.

Princes & rulers, many of them, honor religion outwardly, and priests, in order to keep their subjects in their obedience. They care not for religion, in itself. Some politicians are honest in protecting and promoting religion, "but most of them are but Machiavellians; counterfeits only for political ends". No better way to curb people than superstition; no better way to keep them in awe. Priests also make religion policy. So with pagans; so with those of Rome. He is very censorious towards the Catholics and not without reason. He says Loretto is by priestly trickery, gained more treasures, than Selphas, of old.

He is severe also towards "Anabaptists, Brownists, Barrowists, Familists" and calls them "a company of rude, illiterate, capricious, base fellows".

"No greater hate, more continuant, bitter faction, wars, persecution in all ages than for matters of religion".

## u 9. 44. Women's Employment

Burton says women have Needle work, cut work, spinning, bone lace, & other devices; to adorn their houses, cushions, carpets, chairs, stools; confections, conserves, distillations, &c, which they show to strangers. They have household offices, gardens full of flowers, & plants of all kinds, which they take pains to get & keep.



# Burton's Melancholy.

p. 62  
p. 63  
p. 64

## Dancing.

This is an enticement to lust. Many women that use dancing become worse, none better. It is not easily told what scurrile talk and obscene actions come of it—such lascivious motions, wanton looks, meretricious kisses. Yet it is a part of a gentleman bringing up, to sing, dance & play on the lute or other instrument, before she can say the 10 Commandments. Dancing is a great attainment as it is often used, & many are undone by it.

Many councils condemn it, many fathers abhor it, & not without good cause. Nobody dances soberly says Tully.

Yet Burton held it to be an honest lawful recreation if properly and moderately used. He condemns the abuse of it. He says, "many will not allow men & women to dance together because it is a provocation to lust." Burton says this and some other things are not to be banished because abused by some persons. There is a mean in all things. Dancing is a pleasant recreation, if sober and modest.

Burton with all his censures, was not a rigid moralist—far from it. He was very lax on some points.

Con. q. 287.

[Spectator, says, No 334—"The art of dancing is esteemed only as an amusing trifle; it lies altogether uncultivated and is unhappily fallen under the impulsion of illiterate and mechanic".

[In civilized societies, dancing is designed to promote refinement of manners, & serves to excite the sensibility & delicacy, which attaches and refines the sexes. It is the favorite amusement of all nations civilized and savage. With the savage, dancing is no affair of gallantry, love or refinement, but a ceremony connected with peace & important transactions. Women are seldom permitted to join in it.

Williams's Dictionary

## The Author.

He says he was brought up at Oxford University; and had been a scholar for 30 years—was by profession a divine—~~not~~ poor nor rich, had been afflicted with melancholy.



# Jackson's Geology of Maine.

1837. 38

Agamenticus. He says three sienite mountains in York are called Agamenticus. The highest is 672 feet above the sea.

Mosquito Mountain, is on the Penobscot, in or near Frankfort, and composed of Granite.

It is 527 feet high, and twice that in diameter.

Other mountains in the vicinity are granite. Mount Aldo is 968 feet high - seen in Frankfort.

Mountains of Granite are in Bluehill, near the navigable water. One is 300 feet high.

Granite & Sienite Mountains in the interior of the state are of "infinite number".

Mica Slate is abundant in Maine. ~~One~~ in Phippsburg, Winthrop, &c.

Limestone in inexhaustible quarries at Thomaston, Camden, Hallowell, &c. York, Cumberland & Oxford & Kennebec counties contain limestone.

Roofing slates are found in several towns about Bangor.

Iron Ore is abundant in several places.

From Augusta to Dresden, on the east side of the river, the rocks that "crop out" are primitive - gneiss, granite & mica slate.

Wiscasset on Sheepscot river. The rocks around are gneiss with granite veins.

Damariscotta. A deposit of oyster shells near this place, forms a cliff, 25 feet above the sea in highest place, 108 rods long and 80 to 100 broad. The shells are in regular layers.

Abenegan Indians had a burial place on an island, near Damariscotta Mills.

Pemquid Point, composed of gneiss & mica slate rocks, with granite veins.

Portland & Wincham. Rocks are Talrose Slate, mica slate, granite gneiss. - Rocks from Raymond on Sebaste Lake to Oxford are all granite.

Umbagog Lake has lofty mountains of granite around it. Alleganticook Mountain in Can. Len. 1457 feet high, consists of mica slate.

Wt Desert Island is of granite & sienite. W. D. 1800 feet above sea.



# Geology of Maine.

Moose Island (Eastport) consists of greenstone trap-rocks.

Indian Town to Robbinston, the coast is of strata of red sandstone, intersected by dykes or veins of greenstone trap.

Red sandstone is opposite, in New Brunswick. Lubec Bay has 150 miles of coast. On this coast and on islands are limestone, Trap rocks, Lead mines, Red sandstone,

Clink stone, a variety of trap, has a metallic sound, when struck with a hammer, whence its name. At Dennyville.

Gneiss is plenty in Maine. Is at Hallowell, &c. It splits into large sheets. Is at Phippsburg.

Granite. Nearly all capes & islands west of Head Harbor Island, are granite and Sienite.

Greenstone Trap, is a principal rock on the coast from Lubec to Wadsworth, presenting precipices from 50 to 200 feet high.

Maine presents the most valuable State quarries in the Union.

Limestone & marble - abundant.

New Red Sandstone, or Freestone, forms high cliffs along St Croix River.

Brick Clay is abundant, and is found in the vicinity of almost every town; Augusta and Bangor are abundantly supplied.

Iron Ore is abundant.

Lead and zinc ores are found

Mount Waldo. about 15 miles below Bangor, is seen for 20 miles round. Height 964 feet above the Penobscot. It is a dome shaped mass of naked rock. Formerly had forest trees, but has been burnt over. Where any oaks remain, grow a few birch trees and blueberry bushes. A magnificent view from the summit. In or near Frankfort, Hampden bears N. E. Bucksport E. Belfast S.W. by S. The Penobscot is seen on the North winding its way from Bangor, & coursing by to the sea, on the S.E. Mosquito Mountain 527 feet high, & Treats Mountain seem to join the base of Mt Waldo. The three are near each other; the 2 smaller apparently projecting into the river, & partly in front of Waldo.



## 32 Geology of Maine.

Belfast } The rocks of these places consist of various  
Christine } slates, argillaceous and talcose.  
Hamden }

Bluehill Mountain is 914 feet above the water.

It is mostly gneiss.

Valuable Granite Quarries at Bluehill.

Long Island is in Bluehill Bay.

Northport Mountain in Belfast or near it is 486 ft. high. Affords a fine view of Penobscot Bay and its islands.

The islands & points of land below Thomaston, and farther west are of granite & sienite. Some gneiss.

Moosehead Island is composed of granite.

Quab Head, where there is a lighthouse, somewhere below Thomaston, is composed of Trap rock.

Greenstone Trap, Jacksonsars, is of igneous origin and was thrown up from below the granite. It cuts through & overlies the red sandstone formation. It is composed of hornblende, feldspar and oxide of iron.

Cape Elizabeth. Rocks of Talcose slate.

Shiphegan has quarries of granite, mica slate and limestone.

From Portland to Saco, by land. The rocks are composed of various slates - argillaceous slate rocks, and mica slate rocks & talcose slates. Some granite.

Kennebunk has granite quarries - and exports great quantities.

Kennebunk to Wells. The rocks that "crop out" are indurated slate, cut by trap dykes. Soil sandy, derived from decomposition of granite.

Wells to York. Many Trap dykes of great dimensions in the slate rocks.

York has a great variety of slate rocks, with sienite veins and trap dykes.

These Trap rocks have burst through the slate strata at different times, in a molten state.

"Four or five distinct eruptions of molten trap rocks have burst through the strata [of various kinds] in Maine."



# Geology of Maine.

Agamenticus Mountains or Hills are Nos. 1, 2, 3. No. 1 is the highest, and is 672 feet above the sea level. York meeting house is  $S. 11^{\circ} E.$  It is composed of sienitic rocks. Peak No. 2. is 523 feet. No 3 is not noticed. These mountains are conspicuous at sea. Seen in York. Cape Porpoise is  $N. 75^{\circ} E.$  from No 1. and Boon Island  $S. 59^{\circ} E.$

Kittery Point. Rocks are indurated varieties of argillaceous slates passing into micaceous slates, with trap dykes cut through the strata. Stones are good only for rude purposes, walls, wharves, &c.

South Berwick. Clay as at Bangor.

North from Berwick, soil more sandy - came from decomposed granite.

Salmon Falls on Salmon River are produced by ledges of slate rocks, like those at Kittery Pt. First pitch of water 14 feet; the second 20 feet. A factory on the N Hampshire side.

Lebanon farther N. is an elevated plain 515 feet above the sea, composed of poor sandy soil without a clay substratum. Some hardpan of gravel, cemented by bog iron ore. The whole district is devoid almost of forest trees and the soil very sterile. Indian corn is short and feeble. The people find great difficulty in supporting themselves by farming. Wood is scarce & dear. The forest trees are destroyed, "the only produce that can advantageously grow on such soil". 30 miles from Portsmouth. Some mica slate incl.

Sheep Mountain near Paris is 1756 feet above the sea at Portland, and 925 feet above the court house on Paris Hill. Composed of granite which has burst through gneiss. In Winthrop, gneiss, limestone & mica slate are noticed.

Waterville is 153 feet above the sea. Variation of the needle at Waterville, 1835,  $12^{\circ} 8' N.$

Conic Falls at W. made by argillaceous slate. Fall from 18 to 20 feet.

Limestone is found at Waterville, Skowhegan, &c.

Skowhegan Falls, 22 feet, over a rocky ledge.

Norridgewock Falls, 10 feet, over argillaceous slate, & limestone in Norridgewock, Farmington, &c.



### 34 Geology of Maine.

Mount Blue near Acorn is 2804 feet above the level of the sea. This mountain is composed of gneiss and mica slate. Village of Phillips is 737 feet above the sea, & not far from Mt. Blue. Phillips has much limestone.

Farmington  $44^{\circ} 37' N.$  has much rich alluvial soil on Sandy River, and fine farms. Sandy River with its intervals passes through Phillips also, above F.

Mount Abraham, a conspicuous eminence, is 2465 feet above the level of the sea in North Salem or 3387 feet above the sea. It is composed of mica slate. Lime is made in Vienna, & Mt. Vernon. Mica slate and granite in Mt. Vernon.

Tertiary deposits, or substratum of the valley of Augusta, are from 88 to 100 feet above the level of high water in the Kennebec. The clay of Gardiner & Hallowell belongs to the same formation. Marine shells are found below this clay. In Oak Street, in a well, the top of the clay is 102 feet above the river, and the bottom or marine shells, 82 feet above the river.

Limestone in Alton, Harmony, argillaceous slate in Parkman, in Abbot on Piscataquis on the road from Monson to Moosehead Lake.

Moosehead Lake - shores covered with spruce, pine, maple, and birch. The lake 960 feet above Portland Harbor. Foot of lake  $45^{\circ} 24' N.$  Variation of compass  $11^{\circ} N.$  Many islands in the lake. Squaw mountain is 1000 feet above the lake.

Moose River - rocks of siliceous <sup>or flint</sup> slate, argillaceous slate and granite. Some rapids. Black flies, mosquitoes, & midges very troublesome. 30 miles up Moose river is 15 miles from Canada line.

Frontier. The Canada road when it crosses the frontier is 2000 feet above Portland Harbor. Latitude  $45^{\circ} 48' N.$  Clearings are made within 13 or 14 miles of Canada line, and buildings erected. Trees on Canada road from Moose river to frontier, yellow birch, beech, spruce, pine, and sugar maples.

Timber on Moose River & on its ponds. Poplar, white birch on low lands; on better lands cedar, spruce, birch, maple, and pine - also Norway sapling pines. Granite & slate in places.



# Geology of Maine

**Granwacke.** A huge bed, filled with fossil shell impressions, crosses the Moose River, the head of Moosehead Lake, and extends to the Aroostook. It contains boulders and blocks and fragments of Granwacke from this bed have been carried & scattered over the country, from the Aroostook to Penobscot Bay, and to the mouth of the Kennebec. Some masses have been carried 126 miles.

**Other Rocks, minerals and soils** have been moved southward from their native places, by diluvial currents, & strangely mixed. ~~with others~~ The soils resting on a rock are rarely derived from its decomposition but come from rocks farther north. The soils of Thomaston rest on limestone, but they do not contain any lime, but originate from granitic and mica slate & Silurian

**Primary Rocks,** <sup>in Maine.</sup> a primitive formation. Granite; Gneiss or stratified gneiss; mica slate (stratified); Talcose Slate has talc instead of mica: otherwise is like mica slate; argillaceous slate passes into micaceous and talcose slate, & sometimes becomes a blue quartz rock, being highly charged with silica.

**Transition Rocks** in Maine. This forms huge bands of parallel strata broken open by protruded rocks. Various slates, limestones, fine granwacke, & coarse conglomerate with shells, belong to this group.

**Secondary Rocks** rest upon the Transition. Have fossil contents and a mineral composition. Certain groups of limestone & sandstone are the only rocks of this series in Maine.

**Tertiary Formation** in Maine.

This is always composed of two great beds of clay or clay marl, filled with marine shells. It rarely found more than 150 feet above the sea.

**Diluvial Deposits.** These were swept by a current of water from the North towards the South & deposited far from their parent beds. The grooves, scratches & water marks upon fixed boulders show the direction of the current. Such proofs are almost universal in Maine.

**Alluvial Soils** are made by fine particles, brought from higher to lower places especially during freshets.



## Geology of Maine.

The Great Current from the Northward sweeps over the State from N. 15° W. to S. 15° E. and removed rocks & soils far from their parent beds. The enormous masses of rock. The summit of Mt. Katahdin shows that the current rushed over that lofty mountain; & that the deluvial waters were more than 5000 feet - or a mile. The whole mass of loose materials, as well as odd rocks were carried forward some a few miles only, and some to a great distance & deposited over the State. The soil now resting upon rocks in places is rarely if ever such as results from a decomposition of those rocks, but came from ledges to the northward.

The soil in Portland is made up from the detritus of gneiss and granite rocks; while the ledges in that city are wholly composed of the argillaceous, talcose and mica slate rocks. Granite & gneiss rocks are abundant to the north.

Tertiary deposits - of clay, sand and marine shells. were produced in tranquil water. Their strata indicate that the clay was gradually deposited, allowing time for the growth of shell fish in its several layers. The deluvial deposits, on the contrary, were made suddenly and violently.

The tertiary deposits were cut through by the deluvial waters which have excavated deep ravines and heaped up long ridges; and the general direction of these vallies and ridges coincides with the direction of this sweeping current (S. 5° E.)

The tertiary deposit of clay filled with remains of marine shells, is found in Gardiner, 50 feet above the river. These shells were inhabitants of the clay when it was covered with waters of the sea. The whole mass has been elevated by subterranean power 60 or 70 feet. This tertiary deposit is like that at Bangor, and that in Portland and Westbrook, & probably extends along the banks of the river from Augusta to Gardiner, & thence to the mouth of the river, with interruptions here and there. It is never over 100 feet above the sea level. - In Portland shells in their natural position in beds of clay, where they evidently lived & died; are now 50 feet above the sea, having been since elevated.



# Geology of Maine

## Tertiary Deposits—continued.

The general height of the tertiary deposits in Maine, is about 70 or 80 feet, and none occur more than 100 feet above the sea. The ancient tertiary sea covered the land only to that level, and a large portion of the state, now above the sea was formerly submerged beneath the waters of the ocean. The various prominences rising to a great height stood like islands in the waves. A part of the land at Portland, Bangor, Gardiner, Hallowell and Augusta was above the ancient ocean.

Common Brick Clays are of the formation and are generally below the altitude of 100 feet from the sea level; the higher land is destitute of such deposits. In the elevated table lands of the state, clay suitable for bricks is comparatively rare. The plastic clay of Turner is of fresh water formation; and there are alluvial clays but not abundant.

Plastic clay, calcareous remains of marine shells, were imbedded beneath the sea, and now make the tertiary formation.

Granite in many places shows its igneous origin; and <sup>that</sup> it was forced up in a molten state, after the consolidation of stratified rocks, that now rest upon it, and broke & distorted these stratified rocks by the violent upheaving.

These stratified rocks, which are older than the Granite, are Gneiss, Mica slate in some places; also Argillaceous slates, Talrose slate, Greenwacke & Conglomerate.

These rocks rest upon granite, which by its disruption has turned them up so as to incline highly to the horizon. They show by their contortions fractures & chemical changes that they have been subjected to mechanical & igneous disturbance. (They rather lean against granite hills & mountains, than rest upon them.)

Stratified rocks were at first deposited horizontally, and have since tilted up so as to form an angle with the horizon, & have been strangely altered, & in contact with rocks of igneous origin. It is supposed that gneiss, mica slate & talrose slate have been rendered crystalline by heat.

(Transition limestone beds abound in gneiss and mica slate rocks.)



# 38 Geology of Maine.

All Rocks existing in strata, are considered as Deposits (sedimentary) from water; the strata were deposited in horizontal layers. They have since been lifted up so as to incline at various angles; and the lower layers of the strata have undergone chemical changes or metamorphoses, evincing the effects of intense heat. [Have been changed to mica slate, &c.]

Unstratified Rocks result from igneous fusion and protrusion from below. The granite mountains of Maine have a strong family likeness to those of

Greenstone Trap, like granite, is of igneous origin, & was thrown up from below the granite. It cuts through & overlies the new red sands to the formation, showing that it is not so old as that. Dykes of Greenstone Trap are numerous on the St. Croix, and elsewhere; the greenstone has forced its way through the new red sandstone, & through transition limestone, below the sandstone. — (one evidently when in a liquid state).

Mount Katahdin, highest in Maine. 5300 feet above the sea. Mount Katahdin (Ktaadn) is of granite, and the country around. Stratified rocks recline upon its sides, north & south. The name signifies "highest mountain", as

Aroostook river has wide spreading intervals and a limestone soil, & a luxuriant forest. It is the richest soil in Maine. Sugar maple, & the yellow birch. bound, & very lofty pines.

Hemlock does not grow here, if any, & in the Aroostook, but is abundant with pines on the Penobscot.

Madawaska river. The rocks are argillaceous slate & blue limestone, covered with a deep & good soil, bearing cedar, pine, spruce, birch, maple, hemlock, and other forest trees.

Houlton has luxuriant limestone soils, and rich alluvial soils.

Siscataquis, a branch of the Penobscot, signifies a "branch", in the Indian language, he says.

"White Maple" is said to grow on the the Penobscot at Lincoln.

Nickatow, he says, signifies Forks — applied to the place where the east-west branches of Penobscot meet.



Seboois is a branch of the <sup>each</sup> branch of the Penobscot. Maple, red oak, hornbeam, hemlock, spruce, &c. on lower part of Seboois. Rocks - limestone, gneiss. Peaked Mountain, chiefly of gneiss, is 800 feet above the Seboois. Greenstone trap cuts through the gneiss.

"Conglomerate or gneiss" he says - as if the words were synonymous.

Sandstone on the Seboois resting on gneiss.

Sugar Loaf Mountain is 1900 feet above the level of the Seboois - composed of gneiss - clay slate, cut through by a huge trap dyke, whose igneous influence is visible on the adjoining rocks. This dyke is 500 feet wide.

Lakes on the Seboois, far up. Rock argillaceous limestone, gneiss and greenstone trap. Forests, blackmatack, juniper, yellow birch. - in some places, in addition, spruce, pine, black alder.

La Pompey, a branch of Aroostook - has lofty trees.

Aroostook alluvial is 6 or 8 miles wide. Limestone, gneiss, & greenstone are there.

On the <sup>dark</sup> alluvial, grow, lofty pines, larch, juniper, fir, spruce, cedar, and yellow birch trees.

Tall rank grass, called blue joint, grows on the banks of the river, 4 to 5 feet high; on the yellow alluvial; and large sugar maples are abundant and alone, white birch, black & white ash grow on the yellow soil. Soft wood trees (evergreens?) grow on the low lands, and hardwood trees and great pines grow on the uplands in the rear. Alder bushes grow in some places. Salmon are caught in this river.

Mars Hill is gneiss.

Balm of Gilead grows in the forest, on St. Francois river.

Hemlock is found on the Penobscot, but not in the region above noticed.

"Tall Meadow Grass" grows in a swamp on Little Megallow River near Androscoogin. Is it the grass mentioned above?

Yellow Birch & maple - deemed indications of a good soil.

A Dyke signifies a wall or vein of rock intersecting another rock. Always originates from below.

Breccia means a rock of angular fragments cemented. same as tuff.



# 40. Geology of Maine.

## 1. Rocks unstratified, of igneous origin.

Greenstone trap - varieties are columnar q.t., compact q.t., porphyritic q.t. (having feldspar crystals) amygdaloidal q.t. (containing cavities, open or filled with other minerals), scoriae of trap & others, breccia. Traps & others. Soil of decomposed greenstone is brown, and a loam kind of loam - a good soil. Greenstone is composed of hornblende, feldspar and oxide of iron.

Porphyry is composed of feldspar compact, & little separate of feldspar. Some feldspar rock is red.

Sienite (like granite, but has hornblende instead of mica). Some is red. Some porphyritic. Term, "hornblende rock". Soil of decomposed sienite is brown - has much feldspar & hornblende.

Granite (composed of quartz, feldspar & mica). Term, graphic granite, porphyritic granite, &c. Soil of decomposed granite. Has fragments of mica, grains of quartz, and brown particles of feldspar; and fine powder of the same minerals with some oxide of iron.

## 2. Primary Stratified Rocks, originally deposited from water; some have become crystalline by action of heat.

Gneiss, is like granite, same materials, but is stratified. Soil of gneiss is like that of granite; but has more mica.

Mica slate (composed of quartz & mica). Soil of mica slate has much mica, mixed with quartz.

Talcose slate (composed of talc and mica). Talc is in laminae like mica, but not elastic like mica. Greenish. Soil of this is soft & light green - has silicate of magnesia, a soapstone slate.

Siliceous or flinty slate. Contains plumbeous, called black lead.

## 3. Transition Series

Argillaceous slate (Argillaceous states are argillaceous. It passes into mica slate. Argilla, means clay.

Pyriteferous slate. Contains iron pyrites or yellow crystals of sulphur iron, makes alum & copperas.

Heterogeneous slate contains iron. Green slate, Red slate. Calcareous slate & carbonaceous slate.

Grauwacke or Greywacke, is a rock composed of various pebbles united by an argillaceous or clayey cement. Color generally grey, alternates with argillaceous slate.

Grauwacke slate, often noticed. Contains black boulders. Soil of grauwacke is light grey, full of smooth rounded pebbles, composed of the rocks. When carried by water & deposited, this is a tough, blue clay.

Conglomerate is the same as grauwacke, or coarse grauwacke. Soil is like that from grauwacke.



# Geology of Maine.

41

## 3 Transition Series—continued.

Limestone, viz. Compact L. Compact Blue L.  
Azulite & argillaceous L. Reticulated L. White granular.  
Clouded L. or Marble. Blue limestone.  
Blue slaty limestone. Blue granular limestone.  
Blue marble. Black Marble. Grey marble.  
Dolomite, a granular magnesian limestone.  
Hydraulic limestone. — Brecciated Marble.  
Compact limestone or Clinkstone. Fossil limestone.  
Madrepore limestone. Dolomite marble.  
Veined Marble. — Serpentine marble.

Soil from decomposed limestones, has various colors, according to the impurities it contains. Generally one of a light yellowish brown color, from oxide of iron. Calcareous soils effervesce with acids.

## 4 Secondary Series.

Limestone containing fossil shells; cellular limestone.  
Brecciated marble composed of fragments of limestone, &c.  
Spotted limestone, suitable for marble.  
Clouded Marble. Limestone & other stones melted together.

New Red Sandstone, called freestone. Composed of grains of sand cemented together, & often containing layers of mica. Colors red, grey, green, white. Red color is made by peroxide of iron.

Compact sandstone. — Micaceous. — Coarse sandstone.  
Coarse conglomerate, or sandstone.

Soil of Red sandstone is composed almost entirely of grains of quartz with oxide of iron & clay, some mica.

Calcareous spar. — Gypsum.  
Red marl, indurated.

## 5. Tertiary Series.

Plastic Clay.

Bog iron ore.

Peat.

Bog manganese

## 6 Simple Minerals.

Quartz, Hornstone, Jasper, Hematite, Hornblende.  
Garnet, Arsenical iron, Pyrites, mica, Feldspar.  
Tourmaline, Asbestos, Bog iron ore, Galena, Calcareous spar.  
Graphite (black lead) Staurolite, Beryl, Andalusite, &c.

Fossils are in the Secondary, Transition & Tertiary Rocks or substances. The fossils are shells, mostly,



42  
p. 369 English Poets & others. - from whom extracts  
are made, in Richardson's Dictionary. [See Miscel 5, 95]

Later ones, in part.

Robert of Gloucester 1172-41	Edmund Spenser - 1553-1598 Part
Robert of Brunne	Philip Sidney 1534-1584 Part
Piers Plowman (sup. 61.)	Michael Drayton 1563. 1631. Part
Geoffrey Chaucer - lived 1328-1400.	Samuel Daniel 1562. 1619. Part
John Gower - 1325-1408	Thomas Nashe 1566. 1600.
John Wiclif - 1324-1384	Robert Burton - 1576. 1639-40
Lord Berners trans. Froissart 1523.	John Holinshed - died 1580
Sir Thomas More 1480-1535	Wm. Harrison 15
John Lydgate died 1420	Wm. Shakspeare - 1564-1616
Robert Fabian ... died 1512	Roger Ascham. - 1568
Thomas Tusser - 1515. 1580	Holland
John Skelton imp. Henry VIII	bp. Hall (Jos. of the) 1574-1656
Turberville	Fr. Bacon - 1561-1626
Wm. Gynedall - 1477-1536	Rich. Hakluyt - 1553-1616
Gascoigne - 1577 died	Eyo. Wether - 1588-1667
Udal	North
Vives	Dr Henry More 1644 to 1687.
John Fisher b/p. 1459. 1535	Ben Jonson 1574-1637
Sir Th. Elyot, physician. died 1546.	John Beaumont - 1586-1616
Joye wrote 1545.	John Fletcher - 1576. 1625.
Bp. Gardner	Thos. Fuller - 1608-1661
John Fox (Martyr) 1517-1587	Sharp
Edw. Fairfax living 1631.	Sr. Thos. Brown (Vulgar Error) 1605-1682
John Donne - 1573 -	Wm Brown (Brit. Pastor) also printed 1625
John Bale - b/p. 1495-1563.	John Ford - 1586-1639
Earl of Surrey - 1516 - 1547.	Eyo. Chapman - 1557-1634
Sir Wm Davenant - 1664	Brende
Sir J. Cheke - 1514-1557.	Prynne
Tuke	John Milton 1608-1674
Earl of Rochester, poet. 1647. 1680 (Volapiscus)	John Selden
Earl of Roscommon " 1633. 1684	Edm. Waller - 1605-1687.
John Pompet " 1677. 1703	Abra. Cowley - 1618-1667
Earl of Dorset " 1637. 1705	Sam. Butler 1612-1680
John Philips " 1676. 1708 (Vulgar)	Sr. John Denham 1615-1668
Halifax - 1661. 1715	John Dryden 1631-1701
Thomas Parnell " 1679. 1717	Sr. John Suckling 1608-1641
Mat. Prior " 1664. 1721	Lord Clarendon 1608-1674
Alex. Pope " 1688. 1744	Gilbert Burnet b/p. 1643-1715
John Gay " 1688. 1732	John Evelyn 1620. 1706
Blair " 1700. 1774	Richard Hooker - 1553-1600
Jona. Swift " 1667. 1745	bp. Taylor (Jeremy) 1613-1667
Thomson " 1700. 1748	Dr. Robert South - 1633
A. Philips " 1671. 1749	Locke
Shenstone " 1714. 1763.	Dampier
Wm. Warner, attorney, died 1609	Glanvill
Sr. Thos. Wyatt ..... 1503-1541	Wm. Camden 1551. 1623.
John Addison - 1670. 1719	John Stowe - 1525-1605
Thos. Fickell 1686. 1740.	Dyer.
Thos. Somerville 1692. 1742.	Nicholas Rowe 1673-1718
	Mat. Green 1696. 1737
	John Ray 1692-1705



"History of East Retford in the county of Nottingham", Eng. Land. By H.S. Piercy. Retford 1828  
Retford is in the Hundred of Bassett. One Division of the Hundred is Hatfield. Retford means Red-ford a ford over the river Idle. Red-ford is in County York.

1388. Town Hall erected - Its use not given.  
" "Stockhouse for stocks," to be set under steps of the Hall."  
1578 Schoolhouse: A parson agreed to build one.  
1279. Retford had a pillory & Ducking Stool. The latter for the correction of scolds & other disorderly women. The Ducking Stool is mentioned in Doomsday Book being then in use in England. called cathedra stercoris or "seat of dung", because delinquents were placed in a chair and ducked in stinking water.  
1745. Church turned into a stable for horses, by soldiers marching against the rebels.  
1758 Town Hall rebuilt. Cost £1773. 17. 1  
1779. The body of one executed was hung in chains, near to the place where the murder was committed. A few weeks after, a seaman passing that way, fired a ball & hit the body. He was  
1797. A man executed at Nottingham for stealing cows.  
1801. Two executed at do - for breaking into a house & stealing money. Several more executions. One hung in chains for murder.  
1658. Church rebuilt. Cost 1500 £; only a part rebuilt.  
1528 Church rebuilt & mortary.

This Church of St. Swithun is Gothic; has a square tower & bells. Body in the form of a cross, consists of a nave, chancel and two side aisles, with north and south transept. Body is 116 feet long from eastern window to western entrance; 57 feet wide in nave, and side aisles from wall to wall; 85 feet from north to south in the centre, & the chancel 19 feet. The greater part of this space is taken up with pews; those in the south aisle, southern transept & chancel are regular & well sized; those in the nave are irregular in construction & arrangement, well adapted to accommodate the population. Height of tower to top of spire 67 feet, height of nave 44 feet, and roof supported by pillars. There are four Galleries: one in north aisle, another in the south erected 1778; one over the west entrance erected 1740, and another in Southern transept 1820. That in north aisle is composed of English Oak, & the work is of the 15th century probably.

Organ. First one given 1770, & a gallery erected, New Organ 1777. It is in the gallery over the western entrance.

Northern transept seems not used for common purposes. Children of National School sit in it.

Vestry room is on N. side of chancel - fitted up 1792.

Parish chest of Oak in this room. Parish books in this chest are in a most eligible state.

Each of 6 bells has an inscription



# History of East Retford.

Monuments in the Church. One of 1404; one of 1476.  
One of 1511. 1517. 1753. &c

The Font in the Church is very ancient. Stands on a pedestal.  
Gifts to the Poor, &c. recorded on Tablets.

Gifts for the Communion; - Silver bowls, silver salt  
cellars, &c.; silver flaggons, & Chalice with cover;  
a large silver for the Communion plate

A Methodist Chapel - will seat 1100 persons.

Independent Dissenter's Chapel - smaller.

1684. Free Grammar School for the instruction of Boys  
in grammar, established by Edward VI. 1552. Granted  
lands & the yearly value of £15. 5. 3¼. To be a master  
and undermaster appointed by Bailiffs & Burgesses. They  
& abp. of York to make regulations. B. & C. might purchase  
or lease the land for the school, not exceeding 20th yearly income  
Master to have 10£ a year and a house, undermaster  
£5. 5. 3¼ a year and a house, with an increase afterwards.  
In 1664 the master's salary was 20£, and 4a. bequeathed  
by another. This salary 33£ in all remained until 1801  
when it was raised to 53£; and in 1813 to 80£. The  
Usher (or undermaster) had 21£ from 1763 to 1801;  
then for many years 30£ a year. In 1828, 40£ a year  
School house was erected 1779 on site of the old one.  
~~Cost of the house for the master~~ £490. A house for the master  
built in 1799 cost 360£, and 94£ more afterwards. In 1810  
a house for the Usher cost £536. 16. 8.

The Bailiffs & Burgesses were prosecuted about  
1699 for misapplying the lands, &c. given for charitable  
purposes. It was found that some had been misapplied  
for 79 years; and the bailiffs & Burgesses were ordered  
to pay the Master £33. 2. 14. 4. being the amount withheld.  
But the decree was not enforced & was abandoned  
owing to some difficulties. In 1819 another examination  
was made. Several documents not to be found.

National School, erected in 1813 - 75<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> feet by 37<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> feet.  
Can accommodate 160 scholars. Supported at first by voluntary  
contributions. Now, 1828, funds of School declining.

Ancient Town Hall was built chiefly of wood in the  
"post of a nave style" - covered with slates - six windows  
but no glass, it being supplied by iron stanchions  
with doors & windows etc. - had a small cupola with bell.  
The bell was rung for markets, courts, &c. The skimmles  
(or market) were under the hall as at present. The  
body of the hall was usually appropriated for theatrical  
& other amusements



Nat. Hist. \*  
2. 2. 2  
Nov. 1735

The New Town Hall, was commenced in 1735. It has a cupola rising from the centre of the roof, surmounted by a weathercock (shaped like that of New England) and the four quarters of the horizon, N. S. E. W. In the lower part of the cupola is the bell, on which the clock strikes, and a dial is placed on each of the "principal quarters" (on the four?) The Hall Room is 70 feet by 26, and 20 feet high. The Quarter Sessions are held here for the Borough & N. division of the county. The room is lighted by 12 windows, square or oblong, with 18 panes of glass each. There is a Council Room used by the grand jury 20 by 26 feet, or closet for books, & a hatch for papers. The meetings of the body corporate are held in this room, and the county magistrates hold petty sessions here every <sup>other</sup> Saturday.

"The Great Room is appropriated to the Assemblies of the gentry of the town & neighbourhood, which are here, like angels' visits, few & far between. Other public meetings, by permission of the council, are generally held in this place. Undneath these two rooms are the Shambles.

The Town Hall, as figured, is in the Grecian style, or not Gothic; Only one story above the Shambles, with 7 windows on a side, & a hipped roof quite flat, and no gable ends. Porch & stairs, in front, and iron railing.

Theatre, erected 1789. Small. Boxes 3. pit 2. gallery 1.

News Room, Post Office, Bank, Work house, &c.

An "Old Guide post". Place where it stood before 1759.

M. 2248. An Oak Sofa is figured of the age of James I. It has 2 drawers under the seat in front. Length 12 feet; breadth 20 inches; height of back 4 feet in the middle - about 2 feet near ends. Much carving on the back & elsewhere. He calls it Sofa. Worth so called when made?

Com. 10. 46.

Young's Love, Name was - of "lovely Daphne". Sat. 1.

"With legs tossed high on her sophee seat."

This was in Queen Anne's time, as appears in this Satire - is an older reference to the Sofa than that in the Guide.

\* The large towns in England, or many of them, have a Town Hall, & some (probably shire towns) have a County Hall. This appears in Ed. Encyc. in the account of towns & cities.

Retford as a Sessions house for county Assizes; a Town Hall, with a market house, for the county of Lincoln & County of Nottingham. Northampton has a County Hall. Some have market & shambles behind the Hall. County towns have a jail; Canterbury has a Town Hall, & a Town House, & a Sessions house, & a Jail & three schools under it.



## West Retford (near Idle River).

Almost all the landed property in this parish belongs to the Hospital, Church & Poor; the number of freeholders is of course small. [Same in many other places.]

The Church is ancient - consists of a nave and south side aisle. It has a handsome Octagonal Spire upon a square tower. The exterior is in good repair, but the inside neglected. Very few pews afford a comfortable seat. The body seems to have been built in 16th century; the tower & chancel are older. There are some floor monumental stones - one 1452, &c.

He gives a figure of the Church - a fine tower & spire. Roof of body seems flat.

Hospital - built about 1665. The chamber has in v paper, in painting - all inlaid with empannelled oak. Hospital founded, by a bachelor, 1664. & endowed with lands

Free School. Founded by will 1691 by a Middlesex man, money to be laid out in land, to support the School, viz 300 £ and 100 £ for a building. Something about boys being taught at East Retford Grammar School, after having been "instructed in the Accidence". The School was for children of W. Retford whose parents have not an estate of 10 £ per annum. Not said whether females participated.

Meeting House of General Baptists.

In some villages around, the parish church was in a bad condition inside or out. The "pewing" is sometimes defective.



"Travels in North America in 1841-2, with Geological Observations" by Charles Lyell. Esq.

American Plants. [See Nelson. Mineral 3. 76.]

"The entire distinctness of the trees shrubs and plants from those on the other side of the Atlantic affords a constant charm to the European traveller." It says cultivated plants are the same here as in Europe. The English daisy, a common weed there, withers in the dry air of this climate.

Rocks. The rocks & soil about Boston reminded him of the less elevated regions of Sweden and Norway; & of some parts of Scotland. The lakes & ponds in New England reminded him of Sweden.

The grooves, furrows & scratches on the rocks in place he noticed - generally nearly N. & S. Prof Hitchcock says they are usually N. 10 or 15 W. or S. 10 or 15 E. These markings are found on mountains 2000 feet high.

Fire flies, humming bird were new to him. He calls fire flies "small beetles resembling our male glow worms".

Plants, birds & insects are novel to the European; the rocks exhibit a remarkable resemblance to those of E.

Ridge of sand & gravel, near Lake Ontario. There are similar ones in Sweden.

Yellow Butterflies. He notices how they cluster together on a small spot, & rise together & scatter. He says they are very like a British species *Thyas (Odis) philodice*.

Niagara Falls. The upper rock, 80 feet thick is limestone. That below it, 80 feet thick, is shale. He calls the shale "soft argillo-calcareous shale". Below the falls down to Ontario there is sandstone below the shale. The strata all dip to the South, about 25 feet in a mile. They dip against the current, not with it.

Age of trees - examined at Corning near Erie Rail Road, by the stumps. Trees recently cut down. In counting the rings, he found that the trees were from 40 to 200 years old. A few went back 300 or 400 or 500 years more, "but scarcely one to the days of Columbus". "Very ancient trees are uncommon in the aboriginal forests of America." See age of trees in Williams, Cornhill.

Coal Mines (itinerary) in Pennsylvania exhibit mineral and fossil characters very similar to those of Europe.

Birds. In a forest in Pa. far from any habitation he heard no birds, but heard grasshoppers & crickets in a clearing - Birds abundant about settlements - Different from European - Birds are tame, where the Indians lived; they did not molest them, nor animals, except for food.



48 Lyell's Travels in North America

1841 & Autumnal Colors in Boston.

Oct 14. He mentions that maples and some other trees have changed their green to scarlet, purple, yellow. He compares the tints to faded tulips. Oaks had not changed.

Con. p. 406. Indian Summer. He so calls a season of warm sunny weather which succeeds the first frost rain. It is Indian Summer Oct. 14. He was misinformed on this and many other subjects.

Requests for Education laid out in costly buildings. He mentions the Ep. and College, the London University, &c. Mr. Lowell in his donations for public lectures in Boston, provided that not a dollar should be spent in brick & mortar. A spacious room was hired & the lectures immediately commenced. Had this proviso been omitted probably a large share of the donation would have been swallowed up in costly buildings, and the lectures been delayed for years.

Con. p. 38. "Architecture is a sensual gratification and addresses itself to the eye; it is the form in which the resources of a semi-civilized people are most likely to be lavished."

Percott's "Conquest of Mexico".

Nov. 2. 1842 Rocking Chairs. Lyell says this article was popular for ages all over "Anceashire" but was transplanted to the New World before it could be improved and become fashionable so as to be imported into the native land.

Cooks. He says he saw cooks in Georgia

Pame Turkeys devour crabs on the shore of Georgia

Raccoons range from the N. of Canada to the Gulf of Mexico. That is, they are found in all this distance.

Bird Tracks. He examined these tracks with much interest, in "thin bedded sandstone alternating with red colored shale," near Smith's Ferry, Northampton. Many superimposed beds were successively broken upon as different sets of tracks are seen through a thickness of sandstone more than 10 feet. They are tracks of small birds & large birds; some of the small footprints are only three inches apart, but the largest are from 6 to 8 feet. The largest foot is 19 inches long. <sup>in fine holes in the</sup> deposit of sand & mud & of birds making tracks on it.

Mt Holyoke, he says, is formed of horizontal strata of red sandstone in the lower part, and the summit is capped with a mass of Basaltic greenstone. He found on the side the *Hepatica triloba*, *Houstonia cerulea*, *Epigaea repens*, white saxifrage & several plants recently naturalized in British gardens. Apr. 15. 1842







# "The Pictorial History of England"

"being a History of the people as well as a History of the Kingdom", with several hundred wood cuts. New York 1846

Originally published in London, by Charles Knight, publisher of the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge. Edited by George H. Colver. 4 large 8 1/2 Vol. volumes of near 900 pages each. Divided into Books or Periods; and each Book into 7 chapters, viz

- I. Civil & Military Transactions. This part of the work, about 2000 pages, is by Charles M. Farlane.
- II. History of Religion by Thomas Thomson.
- III. Constitution Government & Laws, by A. Bisset
- IV. History of National Industry. M. Planché & Mr J. C. Platt
- V. Literature, Science of fine Arts. Sir Henry Ellis. Mr Poynter, Mr Byrton
- VI. Manners & Customs, costume & Furniture. Mr Thomson
- VII. Condition of the people & Social Position.

## Books or Periods.

- Vol. 1st. B.C. 55 to A.D. 449. 2d. 449-1066. 3d. 1066 to 1216.  
 I { 4th 1216 to 1399.  
 II { 5th 1399 to 1485 - 6th 1485-1603.

Augustine, the missionary to the Saxons. He died in 594. "He labored devotedly for the extension of Christianity, but showed him self in many instances little scrupulous as to the means by which he sought to accomplish, so desirable an end. Such indeed was too usually the conduct of the saints & missionaries of that period. They never lost sight of Rome and its spiritual supremacy." Pious frauds abound in the proceedings of persons of that age, though actuated by the purest motives.

"But his credulity was equal to any demands of the superstitious age."

In a century or two or before 800, the clergy & monks and monks became thoroughly corrupt. Idleness & superstition & profligacy prevailed, as soon as the church became possessed of large revenues. Before the Norman conquest, above 1/3 of the land was in possession of the church and exempted from taxes & military service.

Classic. St Ambrose in the 4th century, has the credit of having first introduced singing into the Christian churches of the West. The Gregorian chant was doubtless brought to England by Augustine. At a later date, singing was introduced into all the Saxon churches, after the rite of Rome. The Saxons had the horn, the trumpet, the flute, the drum, the cymbal the rotan or ool, the yore, the harp (common among them). Some say they had organs in Justinian's time.



# Pictorial History of England.

## Anglo-Saxon Intemperance.

Excessive drinking was the common vice of all ranks of people, in which they spent whole nights and days without intermission. The festivals of the church were disgraced by intemperance.

[See Verstegan. Con. & Illus. Not. p. 277.]

Wm. of Malmesbury.

The clergy were as fond of these coarse pleasures as others; and the monasteries in Edgar's time presented scenes of gambling, dancing & singing until midnight.

Baptism. "Children were baptised by immersion within thirty days after their birth." Laws of Anglo-Sax.

Names given to children (while infants, but not at baptism - apparently) indicated supposed qualities.

and not those which the bearer actually possessed. Verstegan admires the Anglo-Saxon names, in which they recommended honor, honesty, peace, valor, amity, charity, truth, loyalty & other virtues. A large proportion of their names expressed their admiration of rough qualities: - Athelwulf, the noble wolf; Behtwulf, illustrious wolf; Hæthert, illustrious hound; Sigwulf, the wolf of victory. Others had more regard to peaceable virtues; as Edgar, the keeper of his oath; Egbert, adjoined to equity; Earnoc, the help of honor; Oswine, beloved of the house. Some female names are gentle & expressive, as Adeline, the noble wife; Wynfleda, the peace of man; Deorwyn, dear to man; Oswithe, very clear; Winnefride, a gainer of peace. [See Verstegan. Con. & Illus. Not. p. 277.]

Women had respect & influence among the Anglo-Saxons, as among the German tribes.

## Sports & Pastimes. Hunting, Hawking.

Games very similar to Chess & Back-gammon were known. Dancing. Tumbling or dancing with the feet up. Running. Wrestling. Bear-baiting, and others.

## Anglo-Saxon Ranks.

1st Kings; 2d. Eorls, or nobility, with landed estates, called Twelfhaendmen, or Twelve handmen; and nobles with not property enough to constitute a lordship, called Sitthaendmen, or of gentle blood, named also Sixhaendmen or six handmen. These are Eorls.

3d Caste. Georls or Villains, named also Twihaendmen, or Two handmen. These were a part of the people, but were tenants ascribed to the soil & bound to it. Not in a state of absolute slavery, but entirely destitute of political power. They formed the great body of the nation.

The slaves or serfs were not of the people, were slaves, for the

The clergy were ranked with the nobility or still higher. The lowest priest was ranked as a thane. There were also free men, the eorls, and the lesser nobles.



# 52 Pictorial History of England.

## Under Normans.

p. 51.

Ulice. 2.

p. 128

M. G. 393.

**Baptism.** The mother of Thomas a Becket, from the east, was baptised in London. A picture of this baptism, made in those days, or in time of Becket, or perhaps later, represents her as in a large font, entirely naked, her upper part out of the water & her lower part under water, perhaps kneeling in the water, and the priest putting on oil. Near the font are two priests and two females. The writer infers that "entire or partial immersion was a part of the old mode of baptism"; & he says it continued in the English Church till after the Reformation.

**Modern Civilization.** (from M. Guizot's Hist. of Civilis.)  
The three elements of this civilization are the Roman World, the Christian World, and the Germanic World.

1. The Roman law was perpetuated from the 5th to the 18th century. The Roman civilization was perpetuated in social and intellectual life far below the empire, & modern civilization is to a considerable degree the prolongation of the ancient. The principle of liberty of thought, the principle of all philosophy, reason taking itself as a point to start from and as a guide, is an idea essentially the offspring of antiquity, an idea derived from Greece and Rome. It came not from Christianity nor from Germans. The ancient philosophers generally pursued their speculations in freedom. The state seldom interfered, and they meddled little with politics.
2. When what was philosophy became Religion, it changed its character, and aimed at much more power over human affairs. The spiritual penetrated much further into the temporal order of things than in Grecian or Roman antiquity. As human thought aspired to more power over men & nations, it lost its liberty. After a long time, philosophy recommenced its development, & interfered as religion had done, and it returned, or thought, having become philosophy, retained the pretensions it had assumed under the religious form. The union of intellectual liberty as it existed in antiquity, and of intellectual power as displayed in Christian communities, is the original character of modern civilization.
3. Two germs of principles from Germany — a system of social organization fitted to produce aristocracy & military subordination, & a principle of aristocratic patronage, combined with a strong infusion of liberty, are of Germanic, or in regard to land, & Saxon origin. From 5th to 10th century, in the Germanic world, there was nothing static, systematic, regular; all was fluctuating.



# Pictorial History of England.

Magna Charta, granted by King John, 1215.  
 It provides for the rights of the clergy; the rights  
 of the barons, the rights of the freemen.  
 As to the Villains, the <sup>most</sup> numerous class in the king-  
 dom, it provides that they shall not be unreasonable-  
 ly fined for small offences, & shall not be deprived of  
 their implements of husbandry. These are all  
 that relate to the villains. The <sup>main</sup> object of those  
 who framed Magna Charta was the preservation  
 of the feudal privileges of the barons, against  
 the kings.

Revenue of William I. about 400,000 £  
 a year - equal in weight of silver to nearly 1,200,000  
 of present money.

Saxon Population - from Domesday Book.  
 Mr Turner makes the number of persons in Domes-  
 day book 300,785, representing each so many  
 families, which, at 5 persons each, make 1 1/2 millions.  
 London, Winchester, & the counties of Cumberland,  
 Cumbria, Westmoreland & Northumberland are not  
 in Domesday; nor the monks & inferior clergy in.  
 Sir James Macintosh makes the entire number  
 of persons in the survey only 258,243.

Domesday Book enumerates 184,000 villani, bondarii,  
 " " " 26,500 servi  
 Of tenants, subtenants & socmen 26,000 2/3 freemen.  
 Of burgesses & citizens 17,000 - &c.

## p. 135. Saxon Coins.

The pound of silver, which made a pound of  
 money in Saxon times, was not a pound  
 Troy of 12 ounces, but a Cologne pound of 11 1/4  
 ounces Troy weight; or 5400 grains. This pound  
 was used in the Mint in England down to Henry III.  
 Out of 5400 grains the Saxons coined 240 silver  
 pennies of 22 1/2 grains each. (he says 22 1/2 - must be  
 mistaken.) No Saxon Shillings have been found.  
 It is supposed the Shilling was not a coin. Some  
 Shillings were 4d and some 6pence - none 12d.  
 perhaps.

Memory of account.

The pound 5400 grains is now equivalent to 2.16.3.5 strong  
 in mark (Danish money, not a coin) 2/3 of pound. 1.17.9. "  
 in mancus (prob. not a coin) 675 grains, equal to, 0.7.5. "  
 Or a equal to 4/8 1/4; Greater shilling (5) equal to 1/2. "  
 Lesser shilling equal to 11 1/4 pence now.

Saxon Coins. penny 22 1/2 grains (22 1/4?) Triens or 2/3 of a penny  
 Half penny 11 1/4 " (11 1/2?) Farthing 5 1/2 grains (not found).  
 Copper coins. Styng, equal to 2/3 of a farthing.  
 No Gold coins.



## 54 Pictorial History of England.

Saxon prices, under Ethelred, about D. 1000.

a man or slave, 1 pound.	equal to 56/3 sterling
horse — 30 shillings at 5d.	35 1/2 "
mare or colt, 20 " @ 5d	23 5/5 "
ass or mule 12 " @ 5d	14 1/1 "
Ose — 6 " @ 5d	7 1/2 "
Cow — 5 " @ 5d	3 1/6 "
Swine 1 " @ 3d; or 8p.	1 1/10 "
Sheep — 1 " @ 5d	1 1/2 "
Goat — 2 pence	5 1/2 d

a Saxon pound had as much silver as  $2\frac{4}{5}$  lb at this day  
 a Saxon penny had as much " "  $2\frac{4}{5}$  d. at a lb  
 the Shilling was commonly 5 pence. " 1/2 " " "

### p. 135. Norman Money to 1216.

No coins have been found, but the silver penny.  
 Their penny was the 12th part of a shilling, and  
 their shilling the 20th of a pound. The pound  
 was of a Saxon or German pound of silver,  
 $11\frac{1}{4}$  ounces Troy, or 5400 grains. Their pound  
 was equal to 56/3 now; their shilling to  $2\frac{4}{9}$ , and  
 their penny to  $2\frac{3}{4}$  d. and a trifle more, same as Saxon.

The pound & shilling were money of account,  
 and not coins. Half pence & farthings were  
 probably coined, but have not come down to us.

The relation between gold & silver in Saxon times  
 was 12 to 1; about 1150, 9 to 1; about 1200, 10 to 1.

### Learning 1066—1216.

The nobility had very little education. Learning  
 was mostly confined to the clergy. "The notion  
 that learning properly belonged exclusively to the  
 clergy, and that it was a possession in which  
 the laity were unworthy of participating was  
 in some degree the common belief of the age,  
 and by the learned themselves was almost uni-  
 versally held as an article of faith that admitted  
 of no dispute." Scholars of that period expressed  
 their contempt for the mass of the community  
 in the strongest terms.

Schools were multiplied in connection with  
 cathedrals & monasteries. but they all "appear to  
 have been intended exclusively for persons proposing to make  
 the church their profession." There were others in cities, that  
 seem to have been open to the community.



# Pictorial History of England

## Medicine in 12th Century.

There were schools of medicine at Salerno & Montpellier, but none in Paris till after 1200. Paris had physicians earlier. "The physicians in all the countries of Europe at this period were generally churchmen". Much of their knowledge was derived from the Arabians; some from Latin authors.

1066-1216.

Norman Architecture had circular arches, massive walls, windows small; pitch of roof moderate. The acute pitch was introduced with the pointed arch. Churches were now built in the form of a Latin cross. The internal roofs sometimes vaulted and sometimes left open to the timbers. The intersection of the cross commonly supported a tower, rather low, & decorated with arches. Within it is open to the roof & forms a lantern. The west end often has two other towers.

Small parish churches consist of a nave and chancel without side aisles or transepts, with a tower generally at west end.

The architects were the clergy, master masons and operative architects.

Norman Castles in 12th century were more fortresses, built for security. Towards 1300, they were splendid palaces as well as castles.

Domestic Buildings were in a form to resist hostile attacks. They were of timber and boards, under the Anglo Saxons & Normans, chiefly. Monasteries were of boards & timber in Saxon times.

Chimneys were known to the Normans, some were built, but in general the hearth of a hall was in the centre, and the smoke blackened the roof & escaped by an open timber.

The lancet Gothic arch took the place of the horseshoe arch the latter part of 12th & early part of 13th century.

Organs were used in churches.

The Architecture of the Normans was showy & splendid when little was done for the convenience of the great body of the people; that is ecclesiastical architecture.

The processions &c. of Henry II. were showy, but squalid. The glitter was superficial. Prostitutes & marshals of Prostitutes formed a part of the royal processions. There was grandeur & discomfort everywhere.

The Normans for a long time were not such drinkers and feasters as the Saxons, but more temperate, and more choice. Spiced food & spiced drinks were used, & delicate dishes. Yet much coarseness.

The Curfew bell was rung at sunset in summer and at about 8 or 9 o'clock in winter. It prevailed in early times in most countries of Europe & was probably in England in Saxon times. It was continued in England till after 1500. Nine o'clock was the customary hour of retiring to rest in E. in Norman times. The curfew was rung on account of fires, which were frequent. It is, to prevent fires, by covering up the fire on the hearth.



56 Pictorial History of England, 1066-1216

Coffins were not in general use until the time of Henry III. and were for some time confined to people of high rank. Kings were buried in royal robes, and church dignitaries in their canonical robes; and a suit of apparel which the deceased had been used to wear, after sufficient for a shroud, for others. The body was carried upon the shoulders of the mourners, or if the distance was considerable, upon a sledge or car.

The body of one who died under excommunication was viewed with abhorrence; it was thrown forth as a polluted thing, or hurried into some obscure spot and buried in secrecy.

Sports. The Normans were famous hunters, and prelates & clergy were as keen hunters as the laity. Females sometimes pursued this diversion. A Cuckoo was another of their amusements, that is, of King & nobles. The common people seem to have been prohibited; but by magna charta freemen might have hawks. The clergy were fond of hawking, and the monasteries kept good hawks. Women also loved hawking.

Horse racing was practiced on a small scale.

Tournaments were the chief amusement.

The Quintain was one of the amusements.

The Peasantry had archery, throwing large stones, darting spears, wrestling, running, leaping, playing with sword & buckler. In large towns, the citizens had Boar Baiting and Bull Baiting.

Cockfighting was confined to children.

Football was general, for men & children.

The juggler, the buffoon, the mime, had attractions for high and low.

Plays were exhibited, with all the grossness and licentiousness of the age. The clergy superseded them by religious dramas.

Gambling was a propensity of Saxons and Normans, & of Northmen generally of the clergy as well as others.

Chess was played.

Bands of gleemen, dancers and jugglers went about the kingdom, & performed before barons and nobles. They had women who balanced, danced and tumbled; they were of light reputation. The bands had dancing bears, & playing bears and horses and monkeys. Horses were baited by dogs. Fencing was one of their sports.

Wrestling, Bowling, Keyles, Bird shooting & catching, &c. were sports.



# Pictorial History of England.

## Normans. 1066-1216.

"A passion for show & glitter, when directed with considerable taste, may coexist with the most imperfect civilization, with general squalor and poverty," as in Eastern countries.

The Saxons in England, at the time of the Conquest, 1066, were very ignorant; the clergy had nothing like learning and the greater number could hardly read the church service. The upper classes were sunk in sloth and self-indulgence, and addicted to the coarsest vices. Many of the nobility had matrons & masses said to them in their beds. They were universally given to gluttony & drunkenness, and spent all their income at riotous feasts; and were given to other gross practices. Their dress & houses were the admiration of all ranks were mean & wretched.

The Normans, at this time, were more civilized, & more learned than the Saxons; their modes of life were more improved; instead of wasting their whole wealth in eating and drinking, they built castles, churches and monasteries. But they were conquerors, and they were hungry & rapacious, and they confiscated & plundered every thing, & divided the spoils among them. The government of William was an iron despotism.

The different ranks continued as before. The peasantry of the occupiers & cultivators of the soil were partly slaves, the property of their masters; and partly villains of several descriptions, attached to the estates of the lords, without the power of removal. — There was a considerable class of freemen or free tenants, and these had political rights, but the villains had none. The Norman yoke was heavy on the Anglo-Saxons, and the sufferings of the latter were very great.

The two races by degrees became assimilated; they intermarried, & the English were admitted to offices, and all began to be called English. The villains were, however, of unmixed Saxon blood. The national character was improved by the mixture of the nobility of the Saxons, & the more fiery Normans.

The Normans were but half Frenchmen, and the French were but half Gauls; so the admixture of Celtic blood was small. The English remain thoroughly Teutonic.

Labour of servants, amounted, as is supposed, to a pound 4 pence a year, when they found themselves, equal in quantity of silver to £11. 4. 0. of present money. Some had only £1. 4. 4. a year, and food; and some had 2 pence a day & food. Wheat may have averaged 4 shillings a quarter. In 1185, cows were rated at 1/2d. Sheep 5d, rams 8d, hogs 1/2, oxen 5, cows 4/6, breeding mares 3/

[He makes the increase of the value of money only to twice what it was — that is 4d. twice & 4/5 makes 11. 4. 0. yet the pound of silver had increased from 20 shillings to 62/ or over 3 times.







# Pictorial History of England

## English - 1216 - 1399

Plent of land, towards 1300 was about 4 pence an acre on an average, when wheat was about 4/6 per quarter; and the produce about 12 bushels per acre.

Elves were milked as well as cows; and the milk made into cheese with that of cows.

Produce of a farm in Hausted Manor in Suffolk, in 1386: - 69 quarters of wheat, 54 qrs. barley, 14 qrs peas, 29 quarters of haras (horse food) 65 quarters of oats. In 1387, 66 acres were sown to wheat, 2 bushels to the acre; 26 acres with barley, 4 bushels to the acre; 25 acres with peas; 25 acres of haras; 62 acres of oats, 2 bushels to an acre.

Live stock on the manorial farm of Hausted; 10 horses, 10 oxen, 1 bull, 20 cows, 6 heifers, 6 calves, 92 sheep, 200 2 year old sheep, 5 geese, 30 capons, 1 cock, 26 hens. The lord of the manor retained in his hands 572 acres of arable and 50 of meadow land; pasture for 24 cows, 12 horses, 12 oxen, & 40 acres woodland.

Persons employed on the manorial farm were the Steward, bailiff, head harvest man, carters, plough men, plough drivers, shepherds, swineherds, and dayes or lowest class of laborers on a farm. Women performed some light labors of the farm, & took care of young cattle, geese and poultry. Persons were hired to weed corn at 2 pence a day. Many were hired in harvest time, old & young of both sexes.

### M. 14.382. Trades of London 1376.

Grocers, masons, wynnmongers, mercers, brewers, leather dressers, drapers, fletchers, armorers, fishmongers, bakers, butchers, goldsmiths, skinner, cutlers, vintners, girdlers, spurriers, tailors, stainers, plumbers, saddlers, cloth measurers, wax-chandlers, webbers, haberdashers, barbers, tapestry-weavers, graziers, painters, leather sellers, salters, tanners, joiners, cappers, pouchmakers, pewterers, chandlers, hatters, woodmongers, fullers, smiths, pinner, curriers, horners. Many of the great companies were incorporated about this time.

Mercers dealt in toys, drugs, spices and small wares generally. "Tailors were employed in making women's garments". The milliners grew out of the haberdashers.

A large portion of the trade of England was transacted at fairs and markets.



60 Pictorial History of England. 1216-1399.

Colchester in reign of Edward III 1327-1377 contained 359 houses, some of mud & others of timber, and none having any but latticed windows; yet only about 9 towns in England exceeded it in importance. Inhabitants about 3000. There were 29 trades carried on there, viz. baker, barber, blacksmith, bowyer, brewer, butcher, carpenter, carter, cobbler, cook, dyer, fisherman, fuller, furrier, girdler, glass seller, glover, linen draper, mercer, miller, mustard & vinegar seller, old clothes seller, spice seller, tailor, tanner, tiler, weaver, woodcutter, woolcomber. The tools of a carpenter were valued at 11s; of a blacksmith, including his stock 12s. A tanner's stock in trade and household goods £9.17.10. A mercer's stock £3. and his household property at 140s. Several trades were carried on by women.

Metaphysics, and Logic, and Divinity which was little else but metaphysics and logic, were the principal studies of this period.

Medicine (see 55th page) had now been taken from the clergy in a great measure; but the art was still mostly a mixture of superstition and quackery, though the knowledge of a few remedies and a few principles had been obtained from the writings of the Arabic physicians, and from the schools of Spain & Italy. There was a distinction between the physician & apothecary and surgery began to be a separate branch.

5 sects of surgeons in 1360's, according to a French surgical writer; viz.

1. Those who apply poultices to all wounds & abscesses.
2. Those who use wine only in the same cases.
3. Those who apply ointment & soft plasters to wounds.
4. Those who attend armies, use charms, potions, oil & wool.
5. Old women & ignorant people who have recourse to the saints in all cases.

Latin continued to be the common language of the learned - of all descriptions. All statutes were in Latin down to 1275. Afterwards some Latin & more French.

French had been the language of the Court and nobility since the conquest. It was now employed in literary compositions.

Saxon continued to be spoken by the mass of the people. French words were not introduced into it, until those who had spent time in France began to speak Saxon or English.



English language as distinct from Anglo-Saxon. Previous to 1300 or 1307, nothing was written in English, except some songs & short poetical pieces (one Ballad in 1264,) and a few metrical chronicles and romances, chiefly translated from the French, one in 1280. The language in these works appears in the rudest possible state. Laurence Minot improved the language, about 1336. Wm Langland wrote "the Vision of Pierce Plowman", towards 1370 or 1375. Langman excels any who preceded him.

b. 66.

241

Geoffrey Chaucer is the true father of our English Literature. He laid the foundations of the constitution of our language; and also of our poetry. But he had no successor for 200 years. His countrymen were not able to appreciate him, much less to rival him, till a new era of civilization. John Gower was his friend, but is more moral than poetical.

p. 66.

Wickliffe's Translation of the Scriptures was made in the 14th century.

The oldest legal instrument in English is dated in 1363.

Pleadings in courts were to be in English in 1362; and English was used in Parliament in 1388.

Gothic Architecture prevailed from the 12th to the 16th century, in the greater part of Europe; but in a state of transition, often changing.

Classical Architecture is very different. The two are diametrically opposed.

The Spire was introduced into the Gothic at an early date. St Pauls had a Spire of 520 feet, added as early as 1222; it was of timber, covered with lead.

Fortresses combining the Castle & Palace began to be built after 1272. But the domestic conveniences of these buildings did not keep pace with their extent.

Embellished & moated houses began to be erected on manors about 1300, & thus many such manor houses before 1500.

Some Houses were erected without making them places of defence; consisting of plain gabled outlines.



## 62 Pictorial History of England 1216-1399.

### Sepulchral Monuments.

The flat grave stone with the inscription deeply cut & filled with metal took the place of the stone coffins with lids shaped in a ridge (en dos d'âne) in the 13th century.

The Altar tomb, a flat raised table, on which the effigy of the deceased was placed, was introduced. This form became common, even when there was no effigy. Previously the effigies were sculptured on the covering slabs of stone coffins.

112.18  
p209 Music for many ages seems to have been cultivated in England as a mere accessory to poetry, or in unison with the church service. No remains of British musical composition are to be found up to the 15th century; not so much as a simple melody.

Con. 9. 287 Dancing was prevalent, but neither the notation nor name of an English dance tune can be discovered before 1400. — Some say 1500.

### Furniture

#### Walls & Ceilings of Houses, palaces, &c.

These were painted before 1216, in some instances, but after that date painting gradually superseded the more costly hangings of needle work. The paintings were sometimes in imitation of the hangings. The subjects were from the Bible, & from lays & fables.

Musc. 2. 212  
" 8. 387, 389 Trells for tables were introduced in the 14th century. [A tripod, 3 footed or 3 legged frame to support a table] R. Dic.

Con. 9. 265 Carpets. In the Romance of "Arthur of Little Britain", written about 1320, there is mentioned a splendid bed; "and round about the bed on the floor, there lay carpets of silk, embroidered with images of gold. This is a romance & not a history; but Matthew Paris tells us that Simonius, bps. of Poitiers, in 1255, covered his floor with tapestry, & that Eleanor of Castile wife of Edward I., followed his example.



7. 280. Clocks that chimed and struck the hour are mentioned as part of the furniture of a mansion as early as 1300 - not in England perhaps. Clock signified the bell till time of Henry III. and Horloge was used for the whole machine.

Cupboard of Plate in 13th century - consisted of a golden covered cup, 6 quart pots of silver, 24 silver bowls with covers, a basin, ewer and chasoir of silver.

Wills in 1385 & 1394 notice silver and silver gilt-plate, viz. dishes, chargers, basins, ewers, saltcellars, spoons. Also silver spice plates & chanaps are mentioned; - and napkins & towels made at Paris & Dinant.

7. 285 Forks. One of crystal is mentioned in the wardrobe of Edward I - evidently an article of curiosity, & not made for use. He had 2 knives with silver sheaths; and fire dogs or andirons. Forks are said to have been used in Italy as early as 1330.

7. 286 The Nobles were most extravagant in their feasts & in other things. The kings made sumptuary laws to restrain them, but without effect.

18. 304 They had but two meals in a day, but most of the day was devoted to these; and they had intermeats between meals.

m. 12. 306 Cookery was now an artificial and complicated system. New dishes were contrived; excessively seasoned, & some gaily painted & turreted with paper. Ginger, cloves, liquorice, &c. were used in seasoning. They had jellies, tarts and rich cakes. Wine in abundance.

### Sports.

Hunting & Hawking - pursued by nobles & some commoners; also by females.

Games of the former period still in use, and some new ones, as Cross & Pile. Some played at Draughts, with a checkered board. Some at chess.

The Jester was now an appendage of the nobles and princes. His office was to divert & keep the banquet in a roar. Jugglers, tumblers, ropedancers, buffoons, minstrels, playing animals, &ummings theatrical amusements, were plenty. Dancing was common. Archery was much practised.



## Pictorial History of England.

1216-1399.

Much barbarism remained in England. Rapine and violence were very common, yet the people preferred ~~them~~ to the means enacted for their repression.

The Government and Law were not protecting powers of society; the people viewed ~~them~~ rightly as mighty engines of oppression, which they had long been. The people did not wish to arm them with any new powers. By the king & others the law was turned to purposes of tyranny and plunder.

Great men as well as others entered into confederacies & conspiracies to defraud, rob, plunder, &c. and these ruffians were often protected by some powerful baron. Some of the retainers of great lords followed highway robbery & other violent courses. "Highway robbery was from early times a sort of national crime," says Hallam. Men of violence maimed & mutilated others; obtained deeds by violence; & abused the power of the law to injure others.

"Notwithstanding the inclination to decry everything modern, I cannot but imagine that the rich abjects of England are in the eighteenth century infinitely more virtuous than they were in the 13th & that the improvements of the mind and regard for social duties have gone hand in hand with the improvements by learning & commerce." Barrington on the Statutes.

5.75 A great Social Revolution was effected in this period, by the change of the villains into freemen. This was done in various ways. [It was not all done in this period, as appears by this writer, but much of it afterwards. It was a rapidly decaying, that is, villenage was.



# Pictorial History of England.

## 1399 to 1485.

Some of the higher clergy engaged in commerce and bishops & others owned trading vessels. Like some others, they took very irregular and questionable ways to make gains.

Religious persons in England were not considered subject to the payment of customs duties, any more than of almost any other public burdens. Some took advantage of this exemption.

Coins in this period bore the old names, and had the old relative values, but the real value was very different. The Tower pound of silver, formerly coined into 240 pennies (pound of 5400 grains) was coined by Edward III into 270 pennies, or each penny had 20 grains. The 4d groats were more depreciated. Henry IV in 1412 coined the Tower pound (5400 grains) into 33 shillings or 360 pennies, reducing each penny to 15 grains. The public was robbed of the benefit of the king. He coined 1/2 pennies, pennies, & groats of silver and half, quarter & whole nobles of gold. Edward IV, in 1464 coined the tower pound of silver (5400 grains) in 37 1/2 or 450 pennies, reducing each penny to 12 grains. He reduced gold coins still more - making Angels of 80 grains. The depreciation in Scotland went on much faster.

Wheat. Average price 1425 to 1463 is supposed to be 6/8 quart. It varied from 2/ to 16/.

Rent of arable land 1420. 6 an acre; some 9d.

Produce of an acre of hay in 1359 & 1448 was worth five shillings. Had not risen in 80 years.

Rent of pasture 1491, 4 1/2 an acre.

1485  
m. 16, 115  
... 16, 360

Prices of Labor, fixed 1444. A kailiff 23 1/4 a year, and meat & drink, and 5/ for clothing. A chief hind cart or shepherd 20/ & meat & drink, and for clothing 4/ a woman servant 10/ & meat & drink & 4/ for clothing. A boy under 14 years, 6/ & 3/ for clothing. A common servant in husbandry 15/ and 3/4 for clothing. Nothing said about meat & drink. Wages higher in harvest a mower 4d a day & meat & drink; or 6 without diet a reaper or cart or 3d with & 5d without diet; a woman or other laborer 2 1/2d with & 4 1/2d without meat and drink. (Meat & drink called 2d a day.

[A penny in 1444 was about 2 pence of this day; a pound 37 1/2, as shilling 1/10 1/2.

Holy Water was an import. Prohibited 1483.

Wool continued to be the principal export.

Labor of trades 1444. Mason or carpenter 4d with diet or 5 1/2d; tiler, slater or other builder 3d with, 4 1/2d without diet. Other laborers (not agricultural) 2d with, 3 1/2d without diet. Winter wages, Michaelmas to Easter, 1d less per day - (Diet here 1 1/2d a day. This was at an agreement. m. 16, 360 - not a law. Probably right.



1399—1485.

*Spinning* is represented by a plate. Two females are spinning in a sitting posture. Neither has a wheel. The distaff staff of each is confined in a girdle about the waist, and the two hands are at liberty, to handle the thread. The distaff comes up nearly as high as the face, or quite. How the twisting is done can not appear. Both hands are on the thread, neither touches the distaff. The girls are becomingly dressed in a waistcoat or short gown, and a petticoat.

Worsted was manufactured—exported 1376.

Silk was made in London before 1455. There were silk-women and spinners, perhaps men in the business.

There were many laws regulating braesmen.

*Attorneys.* In 1455 a statute says the attorneys attending courts in the city of Norwich & County of Norfolk and Suffolk have increased from 6 or 8 to 10 times as many; that the greater part of these 80 attorneys incite the people to attempt untrue and foreign suits, for small trespasses, offences, and for small sums of debt. It was provided that there should be but 6 attorneys in Norfolk, 6 in Suffolk and two in Norwich.

*Printing.* Caxton, the first printer in England, from 1474 to 1490, printed a large number of romances, with lives of the Saints which may be called Romances; many religious books, or books with a mixture of devotion and romance. Some histories, Poetry, Translations from Latin; some relating to Morals, &c. They were adapted to all readers and not to particular classes.

One Lord, who aided Caxton, is said by Fuller to have had more learning "than all the surviving nobility."

*Astrology & Alchemy* were the great objects of pursuit. They were searching for the philosopher's stone and the elixir of life.

*Medicine* was still, to some extent, in the hands of the clergy. The Art made no progress 1399—1485. Surgery was in as rude a state as ever.

The French language was used in schools, and the nobility & gentry affected to converse in it, until after 1350.—Before 1385, schoolmasters generally used English in instructing their pupils.

*Vickliffes Translation of the Bible* was finished about 1382.

*Vision of Pierce Plowman* was written about 1362.



# Pictorial History of England.

1399-1485 Architecture, &c

Castellated Mansions, in which the form of domestic architecture blends with the tower & turret, date from 1450. In smaller houses, there was more of the domestic, and less of the castle. The transition was in progress.

The Manor House of Great Chatfield in Wiltshire, is very ornamental, & has oriel or bay windows, gable ends, &c. Nothing of the castle appears about it.

The Mansion of the noble was still filled with a crowd of dependents, and had accommodations for them. There were lodging rooms & offices in abundance, but they were scantily provided with living rooms. "Little was done for comfort or convenience". The facility of communication was totally disregarded, and the open court was the only passage from one part of the building to another.

p. 86. The Great Hall had a lower end & upper end. Opposite the gate, a passage way was cut off by a screen from the lower end of the hall and communicated with the butteries & kitchen. At the upper end was a raised place called the dais\*, on which the high table was placed, flanked by an Oriel window (sometimes one on each side) in which was placed the Cupboard, for displaying the plate. This arrangement of the Great Hall is nearly universal after 1400. Some large mansions had two courts; and the hall was between them. The principal apartments adjoined the upper end of the hall. There was usually a large one for state purposes, sometimes used as a dining room. Wood linings and plaster ceilings were not introduced in the 15th century.

The Hangings were for use as well as ornament cover the deficiencies of ill closed doors & windows.

Chimneys & chimney pieces, though in but few rooms, were quite ornamental.

[He contradicts himself about hangings, &c. as described in the period 1416-1399. P.S. Hanging the tapestry was in vogue in 15th century - called array]

Comm. 2. 341. Building with Brick was revived. Had been used by the Romans, not much since. Stone buildings very rare in London. Many had one story, stone.

Bishops, abbots & great men had goodly houses in London, where they lived sumptuously when summoned to attend councils &c. Fires were frequent in London and in other places.

The Town Houses of the nobility in London, called houses, were of great extent, in 15th century, would accommodate 400 or 600 men. Sometimes 6000 eaten at a breakfast.

Of many of these buildings, the hall & principal apartments were of stone; the larger portions of timber.

\* Dais is the upper table raised on a platform, or the elevated floor only.   
 (ind. near, Ireland. N.D.)



# 68 Pictorial History of England.

1399-1485

Chambers, &c. continued.

Dwellings of citizens & burgesses, from 13th to 17th century, had a narrow front or facade, with the gable end overhanging the street; this was the general form. The compact plan, narrow front, moderate elevation, & contracted apartment are still, in the 19th century, the characteristics of English town houses, though different from those of former centuries. All classes of commons are incomparably better lodged, in proportion to their means, than in the 15th century.

Farm Houses in the 15th century (some yet remain) had two wings joined by a central Hall, with the entrance & passage at the lower end of the Hall. This was the universal plan. Copied in part from the great houses of that age, he supposes, where the open court was the only passage. <sup>See ill. 3. 35</sup> <sup>See ill. 3. 35.</sup>

Music in England began to have a rude form of something like modern melody & harmony.

Ecclesiastical music was studied by youths at the University.

Picture of 5 Minstrels in Stollens Church, Swales (or statues of them). made about 1450.

1st is playing on a tabour pipe, & wind inst.

2d is playing on a crwth or violin, strings & bow

3d is playing on a ~~cittern~~ ~~cittern~~ or lute, base lute. (wind inst.)

4th is playing on a cittern, cittern or lute, a stringed instrument.

5th is playing on a treble flute or the English lute, wind inst.

Minstrel Profession chartered in 1467, by Edward IV.

Eight children of the Chapter. Edward IV. had, and ten children bearing the same title still belong to the royal household.

I find no allusion to female singers.

Furniture.

Carpet, took the place of painting in 15th century. much made at Arras & so called Arras.

Chairs & Stools. Tables. Buffets. Reading Desk. Chest or Coffin. Those of the 15th century are still extant in rooms. Drawings. The reader desk is in a room. They are all elaborately carved.

Bools are represented. Some feathers. Sheets, blankets, mattresses, pillows, cushions, costers, bancous, fur-panes, counterpanes, & towels, are mentioned. Tapestry was used for bed furniture - white, red, green, &c.

Clocks, with strings & weights, hung against the wall, are represented in the S. 10th period. In 1480, a lord paid a Paris clockmaker £16.0.10d for a clock which had a dial, plate & rounded the hours, was garnished with gold & radles, &c.



p. 76. Sumptuary laws as to dress were frequent.

9-307  
One of Edward IV. 1482. — None but the royal family might wear cloth of gold or silk of a purple color; None but Dukes might wear cloth of gold of tissue; lords might wear plain cloth of gold.

Velvet & Damask satin were appropriated to the gowns and doublets of knights; Damask satin doublet and camlet gown to esquires & gentlemen.

Woolen cloth made but of England, & as possible, might be worn by nobles only.

Laborers, servants, artificers might not wear cloth that cost over 2<sup>d</sup>. a yard.

Head dresses, about 1450. Women had some heart shaped some with two horns; they had short waists & long trails. Some years later they wore the steeple headdress. This was appeared and they wore cowls or cauls.

Extravagant headdresses & other extravagances were preached, written & painted against.

Chivalry & Tournaments were declining.

Gunpowder began to effect changes.

Gunpowder, muskets & cannon, had not yet superseded the battering ram, machines for throwing stones, towers moving on wheels, filled with archers, archers on foot armed with the common bow, & some with the crossbow. All these things with muskets & cannon were used in attacking towns about 1450 or later.

Weapons, mentioned 1450 to 1500, not before noticed. Lang de boeuf, a species of gaive; voulge, also a gaive; the halberd; janettain, a kind of Spanish lance; a rude engine, viz the hand gun or hand cannon. In 1471 Edward IV. had 300 Flemings armed with this firearm — The haguelbut hagbut or hagbusshe is mentioned first in reign of Richard III. 1483-1485.

The Nobility had bands of followers, & of minstrels, mimics, jugglers, tumblers, ropedancers & buffoons. And to throw the grandeur & solemnity of religion over the establishment, a chapel was erected in each castle, in which large companies of priests and choristers were maintained to perform divine service.

In the civil wars, between York & Lancaster, an indiscriminate massacre of the highborn, generally accompanied every victory.



# Pictorial History of England 1399-1485.

## Living - Meals &c

M. 18  
305

The two meals a day of the Normans in 1066, had now been generally increased to four, viz breakfast at 7; dinner at 10; supper at 4 collation taken in bed between 8 and 9 in the evening, and called liveries.

M. 18  
305

Dinner was the great meal; and the huge oak table filled the central length of the hall. At 10 AM. it groined under the mass of fresh & salted beef, fowl and fish, & curiously compounded dishes. The lord of the feast took his place on the dais or raised part of the floor at the head of the board; the friends & retainers were ranged below or above the salt according to rank; the morsels were conveyed to the mouth with the fingers. Forks being still unknown in England, while wine, beer & ale in goblets of wood, or pewter were handed round by numerous attendants. Hawks were standing above on perches, and hounds lying on the pavement below. Dinner generally lasted 3 hours; and at intervals, minstrels harped & piped, jesters joked, tumblers capered; or some a satiric lay or practical romance resounded over the mingled din. These were every day exhibitions. There was much rudeness; and a great lack of real discomfort, which they endeavored to compensate for by coarse abundance, whimsical variety & stately parade.

M. 18  
316

Cookery was coarse, complex, costly. Almonds, almond-milk sugar, honey, spices were plentifully used; and gold leaf & powder of gold and bright colors were in request to adorn dainty dishes.

The Church as well as princes & nobles, were devoted to good cheer. The monasteries were noted for excellent dinners. The secular clergy had "glutton masses," five times a year in honor of the virgin. The villagers in the morning repaired to the church laden with provisions & liquors. When mass had been hurried over, priests & laymen addressed themselves to the feast & the church was converted into a tavern, and the scene frequently ended in intemperance & riot. Village contended with village in the abundance contributed to a glutton mass, & in their capacity of eating and drinking in honor of the mother & our lord.

Great feast - when George Neville was made  
ab. York - 10 oxen 6 wild bulls, 1000 sheep, 304 calves, 304 swine  
2000 pigs, 500 stags bucks & does, 204 kids. Fowls all 22,512.  
mountains of fresh & salted fish, mustard & yellow; 300 quantities of wheat-used.  
wine, 300 barrels of ale, 1 hogshead of port, 12 hogsheads of beer.



1399-1485.

*Dicto Common people* — no improvements.  
 They still lived on joints of meat, coarse brown bread  
 and ale or beer. In the civil wars famines  
 were common, & the poorer classes used roots &  
 herbs for food & multitudes died.

Thus breakfasted at 8, dined at 12, & supped at 6.

In noble & royal feasts, servants waited on the  
 table on their knees. When grace was said they  
 went down upon their elbows.

*Grace* was said standing, according to a drawing  
 and the priest & others held up one hand.

In three representations of men standing at the  
 table before the eating began, one & only one at  
 the table has a knife in his hand, for carving  
 apparently.

*Hunts* — hunting & hawking as before, & others.

Pitching the bar & throwing stones, mentioned.

*Clumming* about & elsewhere, continued with  
 its puerile fooleries, at Christmas &c.

The Pageant-wheeled with which English kings were  
 occasionally received into London were great  
 national mummeries. More rich,  
 absurd & profane was the welcome of the boy  
 king — into London, & every th. after he had been  
 crowned at Paris. The clergy were the principal  
 contrivers.

Wretched miracles & mysteries — at the dramatic exhibit  
 secular plays were little better than the sallies of buffoons.

The Mysteries generally composed by the clergy, contain  
 some portions of the bible, but they were sometimes  
 condemned as sources of licentiousness & infidelity.  
 The effect could scarcely be otherwise. The Creator  
 was represented surrounded with angels; also saints  
 and glorified men; hell with fiends & shrieks,  
 fire & smoke, & merry devils continually issued  
 from its mouth & kept the audience in a roar of  
 laughter by their jests & buffoonery, or by the severity with  
 which they treated sinners. The Holy Spirit was  
 represented by a white pigeon. — In process of  
 time, these profanities were removed, and the more sober

Moralities were exhibited — Nobles & citizens attended  
 these mysteries & moralities; and they were exhibited in towns  
 and villages as well as in London. They were a sort of  
 annual Festival. The resurrection of Christ was repre-  
 sented in some places.

The Marvellous, Alchemy, sorcery, astrology and necro-  
 mancy were firmly believed in by high and low.



Pictorial History of England

1399-1485

Appearance of London in 15th century.  
by John Lydgate, in a ballad.

During Thieves were there.

Flourish merchants sold hats & spectacles in the street.  
Bread, ale, wine, ribs of beef cooked were on tables

Groceries in the streets of peasecocks, strawberries, Pepper,  
saffron, & spices all halloied about the streets.

Shopkeepers made their shops or booths offering  
velvets, silk, lawn, Paris thread, taking people by the hand.  
Carmen drapers were equally clamorous and urgent.

Itinerant Vendors cried hot, sweet, salt, mackerel,  
and other articles of food. — Pies, &c.

Harpers, piping, laboring & old street carols, in East Cheap

Watermen. They charged 2d. for pulling across the frames

Sports — See app. p. 286.

Card Playing was added to other Sports.

or sudden tennis recreations. It was in that Spain  
and Germany at first, but not in England until this period.

Cards were painted or illuminated by hand like missals,  
and their gay figures were delineated by the skill  
of artists; a pack must have been costly, and  
only the wealthy could buy them. They were stamped  
sometime after, became cheaper. Their figures  
were more graceful than at this day. Trumps  
and Princes (as to Whist) were favorite games.  
An impulse was given to the gambling spirit  
and estate were less more frequently than before.

Active Sports. Running, leaping, throwing weights,  
bull baiting, cock fighting, wrestling, bowling  
games at ball, were popular. Covered  
bowling alleys were frequently attached to the  
houses of the wealthy, & to places of resort.

Ball Playing. The balloon ball was ice filled with  
air or was struck with the hand, braced with bands.  
Club ball was a play like bat & ball now in use.  
The ball (perhaps filled with air) was struck with a stick or club.  
Rings ball was another kind.

Quits, Kayles, chess, half-bowl, hand air,  
hand out, and quick board were condemned as  
unlawful, under Edward IV. and the tables, dice  
cards, bowls, chokes, tennis balls & other instruments  
by which they were played were to be seized & destroyed.

This was done to encourage Archery. Old laws not regarded  
Archery. Every man was to have a bow of his own height,  
and people were to shoot at butts in every township on feast  
days. But archery continued to decline. The cross-bow  
was preferred to the long bow.



Pictorial History of England  
1399-1485.

73

Sports-continued.

Archers had various marks to shoot at. One species was called Popping. The writer says, this "was either a cock or an artificial parrot." (Did they shoot at live cocks?)

Quarter Staff was a sport "until late". The staff was heavy, 5 or 6 feet long, held in the middle by one hand. A sort of weapon. The other hand had something to do with it.

Tennis was introduced in this period. Had long been on the continent. Played in the open air at first, but the nobility built covered tennis-courts.

Skating on the Thames was a winter amusement.

Rowing & Sailing on the same, recreations of Spring & Summer.

Boating was a favorite pastime.

Christmas Sports - he mentions ~~various~~. One is the Fools Dance probably the origin of the Morris Dance.

Licensed or professional fools were important personages for ages, but unknown to the ancients. The Anglo Saxons had them; and the Norman Kings. A royal fool was an established officer of the Norman & English Kings till Charles II. His duty was to amuse by road jokes. He sometimes gave shrewd hints upon abuses.

An J Clot was sometimes kept by the nobility, who laughed at his real folly & infirmity. More often a shrewd madcap was kept, who discharged his satire under the guise of folly. He was dressed like a court fool. He was expected to coin bitter jests, to sing profligate songs & ballads; to make up mouths &c. He danced about, tripping up heels, & was like a Lord of Misrule.

Dress of the Fool - a party-colored coat, sometimes having bells at the skirts and elbows; breeches and close hose, of which the legs were sometimes of different colors. Another dress was a jerkin & petticoat motley, and fringed. A hood covered the head decorated with asses' ears, or terminating in the neck & head of a cock; and a sceptre ~~or a crosier~~ & sometimes a blown bladder was attached to it. This was a short staff, generally with the head of a zany. He took much liberty at times.

Bay's, Base or Bars, or Prisoner's Bars was a game in use. Much agility was necessary. Hoodman blind, or Hoodman's bluff it now is. Formerly women & men joined in the sport. The person was blinded by reversing his hood over his head. The others took their hoods & tramped him on every side.



# Pictorial History of England.

1399-1485.

## Sports—continued.

Battle door and Shuttlecock } This was one & the same sport. Probably confined to children.

Leaping through a hoop.

Children had Windmills, Swallow Bladders, played with Whirligigs, & Trundled Hoops.  
Children had other sports.

Profane Swearing was so common that ~~some~~ Englishman was called a "God-damme" on the continent, from his frequent use of that expression, more used by soldiers than others. It was much used in Scotland by the military, & more or less by others.

Population of England in 1066. Estimated at 2 millions  
do in 1377. — with Wales, 2½ millions

Great plague of 1349 made great ravages—perhaps destroyed 1/3 of the people. Supposed to be more people in 1348 than in 1377.

Population in 1400 may have been 2,700,000.

In 1377 (deductions from capitation tax) London had 35,000 inhabitants; York 11,000, Bristol 9,500, Plymouth 7,300; Coventry 7,300, Norwich 6,000, Lincoln 5,000, Salisbury 5,000, Lynn 4,700, Rochester 4,400, Beverley 4,000; Newcastle on Tyne 4,000, Canterbury 3,900, Bury St Edmunds 3,700, Oxford 3,600, Lancaster 3,400, Leicester 3,000, Shrewsbury 3,000, Exeter 2,800, Ely 2,500, Worcester 2,500, Cambridge 2,500, Exeter 2,300, Worcester 2,300, Northampton 2,200, Hull 2,300, Ipswich 2,300, Northampton 2,200, Nottingham 2,100, Winchester 2,100.

Not over 30 towns had over 2000 souls each.

The wars with France as well as the plague reduced the number of the people, especially the wars in the early part of the 15th century. These things reduced the number of laborers; & the legislative enactments to reduce the price of labor followed. Yet the price of labor continued to rise. Prices fixed in 1444 were considerably higher than those fixed in 1398 (see 1444 on 652 page) (Southey 1395)

Prices of Labor 1338 & 1444. Bailiff raised from 13/4 to 23/4. cart, shepherd, &c from 10/ to 20/. corn servant from 7/ to 15/.

The depreciation of the coinage accounts for this difference in 56 years.



# Pictorial History of England.

75

1399-1485.

## The Emancipated Villains. The Wars.

The civil wars between York & Lancaster brought calamities on persons of property & station; but much less on the lower order of the people. What is on the ground cannot be thrown down. The slaughter of the barons and the extirpation of noble houses operated in favor of the people. It was a war of the barons & the people had no interest in it. In victories, the communally was spared and the persons of rank slaughtered.

## Sumptuary Laws, regulating Apparel.

In 1363 a statute passed for the correction "of the outrageous and excessive apparel of divers people, against their estates & degree". [The commons, it was said, "do wear excessive and inordinate array & apparel, to the great displeasure of God, and impoverishing of this realm of England". This was said 1463.]

Grooms & Servants to have flesh or fish once a day, and their other food to be milk, butter, cheese and such other victuals.

The cloth of their whole clothing might not exceed two marks; to wear no gold, silver, jewels, or silk. Their wives & daughters not to wear veils over 1/2 each.

Handicraftsmen & Yeomen to wear cloth worth mail not over 40/- no cloth of gold or silver; no knife girdle, button, ring, garter, owche, ribbon, chain, or other ornament of gold or silver, nor embroidered apparel, nor silk. Their wives & daughters not to wear a silk veil but one of yarn; no fur, nor budge, but only lamb, cony, cat or fox.

Esquires, & others who have not lands of the yearly value of 100 £ are under similar restrictions only they may have cloth in their dress of the value of 4<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> marks, or 60/- Esquires having lands of 200 marks (133<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> £) may wear cloth of 5 marks (at 13<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> value, and cloth of silk & silver, ribbon, girdle, & garnished with silver, and their wives & daughters may wear fur of minever; not ermine or blue, nor any kind of stone.

Merchants, Citizens, Burgesses & having goods & chattels worth 500 £ may dress like those having 1000 £ may dress like those having 100 £ a year like land & proprietors of 200 £ a year.

Knights and clergymen are regulated.

Carters, Ploughmen, plough drivers, Oxherds, cowherds, shepherds, swineherds, deys, thrashers, & others attending husbandry, and all others not having goods worth 40/- to wear no cloth but blanket & russet wool of 1/2 (per yard?) - to have candles of linen - not to eat & drink excessively.

1364 [Law 1364] have taken its place in 1364.



76 Pictorial History of England.  
1399 to 1485.

Sumptuary Laws - continued.

m.16  
365 In 1463, (a century after the law on preceding page) another statute passed, to check the progress of luxury & expense in clothing. (See reasons on 75th page.)

Cloth of gold, coises wrought with gold, fur of Sables, cloth of velvet upon velvet, cloth of silk, purple, satin branched velvet, silk in imitation of satin coises wrought like velvet, fur of ermine } are interdicted to Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, & to their wives and daughters.

Mayor of London & his wife, other mayors, regulated, Men having less than 40£ a year, and wives & daughters, } fur of ~~matrons~~ (martins?) letuse, pure gray, or pure miniver, nor a girdle garnished with gold or silver, nor any foreign coise of silk, nor any Kerchief (veil?) whose price (for 1/4 yd) is over 3/4.

Those whose property does not amount to the yearly value of 40£ (even 40£?) } are not to wear any fustian bustian, nor fustian or Naples, nor any scarlet cloth in grain, nor any fur but lambs.

Yeomen & men under that degree, are to use no bottons nor stuffing of wool, cotton or caddie, nor any other stuffing, in their doublets, but only a lining.

Persons not of noble rank are not to wear garments of indecent brevity (the rule is very explicit) — ~~implying~~ that the nobility might indulge in indecent exposure.

Lords only may wear shoes or boots having pikes over 2 inches long

Servants in husbandry & common laborers } are not to wear cloth over 2 1/2 yd. a yard - not to wear hose that cost over 1/2 a pair, or girdles garnished with silver.

Wives of these not to wear Kerchiefs or head covering & that cost over 1/2 the flight (1 1/4 yard.)

These men not to wear "close hosen" (hose above over 1/2. These seem breeches & stockings united.)

p.69 Next - Sumptuary law in 1482. Does not include women, except wives of servants & laborers.

Some things confined to the royal family, & some not to. Some a duke, some not below a lord. Those below Knights not to wear velvet in doublets or gowns, or damask or satin, those below an Esquire & Gent. not to wear damask or satin doublets or camlet gowns. — Servants & laborers are restricted to 2 1/2 yd. cloth & to hose not costing over 1/6; & their wives to veils or Kerchiefs of 2/8 the flight. Garments of undue brevity again confined to the nobility.



# Pictorial History of England.

1399-1485

**Pauperism.** As long as men were villains, they could not be paupers. By the law of slavery every where, the master must support, the infirm, sick, old, &c. After the villani were emancipated, some would need help. These became thieves or mendicants. The destitute poor first appear in the statute book as thieves & mendicants; & this was in an act of 1349. Another act about them in 1376. They are described as vagabonds, sturdy rogues, robbers, &c. 1383 another law; 1388 another. In this law those who are unable to labor, or cannot get labor, are first mentioned. They are to abide in certain places, but it is not decided who shall support them, in their native or adopted towns or hundreds. The Parliament still shrank from ordering their support, or deciding who should support them. In 1391 parishes ~~one~~ parish churches were to support the "impotent poor" from the fruits & profits of the benefice". Provisions to order it. This statute confirmed 1402.

**Poverty & Crime.** Much in 15th century.

Letters of the Pastors from 1440 to 1505 - important documents

The age was in its spirit one of force & barbarism, though preeminently one of legal forms. The Law itself was turned into an engine of oppression and violence. Examples from the Paston Letters.

Contest between the Pastors & Duke of Norfolk beginning 1459. One of law, and of violence. The Duke gained, & Paston joined his side! in the contest of the roses. Shifting sides was common, and enemies to day were friends tomorrow. Human life was rated at a very low rate: its constant risks reduced its value; and it was so often lost by violence that its extinction was regarded with unconcern.

The nearest relations were little lamented & soon forgotten. Society was in an unsettled, insecure, half-disorganized state. The government was powerless for good, strong for evil. The contest of the Roses was no struggle of principles; - it was a mere personal affair.



# Pictorial History of England.

1485 to 1603.

[Cont. & illus. 1. 223.]

Queen Mary put to death by burning 288 persons, from John Rogers, Feb. 4, 1555, to 5 persons burned 7 days before her death. Several hundreds more were tortured, & ruined in their estates, and many died of hunger in prison. 5 were bishops and 21 clergymen. 55 were women. 4 children, of those burnt.

The Martyrs, with the exception of a few churchmen, were almost entirely of the middling or humble classes; the rich and great, as has been observed by several writers, showing little disposition to martyrdom. Only 8 laymen of the rank of gentlemen are named.

Elizabeth conformed; she opened a chapel & entertained mass priests; kept a crucifix in her chamber, wore garments for saints & madonnas. "She had a natural turn for simulation & dissimulation."

p. 96 Swearing. Elizabeth was almost as much addicted  
m. 2. 210 a to swearing gross oaths as her father Henry VIII.

Trickery & Treachery in state matters, Elizabeth adopted as a general rule of conduct.

The little, the mean & the base was mixed with what was great & noble & national in Elizabeth. R. Cecil says she was more than a man & sometimes less than a woman.

## Reformation

In 1547, at accession of Edward VI., the greater part of the people of England were on the side of the Catholic religion. There were many Catholics to one Protestant. The Protestants were but few, & scattered here & there in all parts of the Kingdom, except the northern counties. They were most numerous where wealth & intelligence most abounded, where civilization had made the greatest advance. The new doctrines had made more progress in the towns, than in the rural districts; in the latter was fierce hostility to the new doctrines. Among the upper classes, those who favored the reformation sincerely, were not a greater proportion than among the middle & lower classes: though many who had profited from the spoils of the church were on that side. During the reign of Edward VI. the protestantism was embraced by a majority of London & other great towns, & even in some counties not exposed to its influence. But the reign of Mary much more than that of Edward made England a protestant country. The horrors of Mary's reign spread through the land an abhorrence of popery. Elizabeth was only half a protestant, very different from Edward VI.

The beneficed clergy of England on Elizabeth's accession were 9400. All that resigned rather than conform were 14 bishops & 3 bishops elect, 6 abbots, 12 deans, 12 archdeacons, 15 heads of colleges, 50 prebendaries & 80 rectors.



## Reformation.

All passed over from popery to protestantism except 192!, viz. all of 9400 clergymen, who were papists under Henry. Almost the entire body of the parochial clergy stepped over from one creed to another as quietly as if principle and conscience had had nothing to do with the matter.

The Church of England no more adopts the principle of the private interpretation of Scripture than the Church of Rome. The Scripture is to be received as it is expounded in the articles and formularies of the Church.

The Puritans themselves at this period had not fully arrived at the great principle - the right of every man to be his own interpreter of the word of God. The Puritans & the Church both agreed in refusing toleration to those they denominated heretics, or those who differed from themselves in essential points. Both parties asserted the necessity of uniformity, & of using the sword of the magistrate. The Puritans were treated by the Church, as they would have treated others had they been uppermost.

The Church & government endeavored to put down the Puritans by fines, imprisonment and the gibbet, under Elizabeth, without success. The non-conforming clergy were about 1500, when the reign of James began.

Consolidated 1.223. Elizabeth did put some to death on account of religion only; and punishments of great severity were inflicted in countless instances for mere non-conformity or heresy.

The Monasteries, <sup>644</sup> Colleges, <sup>on Convents,</sup> <sup>90</sup> chantries & <sup>2374</sup> chapels that Henry VIII suppressed & annexed <sup>15</sup> hospitals their possessions to the crown, <sup>which</sup> paid a rent of only 130,000<sup>l</sup> a year. Burnet says their real annual value was at least 10 times as much (1,300,000<sup>l</sup>.) Besides this, there were plate, jewels & goods to a vast amount. No good use was made of this revenue & these possessions though fine things were promised. "A great part of it," (Stow says) "was the upholding of dice playing, masking and banqueting." About 8000<sup>l</sup> was bestowed on new bishoprics, viz. 8000<sup>l</sup> a year.

### Revenues.

Henry's annual revenue is estimated at 800,000 which is twice as much as Henry VII, his father, had, whose revenue is estimated at 400,000<sup>l</sup>; & Henry VIII was more wealthy than any of his predecessors.

Edward VI's revenue is estimated at 400,000<sup>l</sup>; he died owing 300,000<sup>l</sup>. Mary's revenue was 300,000<sup>l</sup>. She died deep in debt.



80 Pictorial History of England. 1485-1603

Henry VIII. was "the State" - a despot; this tyranny was sanguine & atrocious at times. There was no resistance, because the power & spirit of the high nobility was broken; and those of the gentry and middle class had not yet risen. The people did not come upon the scene until long after this date.

The parliaments were cowardly and base, while Henry was acting like a brutal & cruel savage. The lives of the people were entirely in the hands of the crown. A trial was a mockery; it only signified the will & power of the prince. The torture was applied under chancellor's lore, & others.

"Elizabeth's government was little, if at all less arbitrary than her father's". but it was much more economical, & was exerted to advance national objects. She preferred to be frugal rather than to make concessions to parliament to get money. Elizabeth had higher qualities than the Tudors, Stuart & Plantagenets.

Elizabeth's revenues during her reign were from  
Parliament 19 subsidies, estimated at 70,000 ea. £1,330,000.  
38 fifteenths " at 30,000 ea. 1,140,000  
add 30,000

Add, voted to her by the Clergy £2,500,000.  
360,000.

Her whole receipts from parliament & clergy for between 44 & 45 years, averaged only £5,000 per annum, yet

Her annual revenues the latter part of her reign were about 500,000 £. She received much from

Donatives of the crown; - duchies of Lancaster & Cornwall, old feudal prerogatives; - customs of tunnage & poundage, first fruits & 10ths of ecclesiastical benefices.

Other sources, of a more questionable kind.

Temporalities of vacant bishoprics: (sometimes kept vacant for years)  
Licenses to Catholics & Puritans, to exempt them from penalties for  
25,000 £ from this source yearly. (not attending public worship.)

New Year's Gifts, so called, but exorbitant - 15 to 20,000 £ yearly.

Embargoes on ships & merchandize.

Compulsory loans.

Monopolies - a very long list.

She paid the debts of Edward & Mary - restored the coinage to purity; bribed & subsidized foreigners; had a splendid court, lavish ship bounties - favorites.



# Pictorial History of England

1485—1603.

English Vessels. In 1572 all owned in England were 146, of these 13 belonged to the crown; the rest to individuals. All carried guns—from 6 to 100 guns each.

In 1582, the merchantmen were 185—many 1500 tons. In 1588. 40 vessels belonged to crown; 26 to merchants.

In 1603. Numbering vessels diminished. &

Whale Fishery began, 1593—near Cape Breton.

Oil alone used. No mention of whalebone.

*Biscayans were whalers earlier.*

Godfishery, &c at New Foundland. In 1577, more than 300 vessels employed from Europe—only 15 from England.

## COINS.

Shillings were first struck in 1504. They were money of account before.

Sovereigns of 20s. first coined by Henry VIII. of gold.

From 1464 to 1509, a tower pound of silver was coined into 450 pennies, making 37s. Henry VIII.

Released the coin both gold & silver, increasing the proportion of copper.

Before 1543, the minted pound of silver had 113.2 parts of silver and 18 parts of alloy.

In 1543. Henry changed to 10oz silver & 2oz alloy.

In 1545 " " to 6oz silver & 6oz alloy.

In 1546 " " to 4oz silver & 8oz alloy.

Henry coined a pound of this alloyed, mixed metal into 45s. or 540 pennies in 1527. (not much alloyed then, I and in 1543 into 48s. or 576 pennies & the same 1545, & 1546.

Henry coined Sovereigns, half-sovereigns, Angels, 2 angels, 4 angels, George Nobles, 40 penny pieces, crowns and half crowns, all of gold. crowns were 6/8. Angels were 4 6/8, now 7/6.

Under Edward VI. the debasement was still greater. In 1551, the pound of 12oz had only 3 ounces of silver & 9oz of alloy, and this was coined into 72 shillings!! 3 ounces of silver made 864 pennies! In 1552 the 12oz of metal had 11 1/2 oz of silver & 19 parts alloy, and were coined into 60 shillings. The gold coins were restored in the same proportion. Edward first coined crowns & half crowns of silver & six pennies. (His first silver coin was pound 1/2 silver & 1/2 alloy before 1551.)

Mary coined from 11oz silver & 7 alloy;—60 p in a lb.

Elizabeth restored the coinage. In 1560, she made the pound or 12oz, of 113.2 parts of silver & 8 parts of alloy, which remains to this day. She struck 60s. out of a lb. as had been done since 1552, until 1601; then 6s. from 12oz, which continued to 1816; since, she says, it has been 66s. very. She called the bare money of Henry & Edward—638. 000 lb. worth only 244.



## Coins continued.

Elizabeth coined of gold, sovereigns, 2 sovereigns, crowns, 2 crowns, angels, 1/2 angels, 1/4 angels, nobles, double nobles.

Of silver, she coined the common money; also portcullis crowns & dollars in imitation of the Spanish piece of 8, valued at 4/6, for the E. India company—now very scarce.

Copper money was not coined in England till after the time of Elizabeth.

## Agriculture &amp;c. 1485—1603.

He quotes from Harrison, (some as Halling, but?) from Fitzherbert, Latimer, &c.—what I have seen before.

The Housewife spun wool & flax & made cloth for the use of her family.

u. 11. 132

She took charge of the garden, and cultivated various herbs not now in use; were important as spices were rare & costly. She had pot-herbs, shewing herbs, and medical herbs.

About 1500, and later, the farmer consumed most of the produce which he raised, & his servants sat at his table. Luxuries were unknown. Clothing was made not bought. The farmer made & repaired many of his agricultural instruments. Such things were done in winter evenings, when no work needed to be done, Fitzherbert advised the family to go to bed to save fire & candle.

Rents. There was a great rise in time of Henry VIII.—They were nearly doubled & some more than doubled in a few years, according to Latimer.

Edward VI. speaks of the rise in wages, provisions, goods, cattle, &c. Inclosures were taking place.

## Causes of Famines.

An act of 1533, says engrossing of farms & high prices "have so discouraged the people with misery & poverty that they fall daily to theft, robbery & other inconveniences or pitifully die for hunger & cold".

u. 2. 264 Cattle. Cattle were killed in the autumn & the meat salted. There was no fattening of cattle after this, until pastures became abundant about midsummer. Veal & bacon was used in the spring, &c. before beef became fat in the pasture. Fresh was consumed near the coast, & elsewhere.

m. 6  
306m. 18  
192



# Pictorial History of England.

1485-1603.

Improvements took place, & thinking very decided, in the diet, habitations & furniture of the agricultural population, between 1500 & 1600.

Houses, formerly of timber & wattle & plaster, began to be generally built of brick or stone; the rooms were more airy & spacious, & the outbuildings farther removed.

Rotation. Two crops of grain & then a fallow.

"Clover was introduced from the Netherlands in the time of Elizabeth."

Rent of meadow land in the former & present periods, (1399 to 1603) was high beyond all proportion to arable land.

Ewes were milked. 5 Ewes were equal to a cow. A sow was equal in value to a cow. There were owing to the difficulty of getting winter food for cows.

Gardening. Hops introduced 1524; salads, cabbages, gooseberry, apricot, muskmelon, about same time. Artichoke; pippins 1535, currants 1535, cherry 1540. Plum 1570; gillyflower, carnation & rose of Provence 1567; muskrose & damask rose about that time or in this period.

Cloth making employed many - weavers, walkers, fullers, fulling-mill men, shearmen, dyers, forcers of wool, carders, wool-sorters, spinners, "spullars of yarn". The clothier was the capitalist. Machinery was discouraged. Giggmills prohibited 1551.

"Cottons" were made, but of wool - in Lancashire, &c. Worsted, Russel, Satins & fustians of Naples were made at Norwich about 1554.

White Soap - first made in London, 1524. Linens. All the finer ones were imported; the coarser ones made in families.

Silk manufactures were in London 1562. Gunpowder not made in England until Eliz. reign. Caps were almost superseded by hats of felt towards 1600. Wood was the fuel used in the smelting of iron until after 1600.

Dress of females (before pins were made) was fastened by ribbons, laces, clasps, hooks & eyes, and skewers of brass, silver or gold. The latter were pins without the head.

Pins, 1543, were to be "double headed" & the heads soldered fast to the shank of the pin. The shank well shaved, and the point well sharpened.

Leather in 1548, was to be in the tan for 9 months.

Hides were formerly kept in the tan for 12 to 15 mo.











*ms 15.249*  
*p. 44*  
*Can. 9. 269*  
*at. 11. 330* Learning. Many Colleges established.  
Grammar Schools. — first noticed in this  
period. — a great number established — many  
of these colleges & schools were established for classical  
learning, Greek, &c. Greek was first taught in  
St Paul's school in London 1512.

Greek was assailed by many of the clergy, especially  
the Greek Serapentes. Erasmus taught Greek  
at Cambridge, but a storm was raised against him  
his new testament in Greek was proscribed by  
the University, and a severe fine was denounced  
against any one who should have the book in his  
possession.

Monastic Schools existed until the monasteries  
were suppressed — about 100 in all. Their teaching  
was not very important, but was worth something.

Grammar Schools rose in many places on  
account of the destruction of the monastic schools,  
to supply the deficiency.

Old & new Schools were generally intended principally  
for the children of persons in common life. Among  
the higher classes boys & girls were educated  
at home, under private tutors.

Schools for girls. Did any such exist? He does not  
say.

Boys of rank were taught in early years, English  
French, writing, casting accounts, playing at weapons  
& pastimes of in the courts. Latin followed. Vocal  
music, was taught at the old monastic schools, on  
account of the singing in the churches. Recreations were  
hunting, ramming, & the long bow.

Learning was at a low ebb under Edward VI. & Mary.  
Students were few in number at the universities.  
Some of the most distinguished ornaments at both  
universities under Elizabeth were Puritans.

There were many learned ladies under Henry VIII. & after;  
under Elizabeth ladies studied Greek, but their  
passion for Greek soon ended, nor did it improve  
the taste. Elizabeth was a greater pedant than  
James I.

"Our common Courtiers," says Harrison, under Elizabeth.  
"are the best learned, and the worst men that any  
shall hear or read of." It appears from other writers  
that not only the men of Elizabeth's court were  
dissolute, but that "many of the females who  
formed the attendants of the virgin queen were as  
dissolute as their male associates." P. History.

Ladies had "lutes, citterns, psick-song & all kind of music."  
Many elder ladies were skillful in surgery & distillation of waters  
says Harrison. (Can. 9. 273)



English Court under Elizabeth - continued.

11.8.319

Ascham in his Schoolmaster, says the court contained fair examples for youths to follow; - yet they were "like fair marks in the field, a man's reach, too far off to shoot at well." while the generality of persons to be found there were the worst of characters. [So says the author of P.H. Some private letters of the time of Elizabeth, describe the court as a place of "little godliness & exercise of religion" and where "all enormities reigned in the higher sphere."

Learning in this age (Elizabeth) "was not generally diffused even among the higher classes, while the generality of the lower, & many of the middle classes, remained to the end of this period almost wholly uneducated and illiterate." The father of Shakespeare could not write his name. Though an Alderman. Not one in a dozen in the community could subscribe his signature. Popular education seems to have been no farther extended at the close of Elizabeth's reign than under Henry VIII or Henry VII.

Printing (1503) had probably but very little, if at all, extended the knowledge & the habit of reading among the mass of the people. The generation that welcomed the Reformation & the translation of the Bible perhaps read more than their grandfathers.

"Our bishopps of Englande upbrayded always the people with ignorance where they were the cause of it-themselves." Latimer 1549. He refers to the Catholic bishopps.

Regular Tragedy & Comedy - began about 1550.

Gothic Architecture continued pure not after 1550.

Italian Decoration was advancing to displace it.

Unmixed Gothic is extinct before 1600.

Castellated Architecture ceased before 1500. - the feudal baron became a courtier.

Palaces, not castles, arose after 1500.

Gothic Architecture never took firm root in Italy.

The pointed arch & other peculiarities of the style were adopted, 13th to 15th century, but if the details are Gothic, the position is Romanesque. Classical architecture was revived in Italy (about 1500?) and was pure, but in other countries it was mixed with Gothic.

Palaces. Henry VIII. built 10 palaces. They were Tudor Gothic with Italian decorations. The nobility followed his example.

Regular Architecture was introduced from Italy about 1544, or Italian architecture (not exactly classical soon after, if at first). & most of English architecture was mixed in the great edifices in times of Elizabeth & James I.



## Architecture - continued.

Buckhurst House, Sussex, built 1560 - The ground floor is given - arrangements had changed somewhat. The Great Hall, retaining its ancient form, became appropriated to its modern purpose of an entrance; and principal apartments were placed on the upper floor. Staircases became an important matter. There was a great Gallery on the upper floor, suited to crowded festivities and pageants which occupied "the utmost extent of the building on the upper floor" =.

Buckhurst House. Rooms &c. on lower floor.

In the front part facing north, is, beginning on N.E. corner, 1st. Chapel with two rows of seats, some more - a large room. Next west is the Hall, the length 100 feet probably, being E. & W. & looking out in front or north - a long narrow apartment at east end of it, perhaps not entirely separated from it, which seems a passage way from outside into Hall: at west end another long passageway from abroad, with two doors into Hall, & two into apartments to west of it, & passage continues south & opens into other places. West of this passage way, are the Breakfast room, Buttery, Partry, Pantries lodging, Butters lodging; and west of these 5 rooms is a third long passage way from the front to places west & south, called the Servant way. The Kitchen, a large room, is on the N.W. corner of the building, & connects with it a dry larder above & a wet larder under the dry; and farther south, a Bolting Room, and a Scullery. Pewter Room, & Breacher Room, & a court between these four, having two west & two east. The servants way opens into the Kitchen, & into other apartments. South of Bolting Room &c. is a Privy Bakehouse. South of Bakehouse is a Tennis Court running N. & S. 65 feet long & perhaps 20 feet wide; & west of this Court on the wall are Officers lodging rooms; and east of it is a passage lately, connected with the servants way & other ways, and east of the passage way a noblemans Lodgings, next to Great Court, & these Noblemans lodgings extend across the whole south side of the house except the broad entrance in the middle, into the Great court.

South of the Hall & east of the middle entrance or way is a terrace above & wine cellar underneath. South of the chapel is a passage, &c. farther south a court & waiters chamber. Still farther south a way or passage, & south of this, next to Great Court, noblemans lodgings, & east of these a pretty large court, & east of this on the wall, a Parlor with great chamber above, & south of the parlor on the wall, the Withdrawing chamber.

Some rooms on the lower floor are called chambers.



Buckhurst House - continued.

The Great Court (was it open above?) occupies about  $\frac{1}{5}$  or  $\frac{1}{6}$  of the house, on the plan. The main entrance into it is from the South side of the house. The way west of the Hall or the middle way, may perhaps lead to it, but not directly. It is much nearer the South than the North side of the building, having only sleeping rooms South of it. It is in the middle from E. to W. Has lodging rooms & ways E. & W. & a way appears on North, between it and wine cellar, breakfast room & gallery. It is square, & is divided into 4 squares with some kind of ways between & on outside.

The Gallery extends (he says) over the whole of the apartments in front, viz. Chapel, Hall, kitchen & smaller apartments and passages.

There is a garden & orchard N. of the house; a garden E. of it, Woodyard, Bakerhouse, Brewhouse, & others W. of it; and on South side a Terrace the whole length, which seems enclosed.

This is called an Elizabethan Palace. It was a vast princely mansion. Does not now exist.

MS. 11.57  
MS. 2.140. Town Houses with the upper stories projecting over the lower are given. The greatest projection is between the first and second stories. Some had three or four complete roofs of two sides extending across them, and many gable ends each side. These were Town Buildings, such as they had been for ages. The upper stories were expected to protect those which they overhung, being of perishable materials. Some had overhanging stories on sides as well as end.

Timber was the chief material of citizens houses in reign of Elizabeth, and the overhanging stories continued.

Ordinary dwellings of the commonalty in the 16th century had fixed windows (Giammus says, but air came in through the crevices in the walls. Chimneys became common.

Elizabeth had no real taste for the Arts; she encouraged them only as far as they were subservient to her vanity. None of her portraits are beautiful. They are loaded with ornaments, showing her fondness for dress, but exclude all grace. There was no room for the painter's genius. They exhibit "a pale Roman nose ahead of hair loaded with crowns, powdered with diamonds, a vast ruff, a vast fardingale & a bushel of pearls." Malpas



## Manners &amp; Customs.

## Furniture.

*Suspended Looking Glasses* were added to furniture in England, in 15th century. They had small ones, held in the hand before. The suspended ones came from France. Henry VIII. bought some in France or of a Frenchman in 1532.

*Round Tables* with pillar & clew are of this age. Some tables had folding tops.

*Buffets*, carved & plain are noticed  
*A clock* dated 1540 is in the palace of Hampton Court, and still goes. Henry VIII. gave a rich clock to Anne Boleyn. The Hampton Court clock is numbered from 1 to 12 twice for the 24 hours.

*A clock* of the time of Elizabeth is 14 inches high, (no pendulum) has 2 bells, and a double set of hours.

*Crappin Press, Firecloys, Kereclose, Fenders, & Chairs* of the time of Elizabeth are preserved.

*Cabinet, Wardrobe or Buffet*, he uses for an article.

*Chairs*, straight, highbacked, & armed, with the centre and bottoms stuffed & covered with velvet, are of the 16th century.

*Carpets*. Fosbroke says we find in 16th century carpets of English work, with arms in the centre; a square board carpet cloth for the table, with arms; a large carpet for a "coop-board"; & carpets fringed with crewell.

*Turkey Carpets* are mentioned 1534 & often in time of Elizabeth; they were more used to cover tables than floors.

*Floors* in rooms of state were generally matted, and in other apartments covered with rushes.

*A Rich Carpet or Green Cloth* was spread before the throne on which knights were dubbed, at Coronation, &c. and thence called *Carpet Knights*.

*Forks* were strangers in England.

*Knives* were first made in England in 1563. (Anderson.)

*Costume* in time of Henry VIII & Edward VI. of fullen. a Doublet with full skirts & laced sleeves; over this a cloak with armholes; the doublet (or cloak) had a broad collar of fur, velvet or satin, rolling over.

The hose were long & fitting close to the shape, like the norman chausses; or divided into two portions, called upper & nether stocks, the latter retained the name of stocking.

In France, the upper part of the hose was called *haut de chausses*; and the lower part, *bas*, (for *bas de chausses*) & *bas* now means stocking.

many persons represented show only the Doublet, long hose cap or hat & shoes. Some have a cloak over the doublet.



## Manners & Customs.

Slashing the Doublet at the elbows began in time of Edward IV. and in 16th century led to the slashing & puffing of the whole suit. Stuffing with wool, cotton or cardis wool was forbidden to all under a certain degree by a sumptuary law.

Sumptuary Law in 1533, by Henry VIII. Some things might be worn only by the Royal family; some by nobility above a viscount; some by heirs of barons & knights; some by men possessing 200 marks a year; some by men having 100 marks. — The common people & servants might not wear cloth above a certain price & lambs fur, and no ornament of gold or silver.

Female Costume in time of Henry VIII & Edward VI.

Gowns — some were open in front up to the waist, to show the kirtle or petticoat. Some had trains — some not. Sleeves of the gown were separate, & of a different material. Waistcoats were worn by some women as well as men — partly in sight — of rich material — had sleeves.

Net dresses — various — One was the "Milan bonnet," said to be that in which Jane Seymour is represented, & others in this reign. The Miniver caps were similar, being Boque and having 3 peaks 3 or 4 inches over the head.

Aprons. He says nothing of them, but females are represented with aprons in time of Edward VI. Probably worn before.

Costume of men in time of Elizabeth.

In early part — The Doublet worn, but deprived of its long skirts, & showing the Tunic Hose, breeches or Slopes. The Doublet fitted the body at first; but the waist was gradually lengthened; & ~~the~~ the Doublet was stuffed.

A Cloak over the Doublet; or a pair of Ket without sleeves.

The Ruff, steeple hat & slippers came into use.

The hose or breeches — some reached to knee; some below. Very large changed to close 1566; changed back 1698.

Female costume in time of Elizabeth.

A <sup>velvet</sup> gown with sleeves to the elbow, & under it a sort of Doublet or waistcoat like a man's; and a rich petticoat, fully displayed by the branching off of the gown, the latter being fastened across the chest, not below, & it had a high rise on the shoulder.

Ruff of lawn or cambric, first worn 1660 — a Flemish woman to starch ruffs — enormous farthingale came later. Heddies, a great variety. Perukes & false hair worn much. Elizabeth wore false red hair when 67th year. Many of Scots wore false hair. Caps hats & hoods of many sorts. Velvet hoods by artificial means. Hoods by nature & waves.



Costly - continued - under Elizabeth  
 Cottagers' daughters wore hats of taffety, or elved wool.  
 Caps of ermine were forbidden by Edward to  
 all under a gentlewoman.  
 Stockings of silk knit, twisted - made in England in E's reign.  
 Worked shoes, and slippers much ornamented of velvet, &c.  
 Looking glasses and <sup>hand of ostrich feathers</sup> were attached to the girdle.  
 Jewels were worn to excess  
 Perfumed gloves, embroidered.  
 Masks of black velvet came into fashion  
 M.C. 1. 267.

The Duell followed the combats of chivalry; and  
 Fencing Schools were to be found in all towns  
 in England, and instructors in the use of sword & buckler.  
 Dexterity in these of these arms became universal,  
 and it was a favorite sport. The rapier next  
 came, & made a revolution; a dagger in the  
 left hand for parrying, took the place of the buckler;  
 and rapier & dagger were the weapons of  
 all classes in fencing - more dangerous than  
 the sword & buckler.

Much time spent in fencing by the courtiers of Elizabeth.  
 Italian instructors in the rapier were obtained. This  
 practice was less common afterwards.

Archery. Henry 8th. His predecessors by statutes  
 enforced the practice of archery; and inflicted  
 penalties on those that used other arms, as the hand  
 gun and the cross-bow. A man who had  
 a cross-bow was fined 10<sup>s</sup> - by law. All these  
 attempts were abortive after the common use of  
 fire arms. Archers were not long continued  
 after Henry's death, or rather not many were  
 employed in war, a few years after his death.

Bows were made of yew; they were fashioned & smoothed  
 with great skill by the bowyers.

Strings were made of silk generally, twisted with  
 care & skill. This was the work of stringers. The  
 bowmen commonly had two strings to their bow. The  
 bows were carried in cases of woollen or canvas cloth  
 to prevent the effects of wet on the strings. Cross bowmen  
 of other nations used strings of gut.

Arrows had 3 parts - the shaft, feathers & head; in the Fletcher.  
 The wood was generally of ash, for war arrows.  
 The feather was that of the goose, generally; a grey one preferred.  
 The head was made of fine steel - either broad or forked.  
 The broad one had two ledges pointing back; the forked  
 one two pointing forward. The other end had a notch for the string.  
 The bowmaker, Fletcher & stringer were 3 occupations.



## Manners & Customs.

Large trains of followers were much reduced; Elizabeth would not allow a nobleman to have more than 100 followers. The Royal train, however, continued numerous. When Elizabeth moved she had an immense train of attendants - & 24,000 horses! to convey her and her baggage. When Henry VIII. & Elizabeth issued from the palace, in royal parade, all the people fell on their knees & so remained till the sovereign passed by. These two sovereigns were great lovers of pageants & processions as well as their subjects - and when they went into the country, towns expended their wealth to receive them - artificers, painters, pyrotechnicians & painters were employed to make some of giants, dragons, hobbyhorses, monsters, virtues, vices, religious personifications, the worthies, the hissing & blaring of fireworks, the pealing of bells, the thundering of ordnance, the deafening clangor of all kinds of music.

Foreigners were stunned by these sights & sounds. Gentzner, a German, visited England in 1598. He says the English are vastly fond of great noises, as the firing of cannon, beating of drums, ringing of bells.

The pageants at Kenilworth castle, 1575, exceeded more all others - lasted 19 days.

These visits were so expensive, that some nobles dreaded a visit from the queen as they did the pestilence. Much mischief was often done by her frequent journeys & she exhausted the means of some powerful nobles; & this is said to have been her object. She expected & received valuable presents when she visited any one. Her visit to Cecil used to cost from 2000 to 3000 £ each time.

**London Theaters.** At first only booths or sheds. p. 375, 376  
 After a regular theater was established, plays  
 M. 8. 324 were acted on Sundays, & some on other days.  
 The play began at one P.M. The more fashionable part of the audience sat on the stage which was strewed with straw; they paid 6d, & other paces waited behind & supplied them with pipes & tobacco. The common people were crowded into the great wooden O, the pit, where they at intervals played at cards, drank ale & smoked. There was a cresset over the stage to light it. If any scenery, it was stationary. The performers wore masks & periwigs, and boys played the parts of women.



92 Victoria History of England,  
1485-1603.

Domestic Furniture &c.  
External pomp & glitter were prized beyond  
domestic comfort in times of Henry VIII & Henry VIII. The  
latter had not costly furniture. His bedchamber  
contained nothing but two joint cupboards;  
a joint stool, two hand irons, a fire fork,  
a pair of tongs, a fire pan, and a steel mirror.  
The tables of his palaces were most of them of wainscot  
or fir, only one or two being of cypress wood.  
A good soft bed was the chief luxury of  
the English at this time;— bed of down, fine Holland  
sheets & woollen blankets— and the bed increased  
in softness, ornament & expense.

6011.9.265. Turkey Carpets came into use in time of Henry VIII.  
and before 1603, the dwellings of the wealthy abounded  
in Turkey carpets & cloths of arras and silk, and  
with rich furniture. The furniture of Henry VIII  
and Cromwell was superior to what nobles had a  
century before.

Diet.  
Feasts had become less gross & gluttonous, though  
fantastic subtilties and quaint devices of cookery  
were exhibited. There was more elegance than there  
had been.

English Eating was still gross compared  
with that of France and Italy. Foreigners were aston-  
ished at the quantity of provisions consumed by the  
English court.

m.18  
304 Meals among upper classes - Breakfast 8. Dinner  
at 12. Supper at 6. An afternoon supper in time of Henry VIII.  
These meals, except dinner, consisted of beef or mutton  
and bread, with much ale. Wine at some meals.  
Delicate ladies, citizens & squires began to delect  
the day with steaks on a roasting, & flagons of ale, down  
to 1603. The afternoon supper was less frequent under Elizabeth, &  
more light.

m.18  
h.304 Dinner was the great meal. The salted beef,  
the platters of wood, & the swarms of jesters &  
jugglers were discarded by the nobility. There  
were many dishes of various meats, fish & fowls, &  
fruits, pastries & confections followed, with wines  
& liquors. Then rosewater & perfume.  
The host was generally worn during the banquet.  
When servants, set to the queen's table, or brought  
in any thing, they all knelt every time they came  
in whether Elizabeth was in the room or not.



## Diet, &amp;c.

Can. 9  
245

cto Forks. Bread & meat were presented upon the sharp point of a knife. "The fingers of the hand made regular visits to the platter, & conveyed to the mouth what the carving of the right hand had prepared!"

Wines. 92 Kinds of wines were imported, to the amount of 30,000 Tuns annually. There were great quantities of artificial & compound wines also.

Can. 9  
261

262

Distilled liquors were made in England, the chief of which were rosa solis & aquavitalae. Aquavitalae became plentiful, in consequence of great numbers of Irish, who settled in Pembroke-shire, & distilled their national beverage, which was good & cheap, & had an extensive sale.

Excess in the use of wine & intoxicating liquors was now the common charge against the English, & the charge seems to be borne out by the quantity consumed & the multiplication of taverns before the end of Elizabeth's reign.

Ale & Beer, also, of various kinds. A chief part of vulgar debauch was called ruff caps. Other things were put in ale, sugar, spices, a toast, roasted apple, &c.

Cider, Perry, Mum, from Fruit. Some from Honey.

Old Barbarity. — Under Elizabeth & before.

Calis. 1. 32

" 8. 386. 409

Can. 9. 272

James Grey, Hist. No. 1

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

of Hist. 1. 175

"Parental authority was chiefly upheld by motives of fear; children stood or knelted in trembling silence in the presence of their fathers & mothers and might not sit without permission; and correction by blows was liberally administered without distinction of sex as long as the young people remained under the parental roof."

Education of young gentlemen about 1603.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

u. 8. 362.

"To read & write, to play upon the virginal, lute & cittern, and to read prick song at first sight."

Superstitions prevailed among all classes; ghosts and hobberfiends retained possession of castle & cottage. The most learned believed in alchemy and astrology. Indeed the learning of this period seemed to aggravate the old superstitions. Instance of bp. Jewel in a sermon before Elizabeth in regard to witches. "Within these last few years witches & sorcerers are marvelously increased within your grace's realm." &c. Requests to have the laws executed.



## Smoking—about 1600.

*Cor. 9. 277.  
ill. 11. 227* Almost every man was a smoker, and Tobacco-Ordinaries were plenty. The smoker carried a tobacco box furnished with pipes, tongs & priming iron, all of gold or silver; he filled his pipe & slowly puffed the smoke through mouth & nostrils. (He quotes Heutzner. 1598.  
"Judges smoked on the bench, and criminals on the scaffold" in that age, he says.  
"Many ladies were greatly addicted to smoking." *Stow*  
*Cor. 10. 9. 277.*

## Oach.

*ill. 2. 126* Travelling was performed on horseback. A horse litter for the sick was a kind of carriage slung between 2 horses—used by ladies. A sort sometimes used in time of illness, by ladies—large timber ark, lined within & without with red cloth—no springs.  
Queen Elizabeth often rode on a pillion behind the chancellor.  
Coach introduced 1564.

Domestic life, 1600, was a compound of refinement and rudeness.

Ladies used cosmetics—wore masks of black velvet with glasses for sight.

Teeth of ladies were usually black & rotten.

*ill. 2. 240* Foreigners attributed this to their love of sugar.

English Weddings—a joyous festival.

*ill. 4. 277* The gout began to prevail among the nobility, & next among the fast-loving merchants.

## Sports.

Cockpit, Theater, Bear garden;—

Eating houses, taverns, tennis courts, dining-houses, bowling greens & smoking Ordinaries were in every street.

The buffoon, juggler, tumbler, expected kingly from palace & castle, sought the patronage of the crowd.

The Minstrel was turned into a ale house fiddler or a street ballad singer. Minstrels were classed in statutes with rogues & vagabonds.

*ill. 3. 33* Hawking, a great amusement, seems to nearly disappear after Elizabeth.

Hunting. Game was run down by horses. The long bow & cross bow & musket were used in shooting game.

Horse racing as a regular amusement, began early in the reign of Elizabeth.

*ill. 2. 284* Dancing was a great amusement. Henry VIII. and Elizabeth were famous dancers. Court dances were cotillon-toes, gillands & trench-mores; the pavo or peacock; the lavolta.



*Dancing continued*

High leaping & stately movements were the essentials of fashionable dancing. Foreigners lauded the English as surpassing all nations in dancing.

The Commons & peasantry danced at merry makings and fairs, with noise, agility and mirth. Some dances were of questionable decorum; the cushion dance is named as one of these.

*Other Amusements.*

*Shove groat*... was a favorite; played on a table on which 9 places were numbered and a groat was shoved among the numbers.

*Shovel-board* was on a similar principle - was more fashionable than the other.

*Merelles* or *Green Morris* was also similar - the 9 compartments were marked on the ground each with a hole.

*Backgammon* was becoming a favorite.

*Cards*. These games predominated above all others. Games were constantly changing. In Elizabeth's time were prime, post, roan, lodam, noddy, leaukerout, lavalta, trumps, gleeke & new-cut.

*Bear Baiting* & *Bull Baiting* infamous for barbarity, excited the astonishment and disgust of foreigners. They were the delight of all classes in England, "and Elizabeth was an enthusiastic devotee of these sanguinary amusements." Harmless Apes were baited also.

*Bear gardens* abounded in London; and in the principal towns & villages, rings to which the bear was fastened went to be seen until the present century.

*Wastiffs*. Large packes were kept for bull baiting.

*Cock fighting*, equally barbarous, was a favorite sport. Houses were set apart for it.

Cocks were sometimes fastened & cudgels aimed at them till they were battered to death.

Sunday was the day selected for these games.

Con. q. 287  
M. 8. 355  
Con. q. 289  
Con. q. 291  
Con. q. 293



The Ferocity of English amusements was strengthened by public executions.

Common Malefactors were weekly, & almost daily exhibited on the gibbet.

Heads of traitors were over the city gates.

Bodies of Heretics were sometimes burning.

The Cleaver, Branding Iron, & scourge were all active for minor offences.

The Scaffold was a rival to the stage as to popular attraction.

Festival days were celebrated by all classes with zealous devotion -

Christmas held the chief place in England.

"where it was celebrated in a manner so different from what was customary in other countries as to excite the astonishment of foreigners?"

"England rung from one end to the other with mirth and jollity, instead of those Devotional practices by which other nations commemorated the occasion!" — Houses were dressed with

ivy & holly; churches were leafy tabernacles, and standards decked with evergreens were set up in the streets, & the young danced around them.

Masquerades & plays took possession of houses and churches; the Lord of Misrule was elected in every noble household. Great feasting.

The universities, palace & inn of Court figured the highest with banquetings, pageantrie revels.

Description by Stubbs, the Puritan

May Day was next to Christmas.

Robin Hood was a famous character on May day.

Midsummer Eve, a great festival; various others.

Tarrowing at Cocks, in a barbarous manner, took place on Shrove Tuesday.

On Maundy Thursday, Kings & Queens & nobles washed the feet of some paupers. Elizabeth repeatedly performed this duty, but her maids of honor prepared the way by washing the mendicants feet & performing the water, before she did any thing.

Valentine's Day.

Easter Ales.

Whitsun Ales.

Wakes.

Kissing.

Profane Swearing in common conversation was at its height. The courtiers swore such oaths as the sovereign & nobles.

"The clergy swore by the saints, the mysteries of religion, or the duties of their

calling." Scholars swore by classic gods; soldiers

were full of oaths; citizens & shopkeepers swore



1485-1603.

condition of the people.

This was a period of progressive meliorism. The previous wars had extirpated many of the nobility, & they were no longer formidable. The Crown was supreme; the extensive estates of many of the nobility were broken up.

A Middle class began to arise which did not exist before - as minor landholders or gentry; and inhabitants of towns, who gained property by trade & manufactures.

The Reformation did much.

The circumstances, in ~~thine~~, are favorable to prosperity.

There was a general rise in prices & wages, partly the effect of degrading the coin, and partly the effect growing trade & manufactures.

Population increased; and agricultural produce increased, notwithstanding the converting of arable into grazing farms. Corn as well as cattle became more plentiful.

In 1574 & 1575, the men fit for military service were 1.172.674; the whole population must have been about 5.000.000. In 1583 all the men capable of bearing arms were 1.172.000. In 1603, the number of communicants in the churches, when all over 16 were required to communicate, was 2.065.498; the number of recusants who refused was only 8465.

alt 0.5  
inches 1.52  
alt 15.116

attempted to regulate wages, that is, to keep them down, - endeavoring to fix them near where they were in 1444. Another attempt in 1574. Wages were rising. In 1580, a mason had 4d. a day, and 2d. for diet. In 1575 a mason, plumber, tiler, clamber, house painter had 1/2. a day; and a common laborer 8d. In 1590, the wages of a ditcher were 4d., of a thresher (without diet) 6., of a heeler 6d., of a gardener 6d. In 1601 a common laborer had 10d. and a master mason or tiler 1/2.

Wages of the Earl of Northumberland - 1511. A serving boy 13/4 a year; minstrel 4s; chaplain graduate 16/8 Chaplain not graduate 40s. principal priest of the chapel 5s. female rocker in the nursery 20s. Allredford Hodgins.

In 1544, wages of mariners in King's ships raised from 5<sup>s</sup> to 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> a month. In 1545, salary of domestic priest 94<sup>s</sup> 2<sup>d</sup>, and 555 £ 6.13.4. Wages doubled in 16th century. Also the

Price of Provisions. — Quarter Wheat in 1485,  $3\frac{1}{4}$ ; 1491,  $14\frac{1}{8}$ ; 1497, 20; 1498, 4; 1500,  $3\frac{1}{4}$ ; 1512,  $18\frac{1}{8}$ ; 1530,  $4\frac{1}{4}$ ; 1544, 54; 1586,  $53\frac{1}{2}$ ; 1587, 104; 1589, 17; 1596,  $42\frac{1}{2}$ ; 1599, 27.

In 1500, 2 rabbits 2<sup>nd</sup>; 1/2 pig 4<sup>th</sup>; 100 eggs 6<sup>th</sup> 7<sup>th</sup>, chicken 1, goose 3  
with no other shown 1/8; sweet 1/1. lamb 6<sup>th</sup>. ox 11/8. heifer 9/.

In 1541. Capons 8d to 1/10; fathen 7: 12 pigeons 10d; goose 7 or 8: 100 eggs  
in summer 1/2; in winter 1/3. better 3d. In 1540. Ox 24/4 to 48/4.  
wether shorn 1/4 to 4/4; ewe 1/8 to 4/6; cow 13/4 to 22/.

in 1589. fat cow 60. milk cow 33 1/4. fat goose 11. turkey 1 1/4. 6 pigeons 6. butter 4 c.

1547. shoe of hoof 31/16 to 42/16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100. 101. 102. 103. 104. 105. 106. 107. 108. 109. 110. 111. 112. 113. 114. 115. 116. 117. 118. 119. 120. 121. 122. 123. 124. 125. 126. 127. 128. 129. 130. 131. 132. 133. 134. 135. 136. 137. 138. 139. 140. 141. 142. 143. 144. 145. 146. 147. 148. 149. 150. 151. 152. 153. 154. 155. 156. 157. 158. 159. 160. 161. 162. 163. 164. 165. 166. 167. 168. 169. 170. 171. 172. 173. 174. 175. 176. 177. 178. 179. 180. 181. 182. 183. 184. 185. 186. 187. 188. 189. 190. 191. 192. 193. 194. 195. 196. 197. 198. 199. 200. 201. 202. 203. 204. 205. 206. 207. 208. 209. 210. 211. 212. 213. 214. 215. 216. 217. 218. 219. 220. 221. 222. 223. 224. 225. 226. 227. 228. 229. 230. 231. 232. 233. 234. 235. 236. 237. 238. 239. 240. 241. 242. 243. 244. 245. 246. 247. 248. 249. 250. 251. 252. 253. 254. 255. 256. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. 263. 264. 265. 266. 267. 268. 269. 270. 271. 272. 273. 274. 275. 276. 277. 278. 279. 280. 281. 282. 283. 284. 285. 286. 287. 288. 289. 290. 291. 292. 293. 294. 295. 296. 297. 298. 299. 300. 301. 302. 303. 304. 305. 306. 307. 308. 309. 310. 311. 312. 313. 314. 315. 316. 317. 318. 319. 320. 321. 322. 323. 324. 325. 326. 327. 328. 329. 330. 331. 332. 333. 334. 335. 336. 337. 338. 339. 340. 341. 342. 343. 344. 345. 346. 347. 348. 349. 350. 351. 352. 353. 354. 355. 356. 357. 358. 359. 360. 361. 362. 363. 364. 365. 366. 367. 368. 369. 370. 371. 372. 373. 374. 375. 376. 377. 378. 379. 380. 381. 382. 383. 384. 385. 386. 387. 388. 389. 390. 391. 392. 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398. 399. 400. 401. 402. 403. 404. 405. 406. 407. 408. 409. 410. 411. 412. 413. 414. 415. 416. 417. 418. 419. 420. 421. 422. 423. 424. 425. 426. 427. 428. 429. 430. 431. 432. 433. 434. 435. 436. 437. 438. 439. 440. 441. 442. 443. 444. 445. 446. 447. 448. 449. 450. 451. 452. 453. 454. 455. 456. 457. 458. 459. 460. 461. 462. 463. 464. 465. 466. 467. 468. 469. 470. 471. 472. 473. 474. 475. 476. 477. 478. 479. 480. 481. 482. 483. 484. 485. 486. 487. 488. 489. 490. 491. 492. 493. 494. 495. 496. 497. 498. 499. 500. 501. 502. 503. 504. 505. 506. 507. 508. 509. 510. 511. 512. 513. 514. 515. 516. 517. 518. 519. 520. 521. 522. 523. 524. 525. 526. 527. 528. 529. 530. 531. 532. 533. 534. 535. 536. 537. 538. 539. 540. 541. 542. 543. 544. 545. 546. 547. 548. 549. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847.



# 98 Pictorial History of England.

1485—1603.

[See Poor Laws, Vol. 2. Review No. 66. p. 429.]

Pauperism, & begging, he thinks, grew out of the abolition of <sup>the</sup> monasteries. The latter created more poverty than they relieved, if they fed beggars. There was much vagrant mendicancy in England before the reformation, and laws in regard to it, 1388, 1495, 1530, 1535. Students of the Universities used to go about begging. They were later authorized by the authorities of the Universities, by law of 1530, to be punished as others were.

Law of 1530. All men or women able to labor, being found vagrant, unable to tell how they get their living, were to be apprehended by the constables, tied to the end of a cart naked, and beaten with whips through the nearest market town or hamlet till their bodies be bloody. They were sent back to the place of birth, or last residence of 3 years, to be put to labor. Scholars of Oxford & Cambridge were to be whipped in this manner, unless authorized by the college authorities; also fortune tellers & the suspicious characters.

Law of 1535. The vagrant, if he had once been whipped as above, & was again found a vagrant, was to be whipped again, and have the upper part of the gristle of his right ear clean cut off, for a perpetual token, & if found wandering again, he shall be hanged as a felon. Law of 1547. 1. Edward VI. The multitude of people given to idleness & idleness was as ordinary is said in this law to have always been greater in England than in other regions, and to continue so. — Those able to labor loitering & wandering about, may be seized & set to work; & if one runs away, he shall be branded on the breast with the letter V. He is slave to his employer 2 years; and forced to labor "by beating, chaining or otherwise." If he run away, he shall be branded in the forehead or cheek with the letter S. He is adjudged a slave forever. If he run away a second time, shall be hanged as a felon. Beggars children between 5 & 14 may be bound apprentices or put to service, if they run away, they may be hanged as slaves, the males till 24, the females till 20. The law was repealed 1549.

Law of 1562. brought in the compulsory principle of supporting the poor, & restored some of the severity of the atrocious law of 1547. — a vagabond to be whipped grievously, be burned through the gristle of the ear with a hot iron, unless some one would take him as a servant for a year (without wages) if he ran away twice from such master, was to be put to death as a felon.

Rogues & vagabonds & sturdy beggars still included scholars of Oxford & Cambridge; fortune tellers, fencers, barwards, minstrels, jugglers, redmen, tinkers, &c. Another act 1601.

The middle class advanced much in this period, 1485—1603. The laboring population did no more than to maintain their position, actual, not relative, if so much.







Gunpowder Plot. 1605. All those concerned in this were of the rank of Gentlemen, except one Guy or Guido Faukes was a gentleman. He wrote a decent hand - spelled his name Guido Faukes. Several of them were tortured. They were executed as traitors, as the law prescribed - hanged, drawn, quartered.

James hunted most of the year. Lay in bed much of the day when not hunting. James courtiers, including most of his bishops, tried to make him believe that he was a second Solomon; and that at times had "divine illumination".

Visit from Christian IV. of Denmark July 1606. Banqueting, masques, dancing, hunting wild bears, &c. Every thing gross & indecorous. James & Christian both drank at a feast; James carried to bed; & Christian attempted to get into bed with the Countess of Nottingham. Gentlemen & ladies of the highest rank followed their example. "Men" says Harrington "wallowed in beastly Delight, Ladies were seen to roll about in intoxication".

The clergy flattered & praised James, as well as the courtiers. "James was all his life rather a bold liar than a good dissimulator." — "He was a most profane Swearer." His Queen was fond of dancing, masques, &c. — she was dissipated, extravagant, & had her favorites.

Bacon & Coke - Their base conduct.

James was extravagant beyond all precedent, and always in want of money. James claimed absolute power over every thing almost; and his great men sustained his prerogative. The bishops ~~always~~ were always ready to find texts of scripture to support the King's prerogative. The high church party had gone far into the divine right of kings.

Cecil, minister of James, was heartless & perfidious. He died 1612. "The scoundrels who succeeded him had all his business & villainy, with none of his genius".

An Unitarian & another heretic burnt in England 1612.

Trials were a farce, a mockery - yet Bacon, base & unscrupulous, approved the violence & illegality of James, Coke was no better.

"Certain vices, not unknown in the court of David, had become common & barefaced in that of James" - ~~included~~ the illicit amours - adultery, &c.

Coke & other judges believed in Astrology & witchcraft. Or Forman, a great conjuror, was frequently consulted by Courtiers & others and people of the best quality.

Bacon was a "miracle of genius & profligacy". He pledged himself to do the royal will for all things. ~~He was~~ <sup>He was</sup> a fop. "The greatest wit, scholar & scoundrel of his age", & one of the law.



Pictorial History of England. 1603-1660.

101

James I. 1618. Fe

"All titles & that date borne by [the names means] noble families were purchased by gold, except those granted to the vilest favorites." This practice continued through the reign of Charles I. Bishoprics & other church preferments were bought & sold under James. Bp of Salisbury paid £3,500. Some who had not ready money, paid by instalments out of the revenues of the church.

All was venal & corrupt - about the court - about the nobility - about the dignitaries of the church & of the law.

"Whipping at the cart's tail" was not uncommon <sup>applied to gentlemen as well as others.</sup>

"The Court was a sink of dishonor & immorality."

Executions - referring to that of Raleigh: - "It was common for high born ladies to attend these scenes of blood"

Raleigh's moral character will not bear examination.

Bacon, the corrupt Baron, acknowledged that all the charges against him were true - 22 in number. He said "bribery & corruption are the vices of the time." He praised the foolish James. He was fined 40,000£ - to be imprisoned, &c. These were remitted. His baseness & flattery were conspicuous after this, as long as he lived.

Charles I was brought up in an atmosphere of insincerity & dissimulation, and was insincere in his professions. His court was more decorous than his father's, if not more moral. He quarrelled with his wife - Buckingham governed him.

Henrietta Maria, his wife, was self-willed, obstinate, haughty & overbearing.

Calvinism 1625. "A large portion of the clergy were strongly Calvinistic and the great majority of the laity who cared anything about religion were passionate Calvinists."

Bishops, Court Divines & leaders of the community were preeminent in the arts of flattery, subserviency and baseness. They were worse than the lawyers & judges, respecting Charles' illegal and tyrannical proceedings. They maintained that the King might do as he pleased; at least bishops & high church party.

Puritans were joined by many men, who cared little about their religious notions, but disliked the tyranny of the King & hierarchy. Friends of liberty could do no where else.

Charles' court, though decent compared with that of James, was far from being so pure & exemplary as it has been described by some writers. Indecency of language at least was very frequent.



"The Judges, the interpreters of the Law, had been bred in an infamous school, & were now [1641] as base under the power of parliament, and as they had been under the absolutism of the King."

"The spirit of mildness & mercy, the distaste of blood and all capital punishment, which is now entertained by enlightened & thinking persons, our fathers were strangers to; the feeling was hardly known even among the best and wisest two centuries ago!" (inference to Strafford's execution.)

The treason processes of all the sovereigns from Henry VIII. to James I. inclusive, were all arbitrary. Charles exhibited infinite baseness in getting up Strafford, who had only obeyed his will.

Charles' confirmed character & habits were such that nobody, or very few, had any confidence in his word.

Charles' Party - The Church, universities, majority of nobles, & many country gentlemen. The gay & dissolute were of his party, and some virtuous, moderate men.

"Generally, the more commercial, more civilized and thriving districts were for the parliament; the more distant & less prosperous for the king."

Charles' letters (taken at Naseby) "proved his sustained insincerity, true serving, double dealing, arrogance & thirst for revenge."

Charles made promises with a mental reservation to break them.

His queen had a child in France by Jeremy, before her husband's death.

James

Chap. 3. 203

"Nearly all the ridiculous names given to the incidents at this time, as Redeemed Combats, Fight-the-good-fight-of-faith White, If-Christ-had-not-died-thou-hadst-been-damned Barebone, are mere invocations made fifty years after by a clergyman of the established Church." Note to Pictorial History.

Cromwell's Residence exhibited sobriety & decency. no riot, no debauchery. He was a great lover of music, - was joyous & pleasant; the masses minded the age he delighted to hear about him. His government was just. The lives & men were outwardly reformed. Justice & equity in courts.



p. 366. Puritans, in England, 1603, had not become Presbyterians, as to rites & ceremonies & church government. They were a small minority of the population; nearly all outwardly members of the established church, no sectarian being tolerated. Their petition to James April 1603 was signed by 800 ministers - not 1/10th of the whole, & these confined to 25 counties. There were not many in the other counties. They did ask for Presbyterianism; ~~not~~ for the abolition of Episcopacy. - James always professed to be Calvinistic as to doctrines.

p. 306 "Women are loth enough of themselves to come to church since James, & so he went for churching of women. [What does his remark mean? as to women's indisposition to attend church.

Independence advocated in a book, 1607. This book did not go for toleration; nor, for the power of the civil magis here in religion.

Arminianism under James I. & Charles I. implied inclination both towards popery in the church & absolute government in the state; though such tendencies have naturally no more connection with Arminian than with Calvinistic Doctrines.

Presbyterianism was intolerant - and held that ministers should govern the church & other ecclesiastical functionaries, and gave little or nothing for the people to do, but to obey. It maintained that all education should be in the hands of the clergy. It hated the Independents, or their system of church government.

"Enormous and Corruptions in the Ministry" of the Kirk, as put forth by the Assembly 1646.

1. Much fruitless conversation.
2. Great worldliness.
3. Slighting worship in their families.
4. Want of gravity in carriage & apparel, dissoluteness in hair, shaking about the knees, lightness in apparel of wives and children.
5. Drunkenness, drinking in taverns & alehouses.
6. Discountenance of the godly.
7. Sabbath not sanctified after sermons.
8. Some use small trineed o. th.
9. Some little conversant with Scripture.

"The Charge & office of interpreting scripture is a part of the ministerial calling"; they say, 1647 - no others to take this upon them, however otherwise qualified. They did not approve of conference or social religious meetings of several families. Went against all evasions of the pamphlets - the books of the English Independents as well as others. "Promiscuous dancing" was condemned. Witches were executed.



# Pictorial History of England. 1603-1660.

## Church

1641-43 - About two years, there was no established form of worship. The clergy took their own way, as to habits and forms. Assembly of Divines formed a new polity. July 1. 1643. Most of them were attached to Presbyterianism. Some episcopalians refused, but they retired. Independents & Erastians opposed vigour to the Presbyterians on some points. Both went for toleration, viz. Incl. & Excl. which the Presbyterians abhorred. The Independents generally held this great principle, though inclined to exclude papists. Erastians were still more tolerant. Cromwell & his war for liberty, it was said.

Directors of public worship - established Jan. 3. 1645. The Presbyterian form of church government was never fully introduced into England until 1649. & then its establishment was limited or imperfect.

In the time of the Commonwealth, the clergy and of the people of the towns, were generally Presbyterians but not exclusively so. Some Episcopals held benefices, a number of Independents were preachers and some of the minor sects. Cromwell protected & tolerated almost all.

Officers appointed by Cromwell. 1653. Presbyterians, Independents, Baptists. Cromwell enforced toleration in Scotland, in spite of the clergy.

## Civil Matters.

The mass of the people is hardly to be taken into the account, previous to the Reformation. The people were nothing under Henry VIII. The gentry, a class between the higher nobility & the citizens or burgesses, arose under Henry VIII & Henry VIII & later sovereigns; by the subdivision & sale of estates & the division of the church property, they were formed or greatly increased. This class possessed the broad spirit of the Normans; to this class belonged most of the Parliamentary leaders - cool, sagacious, brave, high spirits, enthusiastic, secret. They communicated their spirit to the citizens & burgesses, before humble stumie.

The Reformation was an insurrection against spiritual domination, leaving at first temporal domination as it was. But men freed in part from spiritual thralldom, began to question other things besides religion.

The Reformation in England was brought about by kings and nobles; it was a moral, ethical & aristocratical revolution. Royalty, episcopacy and nobility divided among the spirit of the old church, left most of the popular wants unsatisfied - Thence arose Dissenters.



p. 103. 366. Puritan Dissenters - were "calm, austere, laboring, temperate, hoping all things, enduring all things; in time they learned to dare all things." "English Puritans were destined to be the main instruments in bringing about perhaps the most important revolution recorded in the annals of human kind."

Elizabeth kept under but could not extinguish the fire of puritanism.

James I. His good sense seems a babble of half-drunk doctards. James is an object of aversion or contempt in every relation in which he is viewed - his privellie absurdities; his blustering about courage and power, when exhibiting the last degree of cowardice and weakness; his amusement of court fools; the effusions of his obscene, grovelling nature poured out to Buckingham - these were prominent, yet Laud says "he breathed forth his blessed soul most religiously." His persecutions converted the Puritans into reformers in state as well as church.

Charles I. "James he tastes & habits of a gentleman compared with his father; though wanting also other in the higher characteristics of an English gentleman - a firm observance of his word, a fidelity to duty and truth; and viewed as the ruler of a great nation, absolutely incapable, from ignorance and narrowness of understanding, from weakness both intellectual & moral."

The King, nobility (high) and high clergy being the principal gainer by the Reformation, were satisfied with it as it was; they were convinced that every thing was about as it should be. - The gentry, burgesses and people saw many things yet to desire.

Fervid & vehement language, in writing & speaking and especially in preaching, sprang up about the time of Luther, & was employed to excite the passions of the people. It was the first symptom in modern times that the mass of the people were to be appealed to.

Insincerity, the characteristic of barbarous & semi-barbarous courts & nations was in the court of Elizabeth; more in that of James, a vicious & effeminate prince - all from the King & his jester discarded truth & sincerity as qualities they did not regard. He who could not hold his lie could not live there. In this atmosphere Charles passed his youth & attained to manhood.







li 106  
MS. B. 4.18

**Torture** continued. David Jardine Esq. of the Middle Temple, Barrister at Law, published "A Reading on the Uses of Torture", 8vo. London 1837. He finds a series of royal warrants for the application of torture in the Council books, from 1547 (Edward V) to 1640, at the commencement of the civil war. They were issued under Edward VI, Mary, Elizabeth I, James VI & I, & Charles I. He publishes 55 of these warrants. Some were executed by lawyers who say the practice was against law; as Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Edward Coke, Chancellor Bacon or under their superintendence. In reign of Elizabeth torture was applied to the investigation of all kinds of offences, as murder, embezzlement, horse stealing &c. after Elizabeth was confined to state offences. The last instance recorded was in May 1640, when John Arden was ordered by the King to be "racked". There is no recorded instance of it after 1640.

Torture was not according to Common Law, but it was according to royal prerogative. There was a distinction ~~formerly~~ between Prerogative and Law, two centuries ago. Elizabeth, James I and Charles I all seem to have believed that the prerogative was above the law, universally.

The proceedings of Courts were disfigured in various ways, in criminal justice, until the Commonwealth.

The Rack or Breach, an instrument of torture was introduced in time Henry II, it is said. It stretched out the body, & sometimes lacerated the entrails. Another instrument tortured by compression, & was milder. Another torture, which became common at the tower, is called Manacles. There were other barbarities.

The victory of the parliament over the King, if it had done nothing but banish the rack, givies and manacles, would have repaid all the blood and confusion it cost. Torture ceased in England 1641, in Scotland 1708, in France 1789, in Russia 1801, in Hannover 1822, in Baden 1831.

MS. B. 4.18. [Torture was used by order of James II. See Macaulay's History of England, vol. II. 339. Straphan's History of England, vol. II. 339. Straphan's History of England, vol. II. 339.]

## Religion

The Long Parliament, which sat first Nov. 1640 was almost entirely Episcopical. Presbyterianism was confined to Scotland & Puritanism in England, and not become anti-episcopal, at least not openly. The visit of the Scotch commissioners to London 1640, planted Presbyterianism in England, & it grew very rapidly. It had been introduced before 1643. & 1646. No kind of Sectarian are enumerated, and they became the ruling power in 1649, and almost universal toleration subsisted from 1649 to 1660.



## Revenue of James.

Landed estates yielded at first 32,000 £ a year, which rose to 80,000 £ in James reign; & land was sold to a mount of £ 775,000. Purveyance, Wardship, &c. yielded about 200,000 £ a year. In 1609 James raised £ 21,800. by a tax of 20% on knights fees, &c. In 1612, he obtained £ 20,500. in the same way of his daughter, from Knights, &c. The Customs of Tunnage & Poundage which James increased by his own authority, yielded £ 127,000 in 1603 or 4; 148,500, in 1613; 140,000 in 1624 or 5.

Parliament & grants of subsidies at about 70,000. £ 50,000  
 " " 10 fifteenths at " 36,500. £ 65,000

Clergy granted 11 subsidies at 4, out some £ 61. — £ 80,000

Titles & nobility were sold - baron, for 10,000, viscount £ 20,000 and an earl 30,000. Patent of Canons instituted in 1611, yielded about £ 225,000 in all.

Monopolies produced considerable.

Compulsory loans & benevolences, considerable.

Fines in Star Chamber & other courts do.  
 James received from France 60,000 £, when Anne, Dowager Elvi,  
 " " from the Dutch 200,000 £, for old debt.

James in first 14 years, received about 600,000 £ a year in all.  
 His expenditures was more, & he was in debt.

## Revenue of Charles I.

Parliamentary grants, before 1640 — all 372,000. £  
 " " " " " 160,000.

Clergy — 100 — " " " 160,000.

Crown lands yielded more than under James

Tunnage & Poundage (not granted by parliament) were exacted, and  
 commerce increased; amounted to 500,000 £ a year before 1640

Ship money tax, 14 years, produced about 200,000 £ a year

Dutch paid 30,000 £.

Dispensing with penal laws against popery, considerable.

Monopolies considerable.

Forced loans, 200,000 £ in 1626

4 subsidies & 3 fifteenths were extorted from the country.

Compulsory knighthood, yielded 100,000 £

Large fees for new invented offices.

Arbitrary tax on victuallers. Duty for coat & conduct money.

Fines in Star Chamber & High Commission Court, produced  
 much. Fines were many & heavy - some 30,000 £.

Whole revenue averaged 845,000 £ a year, of which 210,000  
 a year at least was illegally exacted.

More tyrannical steps to obtain money could hardly be taken  
 by the greatest despot on earth. Sinclair.



Revenue of the Parliament &c

First, Subsidies & a poll tax, equal to £600,000 or equal in all to 12 subsidies.

Voluntary contributions, much. 480,000

Regular Taxation began, from 35,000 to 170,000 per week in first year of war. (continued under named land tax from Nov 1640 to Nov 1649 or 19 years, is estimated at £32,172,321.

Excise began 1643 - a duty on beer, ale, wine, tobacco, sugar, &c, & afterwards bread, meat, salt, calculated at 500,000 £ a year.

Currency & coinage yielded about as much.

Goals from Newcastle & a chaldron. about 50,000 a year.

Post Office, established 1635, 10,000 £ a year.

Price of a meal a week, levied on all persons, for 6 years, yielded 608,000 £.

Profits of lordships & other feudal prerogatives, except purveyance, were exacted until 1656.

Sale of Crown lands, houses & forests, £1,850,000.

Sequestration for 4 years of revenues of bishops, deans & inferior clergy £3,500,000.

Sale of Crown lands, some say 10,000,000. mostly expropriated.

Incomes of Officers 850,000 £ Sequestered for public use.

Sequestration of or Compulsions of private estates, 4,500,000

From Delinquents in Ireland 1,000,000

Sale of Hospital Estates Eng. & Ireland, 3,500,000.

Various other sums.

The other party pretended that in 19 years, 83,000,000 were drawn from the people - a great exaggeration. Several of the money is said to have been swallowed up in some way by Parliament. They sold themselves 4 £ a week each - afterwards they received about 300,000 £ a year. Officers & Estates were bestowed on some of the members. "Free gifts to the Seigniors" mentioned.

Commerce about 1603, or later.

That of the Dutch far exceeded that of England, apparently 10 times as much.

Eng. Ships with pepper, clove, cinnamon, &c. arrived in 1603.

China Ware brought to England about 1609.

Exports 1613 £2,090,640. Imports, £2,141,283.

Exports 1622. 2,320,436. Imports 2,617,315

Wool & Woollen Cloth were principal exports.

Tobacco. James "Countablest to Tobacco" was followed

in 1604 by his raising the duty from two pence to 6/10 lb. Tobacco then came from Spanish West Indies. He says tobacco had been used by the Indians as physic to preserve health; now it is taken by dissolute persons of mean condition, who spend most of their time in that idle vanity, & impair their health. 6/10 lb. He orders Virginians not to raise over 100 lb. for each planter - & he monopolized the sale of it.



160 Victorial History of England 1603-1660

Trade of England 1638, by Lewis Roberts, under  
the title of "The Merchant's Map of Commerce."

on 9.20 Imports - from the East.

Pepper, cloves, mace, calicoes, <sup>the Indian sort,</sup> aloes  
nutmegs, cottons, rice, benjamins, borax  
calamus, cassia, myrrh, opium, mirabolans  
rhubarb, sanders, musk, civet, cinnamon  
spikenard, tamarinds, diamonds, pearls, caruncles  
emeralds, jacinths, sapphires, spinels, turques  
topazes, indigo, silks both raw & manufactured.  
benjamin, camphire, sandalwood, ~~salt~~, many re-exported.

From elsewhere

Charilets, programmes, smachais - came from Angora.

Cottons & cotton yarns - from Cyprus & Smyrna

Causes of Egypt & Arabia, galls from Turkey

Ceramics from Sicily

From France, Italy, Holland, Westland, &c

Tapestries, cliafer, cambrics, Holland, laines, hops,  
madder, steel, wine, blades, stuffs, soap  
cattens, wire, plates,

From Russia & Baltic

Ashes, clapboard, copper, deals, firs, furs, mats  
rye, pikestaves, timber, wainscot, wheat, fustians  
iron, cotton, linen, madder, quacksilver, flax  
hemp, steel, caviare, cordage, hides, honey  
tar, ropes, tallow, pitch, wax, rosin

From Provence &c

buckrams, comwars, cards, glass, grain, tinens  
salt, claret & white wines, wood, oils, rimons,  
silk stuffs,

From Spain

Wines, olives, oils, sugars, soaps, aniseed, licorice  
soda, vanilla,

From Italy

cloths, gold & silver, satins, velvets, taffetas, plushes  
tabins, damasks, alum, oils, glass, aniseed, rice  
new silks,

Exports.

Wool, woven cloths, pewter, lead, kensers, tin  
cavies, perpetuans, stockings, says, serge &  
herring, pickards, salmon, Newfoundland fish,  
calfskins,

Underdoes exports - cotton, ginger, & after 1641. Sugar.  
Sugar increased, & loaded many ships.



# Pictorial History of England, 1603-1666.

111

u. 2. 276 Hackney Coaches - 20 in London in 1625. An insolent  
edict against them 1635. Licensed 1647.

Com. p. 339 Seelen Chairs, carried by men 1634. <sup>2<sup>nd</sup> licensed 1652</sup>  
<sub>300 .. 1654</sub>

Lottery - one in 1569. - 20,000 £ raised to repair harbours.  
one under James I.

Interest. 10 percent 1571. - 8 percent 1624. 6 percent 1657.

## Coins

James I. coined Angels, 10s.  $\frac{1}{2}$  do 5s.  $\frac{1}{4}$  do 2/6. gold.  
... Sovereigns 20s.  $\frac{1}{2}$  sov. 10s. crowns 5s.  $\frac{1}{2}$  do 2/6.

These coins in standard of fineness - not alike.

He coined Silver Crowns,  $\frac{1}{2}$  crown, shillings. 6d. 2d. 1d.  $\frac{1}{2}$  d.

The pound of Gold was in a few years from  $\text{£} 33. 10. 3$   
to  $\text{£} 44. 0$ . Many more gold coins.

Copper coins first appeared 1613, viz farthings; and  
brass & lead tokens forbid them.

Charles I. 1626. Pound of Gold 23 carats  $3\frac{1}{2}$  grains fine  
accounted  $\text{£} 44. 10. 5$ ; of 22 carats fine 41  $\text{£}$

10 millions of Sterling Silver coined, 1636 to 1643.

His coins like his father's - some not hammered, but milled.

Parliament coined money - same denomination -

Com. p. 300. 20s. 10s. + 5s. gold; crown, shilling, 6d, 2d. 1d.  $\frac{1}{2}$  d. silver  
Farthing of copper & 1/2 of pewter.

Cromwell coined 50s. + 20s. gold; crowns  $\frac{1}{2}$  crown, shilling, 6d  
better done than any since Romans. <sup>9 silver</sup>

He coined copper farthings.

Arts & like were but little improved 1603 to 1660  
in England. English were not so skillful & ingenious  
as some other people. Writers complain that the  
English were idle, stubborn, surly.

Agriculture was behind that of Dutch & Flemings. Most  
did as their fathers did. Implements & usages  
varied in every county, & almost every parish.

Gardening, ornamental, made great progress.  
Vegetables for the table were scarce even in 1660.

By 1650, liquorice, saffron, cherries, apples, pears  
hops & cabbages were plenty. Onions deficient.

Linens still imported except the coarser ones.



## 112 Pictorial History of England—1603–1660

**Music.** Edward VI. musical establishment consisted of 114 persons besides boy-choristes. Henry VIII was a composer of music. Edward VI. expended for music yearly 2200*l*. "Gentlemen of the chapel" were musicians under Elizabeth & her predecessors.

Composers of Madrigals lived in time of Elizabeth. Madrigals, and ~~and the~~ four part songs, & chorizonts are mentioned. This age was more famed for madrigals than for any other kind of music. A book of madrigals "apt for viols & voices" was published 1609. John Milton, father of the poet, composed "Songs for 5 voices," and good Psalm tunes. The Music of the common people in 16th century, is little known.

Queen Elizabeth had a Virginal book, that is tunes for the Virginals. There is a collection of 29 madrigals all in praise of Elizabeth, who is extolled for her beauty; the poetry is nauseous personal flattery. Elizabeth was parsimonious towards her musicians; James was more liberal.

The puritans did not reduce music to Psalm tunes entirely. Cromwell was a lover of music & had a great organ at his residence at Hampton Court. He gave his organist 100*l* a year. But this was an exception to the general rule.

Charles I. encouraged the fine arts. & had the famous Duke of Buckingham.

Classical Architecture was revived under James I. — much of it corrupted.

London Buildings were chiefly timber in time of Elizabeth & James. They began to use brick in time of James.

Engraving is as old as Printing in England, but Copper plates were not used until 1543.

**Shakspeare.** Milton has spoken of his "wood notes wild," & Thomson calls him "wild Shakspeare," as if he was a half-insane, irregular genius. He is more regular & collaborate than Dramatists of his own time. "Wild & wayward" he thinks should not be applied to Shakspeare.

Theatres were put down by Long Parliament, but some plays were acted before 1660 — not many.

King James had no depth of learning or judgment. Though of some reading in Theology, & with a great floridness.

Robert Burton, author of "Anatomy of Melancholy," died in 1630. His book was first published in 1621.

Pamphlets, political & religious, published 1640 to 1660 are said to have been 30,000, different ones.

Many newspapers, in this period, more than 100 some say. Published occasionally — some weekly, some quarterly.



Furniture in this century in palaces & mansions acquired splendor & comfort.

Con. C. 226. Article ordered by James I on the marriage of his daughter in 1613 - materials.

Embroidering a suit of hangings up in crimson velvet.

Sparver bed of crimson velvet - over head part, ceeler, double valance, curtains of velvet or satin.

Cupboard cloth of crimson velvet, carpet of screen cloth, chair, stools, cushions.

All the preceding were garnished with cloth of gold, cloth of silver, &c. The embroiderer had prepared them.

The Upholsterer made the hangings of crimson velvet; the cupboard cloth, carpet, screen cloth, of crimson velvet; window curtains of crimson damask, & all these were lined. - Also furnished one bed,

one bolster, 2 pillows of Milan fashion filled with wool & sewed with silk; 2 pairs blankets of Milan fashion of 5 breadth & 5 yards long; 2 hair, 2 pairs blankets; 2 counter points of plush.

The Joiner made a frame for a canopy for a cushion cloth, with iron work to it, the timber work of a chair, 2 low stools, 2 little tables, one folding table of Walnut tree, &c, &c.

Anne, Queen of James, had a Walnut chest of drawers.

Con. J. 284. Paper & Leather Hangings were invented, & walls were adorned with rich paintings from Italy, &c.

Con. J. 265. Other ornaments of China Ware were brought from Italy in time of Elizabeth; In 1631, they were regularly imported from the East by E. I. Company.

Con. J. 265. Turkey & Persian Carpets are seen in paintings of this period, covering the Tables of even the middling class, FLOORS being still matted or covered with rushes, even in palaces "excepting those of throne or bedrooms, where carpets were laid down before the throne, or by the side of the bed."

Chairs, in his pictures, are generally high, straight-backed, but some slope a little - are much ornamented. Some have a thick cushion on the bottom, moveable apparently; others have a thick bottom, but all of a thickness, & not moveable apparently - level on the top. Some are curiously carved. Generally armed - some.

The stools seem foot stools in part, & seats in part. Some swelled on the top & some level.

Tables are square or oblong, stand on four legs generally, curiously carved, at the four corners. Generally have an immovable top, but some have two leaves or folds, that rest on the top, when not in use - do not hang down the sides. How supported when horizontal does not appear. Making glass oval.



Furniture continued as pictured.

A Couch appears or something similar, with stuffed back, sides & seat. A fine cradle - some like modern.

A Cupboard appears - high & ornamented, and carved. Shelves one above another are in sight. The carved work is on sides & top. Some other big articles may be cupboards - probably not. Are square at top, large & ornamented, have open places arched, or square at top - molding & ornamental work all around the top of considerable thickness. What are these large square or oblong pieces of furniture, much higher than a chair, and richly ornamented? seem 4, 5 or 6 feet on a side to appearance.

Costume under James I

Hats, 1603, &c. high crowned - a broad band, and some with feathers. Calva beaver.

Short doublet. Tunk hose or other kind. Stockings. Cloak, Rich shoe strings & garters. Cuffs.

In James's reign, the doublets or short jackets had hanging or false sleeves, latter part of reign; and the cuff gave way to the band, & peccadillo or picadilly. The latter was the edge or hem of a garment, and to the collar, or the word was so applied.

Bands & cuffs were stiffened with yellow starch.

"Strange peccadillos, vast bands, huge cuffs, shoe roses, tufts," &c. were complained of 1615.

Brocaded silks, velvets, satins, &c. were materials

"Sugarloaf buttons" were used. Pumps with roses.

Silk & worsted stockings.

18 yds blk Velvet for a physician's gown.

Suits for pages - consisted of doublet, hose, and cloaks, richly ornamented.

Peppercles were enormous fardingales, higher class, Wives & Daughters of citizens wore grogram gowns lined with velvet, durandee petticoats, French hoods, wide edged gowns also, and they carried silver bodkins.

Costume under Charles I by Vandyke

Short doublet of silk or satin, with slashed sleeves.

Fulling collar of gold point lace; short cloak on one shoulder.

Broad brimmed Flemish beaver hat with one or more feathers.

Swadd belt & rapier - sometimes buff coat instead of doublet.

Crown with little or no velvet, silks & satins, some other colors, and the old high crowned black hat, instead of low crowned Flemish beaver.



Costume continued under Charles I.

Royalist females wore ringlets & feathering.  
Puritan females wore hoods, caps, coifs, closely, & high crowned hats.

Masks worn by females of higher classes.

Mufflers esp. by elderly females of humbler class.

Muffs of fur

Fans of ostrich feathers } carried by women of fashion.

Armor was gradually abandoned. Nothing remained under Charles but back & breast plates, open steel headpiece, buff coats, buff gloves, high boots. Chivalry had gone out of fashion.

Cavalry 1632. 4 classes.

1st class. Lanciers - wore headpiece, gorget, breast-  
and back plates, pauldrons, vambraces, gauntlets,  
tassets, cuilets, aulets or gards de reins, a buff  
coat with long skirts, between clothes & armor. Their  
Weapons, a sword, lance 18 feet long, one  
or two pistols, flask, cartouch box, &c.

2nd class. Cuirassiers - had back, breast & headpiece, sword & pistols.

3rd class. Harquebussiers of same armor - sword, pistol, and  
aldrabiniens } harquebuss or carabine.

4th class. Dragoons } First raised in France 1600.  
Dragoons } Wore a buff coat with deep skirts,  
open headpiece with cheeks; - some wore  
cluskaters, some pikemen, so called from weapons.  
In 1645 they changed their ~~armour~~ armors for the  
Dragon, a shorter piece. In 1649, changed the  
Dragon for the Carabine or culiver, a firearm  
lighter than the usual match & wheellock.

Duets were fought with rapier & dagger. They  
were not tolerated by the Puritans.

London Trained Bands - before civil war,  
used pike & musket. Companies trained  
4 times a year, 2 days at a time; and there  
was a general muster once a year.  
These trainings were originally very irksome. They  
had back & breast plates, skullcap, sword, musket-  
& bandoleers. The ponderous matchlock or  
carbine required much manoeuvring, & it  
took some time to learn to shoot with it. Wadding  
was not used for the ball, or not understood. One  
could shoot effectually only breast high.

The pike was a stout heavy weapon of pliant  
sh., about 16 feet long: & would be used dexterously  
only by those experienced.



## Arms, &amp;c.

The proud Cavaliers at first laughed at the displays of Puritan Chivalry - said it would take a Puritan two years to learn how to discharge a musket without winking. But the laugh was turned against them as soon as the civil wars began; when the London militia & other Puritans scattered the fiery cavalry of the Cavaliers and bore all before them. An old writer says the Puritan soldiers "used to sing a psalm, fall on & beat all opposition to the devil". Yet these campaigners, after the war had ended, returned to their former peaceful occupations both officers & soldiers, "while the Cavaliers still went about with belts & swords, swearing, swaggering, breaking into houses, & stealing whatever they could find".

Amusements of Court of James. Masques & emblematic pageants - superior to the same under Elizabeth, but still in bad taste.

Some drunken, profligate revels. He believes that Harrison's account, of Solomon & the queen of Sheba, of Faith, Hope & Charity, &c. is not exaggerated. It is supported by contemporaries. The Danish King fell down drunk while dancing with the queen of Sheba & was carried dead on a bier in an inner chamber; but the queen of Sheba had previously stumpled & bestowed on his garments wine, cream, beverage, cakes, spices & other matters, over-staying them into his lap. With these he defiled the bed. Many fell down, "wine did so occupy their upper chambers". Faith left the court staggering; Victory was led to sleep on the steps; Peace ~~stumbled~~ laid on the gates of Sheba with her olive branch. Hope was sick in the lower hall.

Feudal magnificence had departed when the civil wars began; though some still kept up the pomp & feudalism in their domestic establishments. Clectors & musicians! and taken the place of minstrels, jugglers & tumblers.

Extravagance in dress & personal ornament increased & became a frenzy. Lord Montague spent 1500 £ on the robes of his two daughters for one occasion.

Prodigality in feasting & riotous living became as conspicuous as extravagance in dress. The household expenses of James was 100,000 £ a year while that of Elizabeth was only half as much.



Living. Habits of knights & squires [Mss. 8. 361. 2. 290.]

The country knight & squire had changed much less than others. His house, which was half house & half castle was crowded with servants. The family rose at day break, and the family chaplain read prayers. Then breakfast; then the master & sons rode off to hunt deer with attendants; the lady & daughters supervised the dairy or buttery; prescribed the day's task for the spinning wheel; dealt out bread & meat both poor & the gale; concocted all manner of similes for the sick & infirm in the village. They made confections & preserves, spun & sewed, embroidered &c. At noon dinner in the great hall, the walls of which were adorned with stag's horns, casques, antique brands, & calivers. After dinner, to which all around were welcome, sack or home brewed October occupied the time till sunset. The hour just followed. Such was the ordinary festivity of a day. Some read, & some old volumes which the family library contained; some could not read. They had a Bible, a Practice of Piety, Foxe's martyrs, Froissart's Chronicle, or Robin Hood, Hall or Holinshed, & for morality the Seven Wise Masters or seven champions of Christendom. Holidays were glorious & rare. Christmas & Birthday were great occasions. The lord of the manor feasted peasantry; an ox was roasted whole, & there were punchbowls of ale. The old hall was cleared up & the oaken floor was leathern & plowed by hobnailed shoes. Such was the old country gentleman about 1603. These habits did not last long. The gay doings at court destroyed the rural habits. Esquires & rich widows rushed into the excesses of a town life, & hereditary estates & manners tumbled to decay; & new men.

Mss. 2. 235  
M. 8. 320

Mss. 2. 270.

Gambling kept pace with other excesses and ruined many ancient estates. Loaded dice were common - & all the tricks of foul play were well understood. Needy men increased & they sought aid & advancement by flattering James, & exclaiming against Puritans & witches, & lauding the wisdom & learning of the king, his palmy & its ornaments; by coarse jokes & buffooneries.

Charles at first discountenanced these coarse & profligate excesses & courtiers were something more decent; but as Puritans grew into power, the court party assumed all the excesses of the former reign; & the adherents of Charles swore, drank, brawled, intrigued, &c.



Education was as yet confined almost wholly to Latin & Greek. Discipline was rigid, except at certain seasons. Oxford & Cambridge students were dissolute. — Fencing, vaulting, shooting, were taught. Young aristocracy travelled, & indulged in profligacy. An old Italian proverb was — "An Englishman become an Italian is the devil incarnate!"

Female education retrograded after Elizabeth. It could not flourish in the age of buffoons. "Foreigners were astonished at the gross manners of the Court, & of <sup>both</sup> sexes in the higher classes, & they inform us that although the English taverns were dens of filth, tobacco smoke, roaring songs and roysters, yet women of rank were entertained in such places & tolerated those freedoms described in the old plays." Among other excesses, ladies entered into gaming with ardor & with no strict regard to the rules of fair play. They trafficked in politics, & were ready for a bribe; Gondemars filled them with gold & made them subservient to the Spanish interest in their love intrigues."

Shops of milliners & perfumers were noted places of assignation; Spring Garden was a famous public haunt for this purpose, in reigns of James & Charles; was shut up by Cromwell.

Dressing a lady was a complicated tedious task. Her raiment was kept in coffers perfumed with musk or other odors. Dressing hair was a complex work; then was laying patches on the face, & some painting, &c. "Painted visages kept their ground even under Cromwell."

The foppery of gentlemen was excessive; a fine one was the ne plus ultra of odious effeminacy.

Merchants. The Aristocracy still looked down upon traffickers with disdain. & rebuked them from the wall. A fashionable comedy was not rare enough, unless there was some ridicule of traders. The London shops in 17th century were little booths or cellars, generally without doors or windows; and the master took turns before his door crying, What d'ye seek? &c. & told the names of his commodities. His apprentice did the same by turns & the wayfarer was dimmed at every step. The articles were heterogeneous. Yet many of these merchants lived in splendid dwellings with rich furniture.

"Cornelius Agrippa, agreed with St. Chrysostom & St. Augustine, who say that no merchant can possibly be saved." Putnam's Mag. Jan. 1857. p. 78.



Merchants - continued.

M. 4. 390  
" 2. 230  
" 5. 150  
B. Bowbell rung at 8, which was a signal for  
servants to leave off work & repair to supper & bed.

M. 1. 217  
M. 2. 244  
M. 11. 59.  
M. 18. 311  
Only a great merchant was worthy to be  
fix Master or Mr. before his name; & he was  
rarely addressed as Worshipful. [This seems  
a higher title than Master]. The addition of Gentle-  
man or Esquire would have thrown the  
court into an uproar.

Distinctions were observed in the matter of  
light in the streets of London in a dark night:  
Courtiers were lighted with torches;  
Merchants & Clergymen with tapers;  
Mechanics with lanterns.

Apprentices were scattered over London, &  
very numerous - sometimes reckless & ferocious.  
They were often great misdoers & very formidable.  
Some became sober & rich; some became profligate  
& ready for every desperate deed.

Cheats (or money catchers) estimated at 10,000 <sup>in England</sup> in time  
of Elizabeth. They did not use violence.

22 kinds of them summed up by Holinshed. They  
increased under James & Charles. Had a Cant  
language - full of tricks & frauds. They cut off purses  
which in those days hung down by a string on the  
outside of the clothes. They were tied round the middle.

Highways were infested with robbers. They scourged the  
country in bands from 10 to 40. It was unsafe to  
travel except in numbers.

Miscreants in London allured children to their houses  
and then shipped them to the Colonies to be sold as slaves.

M. 110  
The Cavaliers, many of them, turned highway robbers  
after the royal cause was discomfited. "Merry  
a gentle well born cavalier had his exit at  
Tyburn". They did not molest royalists, but pounced  
upon Roundheads.

The Jesuits and their trickers.

Literary Tricks & Knavery, very common.

London was to foreigners the valley of the shadows  
of death. Streets crooked & narrow; houses rose story above  
story, each projecting over those below, making twilight  
at noonday; streets unpaved, dirt & filth, and  
in rainy weather, knee deep with mud & mire.

Middle aisle of Paul's was the chief place of

M. 2. 246  
M. 19  
Common resort - principal hours 11 to 12, & 3 to 6.  
Aristocratic lords, merchants & men of all professions, fashionable, busy  
idle, here met & mingled. Abundance of place and  
intimacy suspended from the pillars. Political quidnuncs  
were the chief of Paul's walkers.

London was dreadful at night - full of thieves, murderers, & ruffians of all  
sorts. It was dangerous to walk in the streets after 9 o'clock.



## Popular Superstitions.

English Court frightened by accident in 1618 into a temporary fit of gravity.

Falling of a Portrait, Croaking of a raven, &c. could disturb a hare crossing one's path, upsetting of Salt, } the most  
and "crowing of a cock, } swaggering  
cavalier.

Divination by the beans was by Sortes Virgilianae. Divination was a thriving trade & every street had some one who divined for the week by astrology, & by the sieve & shears. Cavaliers & Roundheads thronged to astrologers in the civil war to learn future events.

Exorcism of devils was a favorite superstition. The Cornish priest was employed, armed with holy water, &c. The Puritan sometimes resorted to prayer to cast out devils. They gave strange names to the devils.

Witchcraft after James accession became the greatest superstition of the age. James wrote, reasoned, & decreed upon witchcraft. This counting & clergy, sufficiently apt for superstition, echo the alarm, & the judges revived old statutes against sorceries. This witch-fanga most old woman was waged with great fury during the whole of James' reign - and the persecution continued & became more rampant under the long Parliament. Between 3 and 4000 said to have been executed for witchcraft between 1640 & 1660.

Cookery was studied more than ever; but with few improvements. The epicurism of the 17th century arrived in extravagant expense & "ill-manas combands" of the rising pie had in it herring, almond paste, Oates, manchet, sugar, sack, rosewater, saffron, butter, strawberries, currants, barberries, &c. &c. Artificial taste prevailed in preparing the Similes materials. Butter, cream, marrow, ambrosia, spices of various kinds, sugar, dried fruits, oranges & lemons entered largely into almost every dish.

Wines were copiously used by the wealthy; they were not behind their ancestors. The visit of the Danish King this country increased the thirst of England.

Cavaliers of Charles were a little flamed for appearance as the courtiers of James.

Health drinking was common; in a company of 80 or 30 it was expected that every one would drink the health of every other one. Quakers & Quakers followed.

These were the aristocrats who were becoming more vitiated. The common people could not buy wine & became more temperate.

Puritan principles, produced greater temperance in eating & drinking, during the Commonwealth, & republican simplicity prevailed in Cromwell's banquets; and London civil feasts were decorous.



## Sports & Games.

Under James - aristocratic sports  
Hawking, Hunting, Tennis, Pallmall, Billiards  
Balloon played with a large ball filled with air, and  
banded with the hand.  
Bearbaiting, Cockfighting, &c.

p. 366. The Puritans abhorred cruel & sinful sports,  
Cromwell, Pride & Hewson slew all the bears,  
and this gave rise to the poem of Hudibras.

Popular Sports - Dancing, leaping, vaulting,  
archery, may games, may poles, whittens-  
als, Morris dances, decoration of churches; - these  
were all enjoined upon church going people  
after divine service by the book of Sports.

Bearbull baiting, intubulus & bowling were forbidden  
on Sunday by James.

Bowling Greens in England excited the admiration of  
foreigners, being superior to anything abroad.

Horse Races, also, were superior in splendour & importance.  
Furious riding & driving were common in England.

Citizens, had cockfighting, bowling, tables  
cards, dice, billiards, musical entertainments,  
dancing, masks, balls, plays, club meetings.

London populace - had football, wrestling,  
cudgel playing, nine pins, shovel board,  
cricket, stowball, quoits, ringing of bells,  
pitching the bar, bull baiting, throwing  
at cocks & lying at ale houses.

Can. 9. 357. Middle Classes in England assumed their  
proper position in society by the beginning of  
the present period & imparted a healthy char-  
acter to the ranks above & beneath them.

In Scotland, the middle class was small.  
Scotland was yet in a semi-barbarous state.  
It was lord & serf, rich & poor. The nobles & others  
were as times lawless & violent.

Before the reformation, the clergy of Scotland were ignorant  
and vicious. They unblushingly & openly prac-  
ticed concubinage - worse than those of England.  
The Court was rude & profligate. James IV &  
James V. were gross, vulgar & profligate in their  
amours. "The court of Mary, if it has not  
been <sup>greatly</sup> belied, increased the sensuality of the  
preceding reigns." The influential classes were  
regardless of the rules of morality.

The Reformation was the beginning of a new era  
in manners & customs in Scotland. The Protestant clergy  
had no idea of gradual change, but laid the axe to the root  
of the tree of popery.



## Condition of the people.

p. 309

**Democracy.** The liberalism of the 16th century only looked to the political emancipation of the middle classes. It was not till the contest with James & Charles, that the idea sprang up that the great body of the people had any political rights. "The age of the civil war & of the Commonwealth is that of the birth of genuine democracy in England; of the principle that the laboring classes ought to have a voice in legislation" It has not been recognized & condoned in general; yet it has been a living & active principle of English politics.

The laboring population of England, 1603 to 1641 enjoyed more comfort than in any former age. The successful government of Elizabeth & the long reign of James led to prosperity. The tyrannical acts of the government did not fall on this class, unless they were Puritans; & previous to the civil war, the Puritans were but "a sprinkling of the population". The revolution was one which resulted in part from ease & prosperity; the war was one of opinions & principles, & did not spring from hunger & wretchedness.

**Population.** Not less than 6 millions in 1640.  
do not less than 6½ millions in 1640.  
do not much over 5 " in 1603

England, old writers say, was never more barbarous at home than under Cromwell. 1650-1660.

**Price of Land** was 12 years purchase 1621; 16 years 1640.

**Wheat** 1606 & 1675 average 34/ a quarter. 29/ 5/ 50.  
" 1630 to 1640 was from 44/ to 50/ or 58/ 16: 1641  
" 1646 48/ 1647, 73/ 8, 1648, 85/ 1649, 80/ 1650, 76/ 8  
" 1651, 73/ 4. It fell after this. In 1654 was 26/  
" 1655 to 1659, over 45/.

Prices in London fixed by proclamation 1633:—

Fat egg 7/ to 9/. Wheaten cock 6/ & hen 5/. Turkey cock 1/ & hen 3/  
Duck 8d. fat goose 2/. Capon best 2/4. best pullet 1/6  
Hen 1/. Large chickens 5/. rabbit 7 or 8/. Pigeons tame 5/ do.  
Eggs 4d do. butter 4½ d. 5d. Candles 3½ d 16 & 14  
Charcoal, 4 bushels best 1/2, 1000 Kentish billets 16/.

p. 135  
4. 306 **Wool** under James, 1/2 to 8d. lb. — 1641. 70d; 1648. 1/4  
" in 1649. 1/5. 1650 to 1660, 9d to 2/1.  
[said to be 8d in 1667 & Spanish 2/2.

**Prices of Wine** fixed 1632 & 1660 Misc. 4. 300.

do of Wheat fixed & other things, 1657 to 1633. Misc 4 300. 30/.



134.  
164.

use 8 302

# Rates of Laborers, as fixed for the county of Middlesex by Justices in 1610

Yearly wages - of a Bailiff in husbandry 5<sup>s</sup>.  
Man servant for husbandry. good. 50<sup>s</sup>. Common do. 40<sup>s</sup>.  
Middlesex do. 20<sup>s</sup>. boy under 16, 20<sup>s</sup>.  
if woman servant, can bake, brew, cook, &c. 26<sup>s</sup>/8  
second do - 23<sup>s</sup>/4. 3d do. for drudgery 16<sup>s</sup>.  
girl under 16 - 14<sup>s</sup>. - Chief Miller 46<sup>s</sup>.  
Chief Shepherd 30<sup>s</sup>. - Common Miller 31<sup>s</sup>/8  
Common Shepherd 25<sup>s</sup> (food is here taken in)

{ Harvest Work. a man 5d a day & meat  
a reaper, haymaker, hedger or ditcher 4<sup>s</sup> day & meat  
a woman reaper 3d. woman haymaker 2d.  
and meat or 3 more. and meat or 3d more.

Other laborers, not in harvest, East to Michaelmas 3<sup>s</sup> food  
or 7d without food. W. to E. 2d with food, 6d without.

Artificers before Michaelmas - Master Carpenter 8d  
and meat or 1/2 without meat

Freemason 8<sup>s</sup> with meat 1/2 without.

Chief Joiner or Sawyer 6<sup>s</sup> with meat, 1<sup>s</sup> without

Horse Collar maker 6d with meat, 10<sup>s</sup> without

Plowright, rough mason, & carpenter 5d with meat  
Tiler, & Slater 10d without meat

Thatcher, hurdle maker, bucklayer, 5d with, 9d without.

After Michaelmas - 2/3 to 4/5 of these sums.

All year. Turners & Gardeners, 6d with, 1<sup>s</sup> without food.

" " Tailors 4<sup>s</sup> with 8<sup>s</sup> without

In Frederic Eden calculates that all these wages  
average about 8 pence a day, without food, when  
wheat was 34<sup>s</sup> a quarter.

## Diet of Seamen about 1615. in King's ships.

Gallon of beer a day 2 pence

1/2 lb Biscuit - 5 farthings

Oatmeal a peck 1 pint 1<sup>s</sup> do.

2d Bacon in 7 days 6<sup>s</sup> 4d. - 1 day 1 penny almost.

Fresh fish if they catch them.

Butter 1/4 to per day 1 penny

Holland Cheese 1/2 lb " 5 farthings

3 pints Vinegar " 2 pence

7 Kentish faggots for 16. 8<sup>s</sup> 1/2 1<sup>s</sup> 1/2 farthing.

He says, Exact. 7d. 3q. and 1/28 of a farthing.

But his sums make 1<sup>s</sup> 1/2. Perhaps

Vinegar 2d should be 2 farthings.

In 1636 seamen in the navy had 7<sup>s</sup> 1/2 d. a day for provisions  
in port; and at sea 8<sup>s</sup> 1/2 d. Their wages were 1<sup>s</sup>,  
half the men 8<sup>s</sup> 1/2 d. each per day; other half 7<sup>s</sup>; boys 2<sup>s</sup> 1/2 d.  
Masters had 3<sup>s</sup> 7/4 a day wages; mates 10<sup>s</sup>.

It seems that in the time of King James, the cost of food for  
a common laborer, all the year, was only 3d a day, in estimate.  
His food was more than his wages.

Poor laws were imperfectly executed - in many places, no  
poor rates were levied for 20, 30, or 40 years, and  
"numbers of persons were still left to perish for want."



124 Pictorial History of England  
1660-1688.

Charles II. soon after he returned, began to touch for  
Com. g. 244. the King's Evil, one of his chaplains saying at each  
touching; - "He put his hands upon them, and he  
healed them".

The Presbyterians were as vindictive against  
the judges of Charles I. apparently, as the Cavaliers  
or many of them. They hated Cromwell because  
of his toleration.

Toleration. Neither the nation nor parliament  
Com. g. 427. was capable of a generous toleration. "which  
had been upheld for a time only by the sword  
of ~~Cromwell~~ of the Independents and the  
management of Cromwell."

Harrison was cut down alive, & saw his  
own bowels thrown into the fire, & then  
he was quartered, & his heart yet palpitating  
was torn out & shown to the people. From  
such atrocious cruelties, Cromwell and  
the Commonwealth men had turned with honor.

Thanksgiving 1666. The Court ordered public  
thanksgiving to God for a victory over the  
Dutch when there was no victory. "which"  
says Burnet, "was a horrid mocking of God  
and a lying to the world".

Clarendon ~~solicited~~ solicited aid of the  
King of France for Charles, in order that he  
might avoid the control of a parliament,  
& seems to have obtained it.

Bishops & High Churchmen preached divine  
right & non resistance. The Court was  
plunged deeply into debauchery & profaneness.

Revolution of 1688. "By every party, recourse was  
had to a wholesale system of lying & deception,  
for in this "glorious revolution", nothing was  
glorious but the result."

Quakers. George Fox began to preach 1647. His  
followers first called Quakers 1650. Were persecuted.  
Com. Cromwell tolerated them less than others. Fox  
says, there were 700 in prison 1660, whom Charles released.  
But he soon began to imprison quakers. Fox says 1662  
that the Commonwealth imprisoned 3173 Quakers, of whom  
52 died in prison & 73 remained in confinement; and that  
2068 had been imprisoned since the Restoration. Fox was  
soon added to the number.



# Pictorial History of England 1660-1688.

Presbyterians were no more disposed to Toleration than Episcopalians. They sought for themselves an established church. Independents never sought an established church for themselves. They demanded that there should be no established church. Yet they had not generally adopted the principle of full Toleration. Milton would tolerate all but the papists.

Presbyterians maintained that the state was in duty bound to maintain the supremacy of the true church, & to extirpate error by force, as zealously as the Episcopalians.

The popular & national feeling was for this supremacy & this extirpation of error. All the severe laws passed against non-conformity, 1662 to 1688, were in accordance with the sentiments of a great majority of the English people. The House of Commons was more persecuting than the Court & government.

The Established Church, by going against both puritanism & popery, became more popular than ever it had been before; the whole country almost rallied around it. The tyrannical acts of Charles & James made little impression; but the imprisonment of seven bishops brought about a revolution 1688.

Toleration was not received nor understood by any great bodies into which the religious world was divided. Coercion to put down error or heresy, was the principle of all. Independents, Quakers & some other sectaries had made some progress in the principles of toleration, but they had not adopted them fully.

Religious liberty was hardly thought of by any body before the Reformation. A few writers doctored this principle some years after. Martinus Bellius (a fictitious name) advocated religious liberty soon after 1553, & was answered by Berce. A more able defence of similar views appeared at Basil 1565. (The then was also printed at Basil, both in Latin.) John Goodwin, the Independent minister, translated this, and it was published in London 1648, & again in 1651. The author, Acontius, excepts atheists & apostates. Leonard Busher, 1646, vindicates religious freedom in its widest extent in his "Plea for Liberty of Conscience." It was first printed 1614, and again 1646.



During the reign of Charles II. the privileges of the subject were less invaded than in any former period of 20 years. Charles was the first sovereign that did not resort to illegal taxation.

Judges & juries were often subservient, but less so than in the preceding reigns. Some lawyers were high spirits advocates. The crown attempted to destroy the press, or to control it, but others had done the same and the long Parliament also. Milton's noble apology for the freedom of the press was unheeded.

[Jeffries was as bad as any former judge could have been.

"It was ordinary to hear Jeffries say to a prisoner; -  
"you are a filthy, lousy, ritty rascal." & much more of the like elegance. He was a drunkard.

## Revenue.

In 1660, the parliament voted that the income of the crown should be 1,200,000£ a year for life. To raise this, the subsidy called tunnage & poundage was granted to Charles for life. Tunnage was levied upon wines, and poundage consisted of duties upon exports & imports, according to a schedule of rates annexed. This act is the foundation of the modern system of Custom House duties. These tunnage & poundage are estimated to have yielded 400,000£ a year. [530,000£ in 1684. Macaulay]

Excise upon beer, ale & other liquors was granted forever, in lieu of old profits of sandship & purveyance, which this act took away. The sum from this source is estimated at 300,000£

[£555,000 in 1684. Macaulay]  
Duty upon "every fire, hearth & stove" of 2s. in all dwellings worth over 20s. was granted 1662.

It was calculated that this would yield 170,000£  
[£200,000. It yielded 180,000£. Poor men's beds were taken & sold.]

Domains of crown yielded 100,000£ a year, &  
Firstfruits Dean 5000£. Post Office 26,000£. Coinage & tin 12,000£  
Firstfruits & tithes of church benefices 18,000£

Miscellaneous 53,000£ - all not quite 1,100,000£

Other duties were afterwards added - Subsidies 1663.

Taxes upon lands; personal estate taxes; poll taxes.

Duty on stamps 1671 - all grants to Charles

in his reign £13,114,868. (besides the permanent ones

apparently.) Power of his wife 500,000 or 250,000£

Free farm rents 1670, a large sum; Sale of Dunkirk 400,000.

Borrow money in Dutch war 340,000£; and 300,000

paid by Dutch at end of second war; robbing the

exchequer, 1672, 1,200,000£; Restoration of charters.

Pensions & bribes from France. All 44 millions in 24 years

From permanent revenue 26½ m. Parl. grants 13½ m. Miscellaneous 4 m.

1,800,000 a year



Expenses of Charles - Navy yearly 300,000 £.  
Army 250,000. Pensions 60,000.

Civil list between 400 and 500,000 £. including much given to mistresses. Dutch war about 7 mil.

Revenue of James - same as of Charles + some additions. The revenue for 1688 was over 2 millions.  
Customs now produced 600,000 £ a year,  
Excise 666,000 £; hearth money 245,000.  
Post Office 65,000 £; Wine licences 10,000.  
New duties on wine + sugar 173,000.  
Duties on tobacco + sugar - 149,000.  
" " on French linen + silks - 94,000.

Exports, 1663, 2,022,812; 1669, 2,063,274. <sup>This estimate</sup>  
Imports 1663, 4,016,019; 1669, 4,196,139. <sup>is not very</sup>

Great increase of trade + wealth.

Sir Josiah Child, 1665, says men ever die of  
complaint of the scarcity of money. "It is  
natural for men to complain of the  
present + to commend times past."

In 40 years, 1636 to 1676, the number of houses in London  
doubled; the royal navy was more than double; i.e.  
Coal shipping, 80,000 tons, was quadrupled.

Cavenish estimates that

The rental of England for land, houses, mines &c. was about  
6 millions in 1600; in 1688, 14 millions.

Land worth 12 years purchase in 1600 = 72 millions.

Land worth 18 years purchase in 1688 = 252 millions.

Plate for families - more wrought 1660 to 1688 than for 200 years  
before.

Value of all property not real, in 1600, 17 millions

£	do	"	"	in 1630, 28 "
£	do	"	"	in 1660, 56 "
£	do	"	"	in 1688, 88 "

East India trade 1677, from a publication of that year

(con. 9.20) Company + others allowed by them, exported  
annually about 570 £, of which 420 £ was bullion.

Imported by company 1675, £863,000; by others 250,000.

Co. Imports were Calico, Pepper, Salt Petre, Melizo,  
Silk, raw + wrought, Drugs, &c. Of these was consumed  
in England, pepper 6000 £, Salt petre 30,000 £, silk, raw  
+ manufactured 30,000 £, Calicoes 160,000 £.

Melizo + drugs 10 to 15,000 £. Remainder, 633,000 £,  
is carried to foreign markets; most of the private  
trade in diamonds, pearls, musk, anise, &c.

Price 1677, of Pepper 8d. (formerly 3/4). It says they formerly "clung to  
cellars + rooms" for pepper. India silks much cheaper than

French + Italian. "Calicoes (he says) serve instead of  
of so much French + Dutch + Flemish linen", + cost  
only 1/3 as much. Main calicoes were brought from  
India + printed in England, in imitation of Indian  
chintz, which is printed. This printing in England began 1676

Calico was used in children's coats instead of green + red + blue  
M 4.303 men's coats, instead of perpetual orange or yellow.



p. 127 Misc. 4.296 Linen. In 1677, England did not make a  
" 4.299" then and the part of the linen consumed in the kingdom  
Formal dresses, but there had been previously  
made of French Cambrics, French & Silesian  
lawns, & other flaxen fabrics of Flanders  
and Germany.

muslins from India now began to supplant  
c. 2.153 (1677) then linens from France, Germany, &c. it  
" 4.303" so did calicoes. (see last page)  
" 4.296

p. 132.142 Tea. Known in the east of China in 860 Hong life.  
Also in Japan. Jesuits noticed it about 1550. in 6th J.  
Misc. 4.299 First imported by Dutch, soon after 1600: & they  
Con 9.224 imported most that was used in 17th century.  
Excised in England 1660 - & duty was levied  
on the liquor made & sold until 1688.

In 1660 "the beverage was only just beginning to be known in E.  
Papess never drank any till 1661. Sept. Waller  
has lines "Of Tea, commended by the queen", from which it  
seems she had brought tea into use. No date to the lines.

"The muse's friend, Tea, does our journey aid;  
Repress those vapors which the head invade."

For some time but little tea used in England.

In 1664, E. I. Company could get only 2 dr 23 cost 40s. 10d.

In 1666 same Co. paid 50s. 16 for 22 3/4 lbs. 19 1/2

In 1669 same Co. imported 143 1/2 lbs. which they gave away & used.

Generally purchased second hand after this some years.

In 1678, E. I. Company brought home 4713 lbs. and  
glutted the market for some time.

Copy of ~ 1678, they brought home only 410 pounds

"The Consumption of Tea did not begin to be at all  
general till after the Revolution of 1688.

They (Co) first sent a ship to China 1680.

London 1662 - had 400 Hackney Coaches, all d.

p. 156 Misc. 1.173 No lights but lanterns hung out by householders  
from Michaelmas to Lady day, from dark till 9 o'clock.

Every householder on a street was obliged to do this.

No light in streets the rest of the year, & none  
after 9 o'clock in winter.

Population - 1700 was about 600,000.

Coins. Charles coined guineas. 1662. Also he coined  
crowns, shillings; & pence & farthings of copper 1672, &  
in 1684 farthings of tin. James' coins are similar.



*Clarendon*. "The historical value of his history is not very considerable. The inaccuracy of its details is so great throughout, that there is scarcely any other contemporary history which is so little trust worthy with regard to minute particulars." "He wrote to vindicate his own side of the question", as a partisan. "His work is rather a great literary performance than a very valuable historical document".

*Musc. 4. 294.* The Puritans did not encourage any music but Psalm singing. Organs were taken down by an ordinance of 1644. They were replaced at the Restoration, and the choral service also; and cathedral music was in high favor. Charles in 1662 had 24 violins for the Chapel Royal - imitating Louis XIV. His musicians were men & boys - no allusion to females.

English popular songs & ballads of this time are not inferior to those of any country.

James II did not attend to the fine arts.

#### Furniture

*Turkey Carpet* was advertised 1660, for sale; were used to cover tables, more than floors; matting & rushes being more generally used for floors.

*Oilcloth* was known & used in England 1660.

*Chairs* remained much the same. Breakfast were sometimes composed of *Canes*. *Most famous*

*Marqueterie*. Tables, cabinets, wardrobes, clock cases, &c. began to exhibit the beautiful workmanship called *marqueterie*, from M. Marquet.

*Libraries* appear with pillars, &c. seen in *moveable*. Books on shelves; uncovered - no door to library, in the picture.

*Sideboard* - elegant stands on curious legs; has three shelves or stages, circular somewhat in front; tapers, each one becoming smaller; the bottom is largest; middle one smaller; top one smallest. Cups, tankards, &c. of plate stand on two shelves; top one seems to have looking glasses and ornamental things. No appearance of a covering in the picture.

*Sofas*, so called by the author. Two have a seat at one end and none at the sides. Seem for lying down, & not for seats.

*Cabinets*. He so calls some high, large ornamental pieces of furniture. One with pillars, & carved top seems to have vases, plates, glasses, &c. on shelves.

A high, splendid piece of furniture in a sitting room, as represented. I know not what it is. State beds, dressing glasses, foot stools, &c. are represented.



# Pictorial History of England 1660-1688

## Male Costume in time of Charles II

1st. Fashion. Short waisted doublet, petticoat breeches; of which the lining is tied over the knees, breeches ornamented with ribbons. Hat high crowned with feathers. Long lace ruff below the knee; a falling collar of lace; a cloak hung on carelessly. High heeled shoes tied with ribbons.

Powwig introduced 1664; crown of hat lowered.

2<sup>d</sup>. Charles's fashion that was to be permanent, but did not prove so.

1666. Close long vest; loose surcoat over it; buskins, ...

*Long Waistcoat* The long square cut coat, which succeeded, seems to have originated in this vest; & the waistcoat grew out of the ~~surcoat~~ surcoat or tunic, which was worn under the coat & almost concealed the breeches, the skirts being down almost to the knees.

The Coat or vest was loose & came down almost to the feet, with sleeves to the elbows & large cuffs. Both coat & waist-coat had buttons & button holes all the way down in front.

The stiff band of falling collar were superseded by the neckcloth or cravat, tied under the chin. The broad hat was cocked behind 1667. Some years later, or in the latter part of Charles's reign, the brims of some hats were turned up on sides.

The Puritans were a plainer dress than the Cavaliers. The latter had gay clothing, rich lace, &c., and jewelry, & wore long hair & love locks; the Puritans wore short hair.

## Female Costume.

Plain cutting & country maids wives wore the high crowned hat, French hood, laced stomacher, and yellow starched neckerchief (on the neck).

The beauties of the court, had bare necks, and arms, flowing draperies, trains of silken robes, they wore black patches & were painted.

Perukes adopted by ladies 1662. Puffs

Vizards in fashion among ladies 1663

Sacrosanct mentioned 1669

Riding Habit, much like dress of men - waistcoat and petticoat 1663 - coats & doublets with deep skirts, and a petticoat under the coat: hat & plume

Costume of reign of James II. not attained much from Charles.

A picture of 1687 gives men a long full coat coming some to knees & one a little below, with enormous cuffs about the elbow & ruffles to low; this coat covers the waist coat & breeches; buttons all the way up; cravat on neck; hat lowered, but no cock; flowing wig. This coat & some other things went into next reign.



Pictorial History of England 1660-1688

Cavalry under Charles II. had a sword, pistol & 1/4 mil  
carrels.

Foot - musketeers had a musket, barrel not under 3 ft.  
curved barrel.

Pike 16 ft sword, back, breast & head piece.

Bayonet invented in this period in Eng. apparently

Bandelier was superseded towards 1685, by a carb  
box of tin.

p. 366. Amusements. The puritans got their recreation  
from religion & sermons. "The church bell  
was their harp & cithern & psalms were their  
roundelays; the ministering of the congre-  
gation sufficed them for a merry meeting;  
nothing that Shakespeare penned was equal in  
their eyes to a sermon of length & truth, that  
soared to the highest heights, or plunged into the  
deepest abysses of theology. Their chief enjoyment  
was their feast of fat things, and the Puritans  
they were not slow in feeding their congre-  
gation, to the full." "Ideally they sometimes  
stimulated the people with political sermons;  
"some took down the king in short hand"  
Sometimes the orator displayed wit, ~~humor~~ <sup>the best of his authority</sup>

The Puritans "affected downcast speech" which sometimes  
became a drawing tone; "their talk upon ordinary  
occasions was liberally doctored with texts of  
scripture".

They loved music & dancing, merry meetings  
and festivals, sports & games. As unworthy of  
Christians, clashing them with excessive drinking, bawling,  
brawling, profane swearing.

Puritan Names. They selected names for their  
children from the old testament, or those expressing  
a christian quality, while they rejected those  
that savored of paganism or popery.

Royalists. the crawling foot-licking  
of Royalty that succeeded the <sup>right</sup> ~~Pro~~ <sup>reverend</sup> ~~ration~~  
& learned prelates exhibited a fanaticism, less fervid,  
but ~~of~~ more profane & ~~in~~ <sup>in</sup> ~~schismatic~~ <sup>schismatic</sup> than  
that of the puritans - and God, the Church,  
and King became their ~~trinity~~ <sup>trinity</sup> & it is hard  
to tell which of the three was most devoutly  
shipped.

The duties of non resistance & passive obedience  
were inculcated with the golden rule of christian practice  
while opposition to monarchy was represented as  
a crime in which, if the monarch died, his salvation  
was hopeless.

Cherries & Garms were fanatics who vibrated between  
their confessions and their misdeeds

The puritans unquestionably possessed no moral  
qualities.



# Peccatorial History of England 1660-1688.

The Restoration brought a tide of levity and licentiousness - an inundation of all the debauchery of the French Court.

Swearing, & profane conversation were common. Gaming was a fashionable pastime.

Royal & noble concubines & worthless actresses became the patronesses & wives of the highest nobility. Court ladies were not proof against a profligate king & dissolute nobility & their characters equivocal; some were coarse & wild.

<sup>p. 115</sup> Duels prevailed beyond all former precedent; as a <sup>connected</sup> spirit of licentiousness is generally with cruelty & recklessness of life.

<sup>p. 154</sup>  
<sup>Con. q. 116</sup>

Many younger sons of good families, & heirs of wealthy citizens, indulged in every excess, & broke the king's peace while hawking and drinking for the king. Some stormed taverns & broke windows, tore off door knockers, defaced gilt signs, knocked down passengers, in the night.

Notwithstanding all this profligacy & profligacy, of the higher classes: the bulk of the community retained much of the old English spirit. The Puritans, stern & self-denying, & many royalists regarded these new excesses with contempt. They adhered to old hours of business & rest, & to the old diet.

<sup>con. q. 224</sup>  
<sup>331</sup>

<sup>p. 142, 128</sup> Tea, Coffee & Chocolate were already beginning to supersede the fiery & heavy liquors, and the social Tea Table began to find a place

<sup>p. 256</sup>  
<sup>31</sup>  
<sup>Con. q. 21</sup>

Theatre. Movable Scenery was introduced long before the Restoration. Music & dancing & scene painting were in demand. The Orchestra had 40 fiddlers. Women were introduced as actresses after the revolution; and some parts of the lowest description were exhibited by females. Extraneous actors added to the general depravity, & they added to the host of noble & royal concubines.

<sup>Con. q. 264</sup>

Touching for the Evil by the king was common. The physician attended & a chaplain in full canonicals repeated prayers, scripture read other prayers & prayers for the sick. This was a piece of "Court mumming".



Pictorial History of England. 1660-1688.

*Sports*  
*Com. 99*  
*286* } *Shows* } were acceptable to the highest rank.  
*Dancing monkeys* }  
*Jugglers* were plenty in London } *chairs & chariots*  
*Rapedancers* } *attended their*  
*Fireworks* } *exhibitions*

*Foot racing, Swimming, & some sports of the higher*  
*Games, Skating* } *classes.*  
*Running at the Ring* } *these were all done on horseback*  
*Throwing a javelin* } *at full speed.*  
*Firing pistols at a mark* }

*Boat Racing*  
*Bowls* was a favorite with ladies & gentlemen.  
*Bear baiting* } were restored with the King.  
*Beast baiting* } *Evelyn says they were becoming less*  
*fashionable.*

*Baiting* at times with dogs. Evelyn describes one of these infamous bear baitings.

*In doors - for the wealthy.*  
*Billiards, Cards, cribbage*  
*Chees, backgammon, nine pins*  
*Masquerade, private theatricals.*  
*Oh handmaiden buff - Handy cap*  
*many old Holy Days observed*

*A Circulating Library is noticed in 1661. That*  
*is, a man gives notice that he has all manner*  
*of English & French Histories, romances & poetry*  
*which are to be sold or read for reasonable*  
*considerations"*

Poor.

*p. 99*  
*162* *A writer, 1661, calculates that the family*  
*of a working man, viz. self, wife & 4 children*  
*could not be supported short of 10s a week, in*  
*meat, drink, clothing, house rent. He supposes*  
*the father, mother & two oldest children may serve*

*p. 308* *Oct of 1662, may be said to have begun the laboring*  
*population of England to their old condition of*  
*adscriptive glave - each fixed to the soil of some*  
*parish. This law lasted till 1795. Says Adam*  
*Smith; "There is scarce a poor man in England*  
*40 years old who has not felt himself cruelly*  
*oppressed by this law." This was the cause of settlement*  
*as to the poor; "it has been more profitable to the*  
*profession of the law than any other English*  
*jurisprudence." (Sir F. Eden)*

*p. 308. Sir Josiah Child 1665, describes the condition of the poor*  
*as sad & wretched in the extreme. "The shifting off,*  
*Com. 1. 227* *sending, sending over hippup Creek, the poor wandering*  
*in the care of birth or its abode" was continually going*  
*on in all parts of the Kingdom. The beggar was*  
*whipped, & then sent from parish to parish to the place*  
*of birth, at a great charge to the country - & then wandered away*  
*again.*

*Poor Rates in England, latter end of reign of Charles II. averaged*  
*£665.362 a year.*



Paupers continued.

Andrew Yarranton, 1677, estimates the number of unemploy'd poor, who are destitute, at 100,000; & that each costs the public 4 pence a day for food; while if employ'd, the greater part would earn 8d a day. 100,000 at 4d a day makes 608.333 1/3 £.

Thomas Firmin, a sociarian & a London merchant did much & wrote much for the poor. His book 1678. He says the price of Riga hemp is 40 a hundred; & some 29 of Muscovy flax 44/ a hundred; some 7 & 36/ English flax 5 1/2 d. a hundred.

Beating & dressing hemp, cost 4/8 cut for beating, and 11 pence for dressing 12 pounds.

Dressing flax 3d for 8 pounds. Weaving for one kind, yard wide 4, 3/4 + 1/2 yard wide 3 1/2, ell wide 5d. for another kind. 1/2 d more an ell. (all for weaving an ell for coarser, 1 1/2 d, 3 d an ell.

Macaulay says ordinary peasant wages under Charles II. did not exceed 4/2 week - though in some districts higher. Nov. 12/14/16/ The highest 1661.

p. 122  
p. 164

Wages of Labor, fixed by justices in Essex 1661.

Common Labour, feller & maker up of wood, 8 d food or 1/2 + food. March 15 to Sept. 15.  
Ditchers, Hedgers, & Threshers  
Man Haymaker 8d with, or 1/2 (Rest of year 6 d food or 1/2 without)  
Woman Haymaker 5d or 10d without.  
Weeder of Corn 4d or 7d. Mower 10d with, 1/2 without  
Fallower 6 or 1/3. Reeper 1/2 with 1/10 without  
Woman reaper 8 d with 1/2 without

Wages fixed by Quarter Sessions at Bury St Edmunds 1682.

Haymaker 5d a day; man haymaker 3. Reeper 10.  
Bom. laborer 6 d in sum. } Woman reaper 6d,  
Woman weeder 3d.  
They were to have meat & drink also, or double these sums.  
Bailiff in husbandry 6th a year. Chief husbandman 5 £  
Dairy maid or Cook 2.10. second husbandman 3.10  
Or under 18 yrs. 2.10

Wages in Warwick County, fixed by Justices 1685

Bailiff 4 £. best ploughman & cartwright 5.15. Shepherd 5 £  
Inferior servant 50. all women servant 26/8  
Dairy or washmaid 30/. second do do 26/8  
Freemason, master brick m., master carpenter } all 5d  
Journeyman carpenter, plowright, cartwright } a day.  
Master bricklayer, tiler, plasterer, singler  
Thatcher, mower, reaper  
Apprentices of carpenters or masons under 18. Thresher } all 4  
Servant of Thatcher or plasterer, woodfeller, } a day  
Haymaker, woman reaper }  
Some others 3d a day - all with meat & drink, or have double

In Devonshire 1685, a labourer could earn 5 s a day all the year besides his diet, worth 5 s more - & a woman could earn 4 s a week for wages & diet (perhaps 3/4 meat). he has 1/6 a day & 5 s wages; probably a woman should get 1/6.



Prices.

10 heat. 1661.70/: 1662.74/: - flew & seldom over 46/.  
1674.68/8: 1675 64/8: 1676.38/. 1686.34/.  
1687 25/2. - Average 1664-1000, 46/4.

See Con. G. 230.

Prices of Labor, Wheat, &c. 1400 to 1610. Musc. b. 412

1066. 9-11-167. Musc. 8. 98

1349. Tower pound of silver coined into 22/6, viz 11.5 and 3 alloy.  
Same under Edward IV coined into 37/6.

Henry VIII coined 43 silver & 83 alloy into 40%.

1552 - same " 11<sup>3</sup> 1/2 prot skin + 19 prots alloy hints 60%.

1600 Same " Same, (called Standard silver, into 62/

Gold.

1490 Sovereign of 90% coined - 10 parts of gold: 1545 on 8 parts.

Present sober eigen " - 5 pwt 3  $\frac{1}{4}$  grains.

Gold Guinea coins 1663, 5 pwt, 9 grains: in 1717 made 21/

Wheat [Misc. 2. 157. Misc 8. 99.]

1650 to 1660. av. 45/9: 1660 to 1670 44/9.  
1670 to 1680 av. 44/9: 1680 to 1690 44/9.

1670 to 1680 av. 44/9; 1680 to 1690. 35/8

1696 to 1700 av. 50%; 1700 to 1710, 35/8  
1710 to 1720, 36/

1710 to 1720 av.  $4\frac{3}{5}$ ; 1720 to 1730.  $3\frac{7}{4}$

1730 to 1740 av. 31/10; 1740 to 1750, 31/8

1750 to 1760 av 37/5. 1760 to 1770. 41/4

1776 to 1780 av. 49/1: 1780 to 1790 49/10  
1790 to 1800 av. 62/1: 1800 to 1810 49/11

1790 1800 av 62/1: 1800 to 1810 58/17  
1810 1820 av 100/17:

1810 to 1820 as 100/7:

His quarters are 8 bushels. He calls the Winchester  
quarter 9 bushels, or  $\frac{1}{8}$  more. [much disagreement in  
writing on such matters.] [See new edition, Vol. II. p. 2.]

He says the shilling in 1066 contained 260 grains of fine silver  
[but 1135 parts make 5400 grains, 1/20th of which is 270 grains]. Under  
Edward VI. practically the shilling had only 20 grains! This did not last long.  
After 1600, 20 contained 5328 grains of fine silver, and 5760 grs standard silver.  
1. or a shilling had  $85\frac{58}{62}$  grains of fine silver, and 92  $\frac{58}{62}$  standard silver.  
Rees says - one shilling 264 grains silver, 28 Ed E. 1769. 82  $\frac{58}{62}$  V. and one penny 118.  
118. 36. 40 gr. 5 Edw. VI. 1550; 6 Ed VI. 88; 2. Edw. 89; 43. Ed. 86 to 1800 - after.



Queen Mary, one writer says, "wanted bowels". She seems to have felt no tenderness to her father, James II.

The Revolution made a great scramble for pensions places and court distinctions. Many could not be satisfied. The disinterested patriot were but few, many turned traitors.

The abp of Cant. and 7 bishops, some lords & commons refused to take the oaths of allegiance to William and Mary. They were Non-jurors.

p. 138. Every Statesman & Politician was corrupt, from the highest to the lowest, or almost all. The writer says that  $\frac{2}{3}$  of public men were incapable of honor and faith. They were ready to go for William or James or any body else, if they could better their interests thereby.

Infamous conduct of James & French bishops - ready for any atrocity. The falsehood & deception of great men in England & France was shocking. Assassination was justified by many. Plots against William 1696 - 35 assassins! - Marlborough was a more unprincipled man, "a double traitor"

Gratitude was unknown at the Court

Queen Anne had "a singularly weak and essentially vulgar royal mind". The Duchess of Marlborough "entertained a most sovereign contempt for the queen" & she had known her 40 years. She had obstinacy & duplicity.

Another general scramble for offices when George I came in

"For a King, to break the 1<sup>st</sup> commandment was so universal a practice as to excite little or no attention any where, and the morality or decency of the nobility of England was not in those days at a very elevated point; royal mistresses would have been tolerated without difficulty if they had been handsome & English". Referring to George I

Bp. Hoadly said he feared that "the ardent & intemperate zeal which many displayed for the interest of the church was principally incited by a regard to their own interest, and by a secret attachment to the power, the honor & emoluments which appertain to it." 1718

Bp. Atterbury, a traitor & a false man. Behaved most shamefully in France, as an enemy to the Pretender. Died in Paris 1731.

"William III was not a very faithful nor very tender husband".



Mistresses. The Elector of Hanover, father of George I kept mistress or mistresses "like all the princes of his time." He assassinated Konigsmark, who paid some attention to the wife of George I. never saw England, but was imprisoned in Germany, & died in 1726.

George I had several mistresses, fat & lean. He had many vices & infirmities, but considerable ability as a ruler and politician. George II. destroyed the will of his father, & George I had destroyed two or three wills of those made in favor of George II.

George II. was fiery & passionate, more than his father, meanly & ambitious, - his person diminutive and his features pinched and hard. He had courage as well as George I - could speak English - was sociable & accessible: had a sense of justice & honor & more temperate than his father. George I was fond of strong politics & would disclose state secrets over the bowl. George II. was regular in habits.

He paid hardly more respect to the y<sup>e</sup> & the common man than his father, or then was paid by the other European potentates, but he chose his mistresses with more taste than his father, & was a kind, submissive husband! His wife was superior to him, & his mistress was amiable over the principal one. This principal mistress was Henrietta dau. of Sir Henry Hobart. She first married Mr Howard, & continued his wife. He sold to George his honor & the possession of his wife for 100£ a year. Her father became a Baron & an earl, & her husband an Earl. Some who wanted favors courted the wife, some the mistress. Swift & Pope praised the mistress: also Chastiford, & others. Yet all the poets & wits turned against her when they found she did not meddle with state affairs and could not serve them. She was averse to all politics. When Caroline governed, was devoted to or favored Walpole. She died 1737.

p. 166. "Drunkenness had always been the worse defect of the English people." Still so in 1736. An act laying great duties on Gin, & occasioned opposition and riots. Many Gin mobs. Much smuggling.

Frederic, Prince of Wales, son of George II. was a brute and a fool. He & his father hated each other most cordially if he & another no better.

Walpole was always for peace, & preserved it.



# Pictorial History of England 1688-1760

**Patriotism.** Walpole said in a speech 1741.

*MS. 2. 29. 11*  
*11. 17. 81*  
*6. 11. 81*  
 "The very idea of true patriotism is lost. A patriot, Sir? why patriots spring up like mushrooms, I could raise fifty of them within 24 hours. I have raised many of them in one night. It is but refusing to gratify an unreasonable or insatiable demand, and up starts a patriot!"

**Wages paid by Charles, the Pretender's son, to his soldiers in Scotland & England. 1745.** Captain 1<sup>st</sup> crown a day; Lieut. 2<sup>d</sup>. Ensign 1<sup>st</sup> 6. private 6d. 5<sup>th</sup> rank, composed of gentlemen 1<sup>st</sup> a day.

**Clubs.** Country people rose against Charles. 1745. but had no arms but clubs & staves, "because the game law forbid the use of arms" to them.

*Con. 9. 1434.*  
**Crucelties.** Such atrocities as were committed in Scotland under the Duke of Cumberland, 1746, had not been committed in Great Britain since the dark ages. The Duke received the title of the Butcher. An English General Hawley was called the Hangman.

Pitt was in those days insensible to shame or contrition. Base ingratitude of him & of his ministers.

"The whole tone of society, in the middle of the last century, was too low & mean" to appreciate what was honest & honorable.

Great severities were exercised towards the leaders of the rebels by statesmen and judges. They were hanged, beheaded, drawn & quartered, and their heads were exhibited on the walls of cities. The nation had not advanced in humanity since 1715. Great numbers died in prison. In one place 9 persons were hanged, their bowels torn out & heart cast into the fire. Similar executions took place elsewhere. 80 ghastly heads were kept & exhibited in different parts of the north. 1746.

Lord Palmerino was a shrewd, brave man - joyous & witty to the last.

*p. 136*  
 "From the nobleman who held the white staff & the great seal, down to the humbled tide waiter & quaggar, what would now be called gross corruption was practiced without disguise and without reproach. Taxes, places, commissions, patronage were daily sold in market over-stuffed by the great dignitaries of the Court, & every clerk in every department imitated to the best of his power the vile example." Macaulay's History, 1885 & before & after.



"The Revolution of 1688, in church & state, was a victory of Protestantism over popery, or rather of the ~~great~~ protestantism of the Anglican and Scottish Church over the principle of absolutism (which is the essence of popery) alike in religion and in politics."

The Restoration of 1660 was in spirit & effect the restoration of absolutism and popery - not formally, but both were introduced in disguise, & the preparation for their complete establishment was begun.

The Revolution was far from being acceptable to the generality of the clergy. They did not foresee the consequences of their opposition to James; and a vast majority would have stopped the wheel of ~~it~~ if they could; and probably a majority of the nation would have been with them. The mass of the people can hardly be said to have taken any share in it; & the majority of the Peers was avowedly hostile to the position of James. The revolution of 1688 was the act of the House of Commons - they had arrived at a precipice & could not retreat, and so made a forced leap over it.

The established Church had always stood by the royal authority in its contests with other powers of the State; except when it was itself attacked. Of 26 bishops & abbots, 7 were absent from Parliament at the revolution; 11 took the oath of allegiance, <sup>but with</sup> and 8 refused or withdrew. Of the 11, only 2 were really in favor of transferring the crown from James to William. - Yet the generality of the clergy took the oath, <sup>though</sup> with reservations and restrictions. - Burnet imputes much of the general corruption of principle that was spreading through the nation to the conduct of the ministers. The 8 bishops were, 6 put out of their sees, in 1691, and two died in 1689. About 400 inferior clergy followed the 8 bishops in refusing the oath & lost their livings. These and the people who adhered to them were generally Jacobites. Wm. appointed some very good men for bishops.

Act of Toleration - experienced little opposition at the time, though there was considerable feeling against it. It did not include papists & Socinians.

Acts for tolerating & for persecuting were often the work of heartless politicians, to favor their own selfish projects, or were encouraged by them, from mere selfishness.



## Religion—continued.

con. 9. 427. Burnet says, 1700, that "the greater part of the clergy studied to ~~blow~~ up the fire" of persecution against the dissenters again. The names of High Church & Low Church began, the latter name given by the former to the latter as a nickname. Low Churchmen were the Whigs & High Churchmen the Tories of ecclesiastical politics. The latter opposed to the Settlement made in 1688, and to the toleration of dissenters.

Both of these parties in power acted very differently from the same party in opposition. They changed their minds upon a change of circumstances—This refers more to politics.

Methodism, he says, <sup>(Pictorial)</sup> was chiefly accepted among the working classes. It is the poor-man's religion.



Coin in England - 1695. The nominal value of silver coins in England was above 5 millions of pounds, or 5,600,000<sup>l</sup>. clipped and unclipped. The clipped money was about 4 millions, and this had been clipped and reduced in weight so that its value was reduced five shillings and 11 shillings. The four millions were really worth only £2,181,000; and the loss to the nation by calling it in was £1,818,000.

[See Com. & Mss. Vol. 1. 145. 146. then the loss is £2,700,000, & depreciation only 25 per cent.]

Prices of Wheat - 10 years ending 1695, average 39/6. gr.  
 10 years ending 1705, 43/ 10 years ending 1715 " 44/ "  
 20 " " 1735, 35/ 10 " " 1745 " 32/  
 10 " " 1755, 33/

Exports 1699 - £6,788. 16 - almost 1/2 of wool  
 1709. 5,913. 357. - 1725. 7,395. 908  
 1712. 6,868. 847. 1726. 7,488. not quite 8 mill on an average

Imports from France 1686.

88,953 reams of copy paper @ 5/ 20 reams cap 7/6  
 1,659 " of larger do @ 43. 20 " blue @ 10/  
 1,487 cases of glass for windows @ 36/ 1,500 cases of wine @ 17. 10  
 1,188 ells Tapestry @ 8/ 16,648 tons wine @ 17. 10  
 4266 lbs Garden Seeds @ 8<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> lb. - 400 millstones @ 10 tra  
 400 lbs Rose leaves @ 1/ - 302 lbs Coral @ 3/4

Comparison of France & England - from the "British Merchant," published 1713.

Labor in France is <sup>not</sup> ~~little~~ more than half as high as in England. Beef & mutton but half as high in France as in E. though in Paris there is less difference.

Drink. The French laborers spend but little for drink. "Our people (English) spend half of their money in drink."

Soldiers in France have only 5 sols a day, which is 3 pence English; ours have 8 pence.

France maintains 300,000 soldiers, & for the same money we maintain 112,500.

Ragwort in France has 2 sols a day (not over 5 farthings) Ragwort in England has 4 pence a day making lusty gools (5 pence) an ell in France; and 1/2 pence in England.

In England, if a husband, wife & 3 or 4 children can earn 20<sup>l</sup> in a year, they never ask relief from the parish.



## Pictorial History of England 1688-1760

Molasses - England exported to Holland 1669 £57,513.  
None in 1703. What was this?

Linens - imported from Holland 1669 - £170,972.  
" " " " 1703. £13,701.

Pe. petuanas } Exported to Holland 1703, £798,527.  
Serges }  
Stuffs } Weavers.

Thos. Ten. Dacombant says about 1713. "all our neighbors as well as ourselves have increased in luxurious ways of living. Those who heretofore had pewter, now have plate; those who used trenchers, wooden plates and earthen ware now have pewter - all of which is visible within 40 years, & as made a great call for Tin, I think there is an error in this date - perhaps should be 1613.

Tobacco from Virginia 1700 to 1709. 28,758,000 lbs. annually  
Re-exported 17,598,000 lbs. English consumption, 11,000,000 lbs.  
Present consumption only 16 million pounds.  
(Con. 9. 277.)

Calicoes, painted, dyed, printed, stained - could not be used in England - were re-exported - very many to Holland.  
Used chiefly by middle class.

Linens. many from Germany.

Wool shorn in England 1697. value at 2 millions £.  
Worth about 4 times as much when manufactured.

Vessels (private) in England 1702 - 3,281 - making 261,222 tons.  
or 80 tons each. Seamen 27,000.  
Royal Navy 1702. 159,017 tons. - 45,000 sailors, 1695.

Paper. little but brown made in England 1688.  
war & duties on French paper induced the English to make white paper. In 1713,  $\frac{2}{3}$  or  $\frac{3}{4}$  of the paper used in England 400,000 reams was made there or 300 reams of English and 100,000 reams from Italy & Holland (this during war.)

Rags. English used only the Rags of that kingdom.  
Were formerly cast away as useless.

Sugar. British Sugar Island produced 1734. about 134 millions of pounds. Some years later, G. Britain consumed 94 millions of pounds.  
(Con. 9. 349.)

Tea. Home consumption 1711. 141,995 lbs.  
In 1720, 237,994 lbs. 1730, 537,046 pounds.  
In 1735, 1,380,199 lbs. 1745, 2,209,183 pounds.  
In 1756, 2,738,136 lbs. 1760, 2,193,613 pounds, a falling off in 1760, but only temporary.

The steady increase of tea drinking is good evidence of the advancing refinement & comfort of the people - "the drink that cheers but not inebriates."



*Roads* - were generally in a bad state. down to 1760, except in the vicinity of great towns. In 1754 turnpikes were hardly seen except in the vicinity of London.

Musc. 8. 393  
2. 1155.

" E. 371

Coins of Henry & Mary.

of Wms & Mary.  
of Gold, 5 $\frac{1}{2}$  pieces, 40/. Guineas,  $\frac{1}{2}$  Guine  
of Silver - usual pieces from crowns to pennies.  
of Tin.  $\frac{1}{2}$  pence & farthings, 1690.  
of Copper.  $\frac{1}{2}$  pence & farthings, 1694  
the same.

Coins of Anne - the same.

Coins of Anne - the same.  
Coins of George II. With others, were groats, 3d. 2d. & 1d.  
Pieces of silver.

Agriculture.

Agriculture.  
Mowing Machine introduced into England from  
Holland 1760. It was denounced from the pulpit in  
Scotland as impious.  
much towards 1766.

Scottland as inferous.  
Turnip Husbandry was extended much toward 1766.  
C. 2. 155. The Cotton and labor began

Gardens increased. The cottage of a laborer began to have ground for vegetables; and there was a great increase in the quantity & variety of vegetables consumed by the laboring class. The farmer had greens, peas & beans for his servants. By 1750, the cultivation of the

Potatoe was pretty general in England

Green House - since 1684 - for plants in winter only  
Glass Roofs, began in 1717 - for plants all the year

Green House - new 1864 - for plants all the year  
Glass Roofs, began in 1717 - for plants all the year

Cotton. From about 1600, a fabric of ~~flax~~  
cotton (the latter from the Levant & E. Indies)

Musc. 1. 267

" 4.269

and cotton (the latter from India) was made at Manchester & other places in Lancashire - with cotton, warp linen. It was a domestic manuf. - time then & long after continued to increase; about a million pounds of cotton imported 1750, &c; & considerable cotton yarn was imported by E. I. company. A weaver kept three women spinning with at the wheel; he using ~~cotton~~ yarn for warps. The spinners could not keep up with the loom. Up to 1760, no cloth was made in England entirely of cotton.

linen trade in Ireland encouraged 1698 - it was  
highly among the Protestants, Latins, Scavens and

Con. g. 337

health and at funerals were to be of linen. Long after  
this, all yarn was spun on the common spinning  
wheel — somewhat later linen was extensively  
made in Scotland.

М. 2. 43

M. 5. 93

Eastern Ware. Weelwood, Improvements began about 1760  
Before this, much was imported.

Mer. 1. 50.

Best window glass imported from France before 1689. & after.



## Fine Arts in a low state.

London Houses before the fire were built of timber projecting story over story, till the narrow streets were almost closed at the top; "an ill and uneasy paving" a malicious & troublesome disposal of the spouts & gutters above.

Rebuilt of brick and stone. Rain water pipes took the place of "malicious spouts" 10,000 houses erected in 4 years

Wren had to adapt his new churches to the forms of worship of the Church of England.

Churches. Wren's churches are of three classes

1st. Domed churches, with nave & side aisles - as St. Stephens, Walbrook.

2d. Rectangular plans without columns, as St. Agnes, of the Ionic order

3d. These differ from ordinary Halls in little but the extraneous fittings - as St. Edmund the King, & St. Lawrence, Jewry.

Steeple, spires, lanterns, Campanile.

Wren put his strength into these. He applied Italian detail to Gothic forms (the semi-gothic of France in 16th century, but in a mode which belongs to Wren. Spires of Bow & St. Bride's

Wren's towers & steeples are various - many kinds.

Blenheim, the palace of Marlborough, was ordered by the Parliament, part was paid for, but Vanbrugh & his workmen did much at their own cost & charges. Neither the nation nor the duke would pay them!! Vanbrugh had provoked the Duchess!

50 new churches ordered by Parliament 10. Anne James Gibbs, a distinguished architect, built St. Martin in the Fields - a Greek temple modified.

The tower & spire are elevated upon the roof which is a fault - and this vicious practice has been followed almost universally. Wren never committed this error - his steeples always stand upon the ground.

Musical Concerts, vocal & instrumental

were given in London in latter part of 17th century - before 1700

Italian Opera, introduced 1703.

"The Lawfulness of Music in Churches" was a question of controversy at the close of 17th & beginning of 18th century. Much learning & some intolerance were displayed. The organists continued to play & singers to chant.



Pictorial History of England - 1688-1760.

Arithmetical Manuals in English, of a low order were printed before 1522.

MS. 3. 125

Soon after 1522. William Recorde wrote Arithmetical works or an Arithmetick in English of a higher Order - he wrote on Geometry, & was the first to introduce Algebra into England - supposed to be the first Englishman who adopted the Copernican system.

"Grounde of Arts" by Recorde, a work on Arithmetick, was first published 1551. and kept its ground as a school book till about 1700.

"Pathway to Knowledge" by Recorde, published 1531. is a treatise of Geometry, with some part of Euclid.

"Castle of Knowledge" by Recorde, published in 1556 is a treatise on Astronomy - where he exhibits his Copernican principles.

MS. 3. 125

"Whitstone of Wit" by Recorde, published in 1553 is a treatise on Algebra.

1st English Translation of Euclid appeared 1573 by the famous astrologer & magician John Dee, assisted by another.

The Copernican System was not generally received in England till after 1600. The Ptolemaic system was adhered to by writers 1585, 1590, 1594, 1599, &c. and the Copernican denounced.

Napiers Logarithms - published 1614.

Harveys Circulation of the blood (De motu Sanguinis et Cordis,) was published 1619.

MS. 9. 242

His views were received with general incredulity by the medical profession. Scarcely an anatomist or medical man passed 40 years old, at first received the doctrine of the circulation of the blood.

The Veins, it was universally believed, ~~then~~ as in earlier ages, were ~~some~~ stacks of stagnant or unprogressive blood, & the Arteries nothing more than air tubes.

Harveys Book was exposed to popular & professional opposition & odium; it was looked upon as a daring attack upon antiquity, common sense and nature herself.

Medicine. Arnott's Elements of Physics says. "A person who tries to imagine what the science of medicine could have been while it took no account of this fact, (circulation of the blood,) on which as a basis, all certain reasoning about the phenomena of life must rest, is prepared for what old medical books exhibit, of the writhings of human reason in attempt to explain & to form theories while a fatal error was mixed with every supposition."



Pictorial History of England 1688, 1760

Gerard's Herbal 1597, is mostly a hasty compilation from Dodonaeus, & has little scientific or literary merit.

Natural Philosophy } were in a barbarous  
or Physical Science } state in England  
as late as 1660. The discoveries made  
by some learned men were unknown or rejected  
by English speculators & professional men.

m. 18 }  
p. 314 } "New Principles of Philosophy" were published  
in 1663, by Doct. Gideon Harvey, who stood nearly  
at the head of his profession, having been physician  
to the forces in Flanders.

His ~~views~~ are founded mainly upon the old  
Aristotelian & mediæval notions, and he  
endeavors to refute recent innovators. He  
attacks ~~Robt~~ Helmont, Descartes, Copernicus,  
and others, & quotes Scripture to sustain his opinions.  
He says the earth is the center of the world &  
attempts to prove it; and that the earth does  
not move. He thinks the motion of the earth  
~~is~~ is a notion too absurd to require confutation.  
He affirms that the earth is by far larger  
~~and heavier~~ than the sun.

m. 16 }  
352 } Women. This writer has much to say about  
women. He maintains that weight is partly occasioned  
by heat - that the same substance is heavier or lighter  
according as it is hotter or colder. He thought women  
had less heat than men & of course less weight, &  
so swam easier, & were longer in sinking & drowning  
than men - was 1/3 heavier, & stronger, he supposed, than women.  
(referring to those of the same size, apparently,) and had  
more heat. He says women had been wrongfully  
judged to be witches because they were longer in  
sinking. He admits that their coats conduce somewhat  
to it. - Owing to this lightness & want of density, he  
says women die faster than men; their bodies are  
loose & porous, and they do not attain to great age.  
He says men of 60 years attain less & slower than  
most women from their 35th year - that a man  
of 60 & a woman of 20 "grow deformed in equal time".  
A man's consistent age may last out the beauties  
of two or three women, one after the other.

Women are more fierce, furious & rash than  
men - their spirits & heat move swift. "This swiftne is  
the cause of their sudden rages, nimble tongues  
and rash wits"

Such notions then generally prevailed among those  
even of reading & education in England at the date of  
the incorporation of the Royal Society, July 15. 1662.  
P. 6 entered April 22. 1663.



*cit. vol. 2. p. 1657  
" 4. 322  
" 4. 330.  
con. 9. 278.*

Royal Society - originated in the meeting of persons in London, or an Association of persons, about 1645, who met to discuss philosophical subjects - afterwards then was such a meeting at Oxford, 1650, &c. The London Society continued to meet - had regular meetings 1659 & 1660 & 61. The Royal Society was actually founded Nov. 28. 1660. There were then only 12 persons considered as members. All others had to be proposed and balloted for - many were added. Each was to pay 10/ on his admission and 1/ a week besides.

Only one Nobleman appears among their early names, viz. Lord Viscount Brouncker - some Sirs & Drs. but most men are simply M<sup>r</sup>s. Lord Hatton appears a little later.

Incorporated July 15. 1662. Second charter Apr. 22. 1663. May 21. 1663, the number of members was 115. Several Lords then in the list - which was probably owing to the patronage of the Court.

Society began to publish "Philosophical Transactions", March 1665, which have been continued to the present day, with some exceptions, viz. Jan. 1679 to Jan. 1683, 4 years (partly supplied by Hooke) Dec. 1687 to Jan. 1691, & some short intervals making the year more previous to 1695 Oct.

The publications contain a great deal that belongs only to the curiosities or popular pastimes of Science.

## Medicine

Dr. Thomas Sydenham (born 1624, died 1689) discarded more theory & applied himself to the observation of nature & facts, His practice & writings mark an era in the healing art. There was but little innovation among British practitioners, in the treatment or doctrine of diseases, after his time, till the era of Cullen & Brown, after 1760.

Botany. Ray published the first volume of his *Historia Plantarum* in 1686.

Botanical & Physical Garden at Oxford founded 1632.

The Revolution of the Puritan, & both were unfavorable to higher literature. The Revolution of 1688 & to higher literature. and the latter extinguished what was poetical more completely than the former.

English Literature grew & flourished in the favor & protection of the Court, & its spirit & affections were covertly in this aim. It drooped & withered when Court-favor was withdrawn. The public did not afford it warmth & shelter. Between 1640 & 1660, Milton is almost the only republican writer who was a poet or imaginative writer. - From 1660 to 1688, a period of laxity & frivolity & insincerity, very few powerful minds were raised - much fewer than in the 10 years of high deeds 1640 to 1650. The writers that shed light on William's reign were with few exceptions, those trained in the period, beginning 1640.



## Costume

Time of William III. The dress of the upper classes during this reign differed but little from that which had become fashionable near the close of the reign of Charles II. Strait square cut coats, and waistcoats of equal length, reaching to the knee: breeches fastened beneath the knee but hidden by the long stockings drawn up over them; long neckcloths of lace; shoes rising above the instep & fastened by a small strap over the instep, passing through a buckle placed rather on one side; hats bent up or cocked all round & trimmed with feathers; fringed gloves, and monstrous Periwigs. This was the dress of the *à la mode* of London.

Female Dress. — Stomacher formally laced. Sleeves of gown straight & tight, with a cuff above the elbow in imitation of men. Cuffs & flounces of unbelows border the petticoat; the crown is looped completely back, so that the whole of the petticoat is seen. Head dress high in front composed of a cap, the lace of which rose in three or more tiers, almost to a point above the forehead the hair ~~comb~~ <sup>is</sup> disposed in rows of wavy curls one above the other. Hair powder sometimes worn but not generally.

911.14.300. Cuffs were carried by both sexes — very small and sometimes ornamented with rows of ribbons.opard skin muffs were fashionable 1702

(Dress of the Community did not change within reign. His picture of costume of Nobility & Gentry, 1681 & 1691, from original prints, differs a little from the description but not much. The coat cuffs are huge. Nothing seen under the coat from knee to neck except the neckcloth, with bows & ends hanging down. Shoes high, steel, & leather rising up (say 6 inches) almost perpendicular, above the instep.

Formals with gown fastened back & petticoat displayed. Sleeves of gown not straight nor tight, but gathered & swelled. One female has a high head dress; another, a sort of hood; one shows all the gown & only the inner edge of the petticoat. One has a little round muffs, another not.



## Costume of the Commonalty - times of William.

From prints of 1689, & after.

Men. There is an imitation of the higher classes. There is the long coat down to the knee & great cuffs, but plain. Shoes of a fashion like the others; and neckcloths also. No wigs. Hats some cocked some not. A broad belt & sword.

Women. Hats with rather stouching brims. Some cloth under the hat that comes down over the ears & is tied under the chin, with ends hanging down. Gowns with large cuffs above elbow. One has a white apron. No petticoat seen. — One of a lower class of females has a sort of bonnet on her head — looks much like a modern bonnet — covers ears & cheeks & is open in front — neck bare behind it.

## Reign of Anne.

Not much alteration in costume —

Men's Hats became smaller & were more regularly cocked on three sides. Large cuffs of coats came nearer the wrists. Broad sword belt had gone, & the sword was fastened in the stiffened skirts of the square cut coat. Blue or scarlet silk stockings with gold or silver clocks. Shoes with high red heels & small buckles; Velvet garters over the stockings below the knee & fastened by buckle on side. Campaign wig from France — very full, curled 18 inches in length to the point, with drop locks. Some horse hair in wigs. Powder was worn.

Dress of a youth in middle life — Advertised 1703. Lock hair. Dark brown double breasted frize coat with black buttons & buttonholes. ["double breasted on each side" — so the coat is described] druzet waistcoat, red shag breeches with black stripes, & black stockings. —

Some who did not wear wigs wore their own hair in long curls to resemble them. The Rarnilie wig was named from that battle; also there was a Rarnilie cock to the hat.

Mourning Rings worn 1703, & black silk facings to coats of all colors.

Women's Dress — much as in preceding reign until 1711, when two great changes took place. The high caps, tower & commode were abandoned for a natural & elegant coiffure. — The introduction of the Hoop — gave an enormous size. Patching the face began 1680, now carried to a great extent. Saeque & Hood still worn — the latter of various colors, as blue, yellow, pink, spotted. Aprons, Tuckers, stays, Scarf, clogs, waistcoat &c. are in adornments.



# Pictorial History of England - 1688-1760.

Costume in Anne's reign - continued.

A print of General's Costume in time of Anne 1706-1709 represents men with a coat to the knees, but the waistcoat only comes about midway on the thigh. Other things as Describe. Coats here & elsewhere have buttons from top to bottom.

Females have aprons, rather small

George I. - Costume - no great changes.

Wigs maintained their ground. Powder more general

Hooped Petticoats continued; Scarlet Cloaks with hoods, termed cardinals; and masks when walking. Beaver Hats. Sack still in vogue

Picture of General Costume - much as before. Coats to the knees, with huge cuffs

Women had small aprons - dress spread by hoops. Hood or something similar on the head. The cloak was short.

George II. Costume.

Coats of men down to knees. Waistcoat, middle of thigh. Short with large buckles. Hats variously cocked.

Females. Enormous hoops. "Gipsy straw Hats" unseen 1745, and little bonnets. These under the chin. Aprons, sometimes long, sometimes short. Patches much used.

Whigs & Tories under Anne & George. Females were distinguished by their patches. At the theatre female Whigs & Tories sat on opposite sides of the house, and their party feelings were announced by the color of their hoods.

## Military.

Quirass & buffcoat abandoned about 1702.

Scarlet & blue Uniform established under Anne.

Musket & socket bayonet took place of pike under do.

Cartouch box superseded the Bandolier in do.

Red & white feathers appear in do.

Black cockade appears under George II.



Pictorial History of England - 1760.  
Furniture.

English Mansions: "The Commencement of  
18th Century (query, 1700 to 1725, or how long?) com-  
pleted the furnishing of English ~~houses~~ mansions  
with nearly every convenience or luxury they  
now have - generally of elegant form & durable  
material. The furniture of that period is now  
sought after, & imitations made.

Macogany was the principal novelty intro-  
duced. A flock first sent to England about 1700.  
It rapidly superseded all other woods for cabinet  
making; & was used to embellish churches, & other  
edifices.

Porcelain from China for use & ornament;  
and in addition, that from Holland, Germany, France,  
After 1712, then were candlesticks, portlands, hand bowls  
& other articles for the toilet & writing table; and these  
were added to the dinner tea & coffee services  
which were composed of this beautiful material.  
(Porcelain from Holland, Germany, France  
he seems to mean - both for these services, and  
for the other articles.

Flintglass - plenty made in England by 1700 -  
as decanters, drinking glasses, &c.

Plate Glass still brought from Venice.

Brussels Carpets, so called, made at Kidderminster 1745.

Pictures of Furniture - in time of William III & Anne  
Chairs, armed & unarmed; high straight backs, generally  
with much carving & ornament. Bottoms are  
various but seem not a movable cushion in  
general - some cushions perhaps.

Foot stools - seem stuffed on the top

High stools for seats, square & handsome.

A sofa, so called - seems to have an end, but no back

Turn pieces on a frame, or in a case.

Looking Glasses, oval, & square.

Candlesticks.

Under Wm. & Anne & George, I find in pictures  
the tall pieces of furniture before noticed  
elegant & rich. They seem to be called (Cabinets

that word Cabinet, is under three pictures,  
(with other words,) on which this large piece of furniture  
appears. Some have doors in front - some seem to  
have drawers. They are much higher than the tallest chairs.

It was fashionable in time of Wm. I, to have small cups  
sauce, jars, mustard, mandarin, &c. of porcelain  
about mantle piece & elsewhere.

"Japanese cabinets & Folding Screens" were much in fashion.  
What were these cabinets?

P.S. The tall cabinets, generally had doors (some had drawers outside), & within may have  
had shelves & drawers - possibly some were wardrobes.



Club Houses & Chocolate Houses & Coffee Houses } were very abundant in London before 1700—especially club houses. Each party had its own places of resort.

For a penny, a man could get at a coffee house a cup of coffee, read the newspapers of the day, and the newest pamphlets on morals & politics. The Whigs established mug-houses for citizens & tradesmen about 1713, when strong liquors were plenty, which led to riotous excesses, attacks on the Tories, &c. They were suppressed by Parliament.

In time of Anne & George I. men generally dressed, looked, acted & studied, in reference to the tastes & humors of the fair sex.—Now love is an episode rather than the great subject of life.

"The morals of gallantry, during this period, had undergone little, or, perhaps, no improvement, and the taint which Charles II. & his licentious court had inflicted on the nation still festered, especially among the aristocracy." — "The plays, the novels, & secret memoirs of the 18th century exhibit such scenes of depravity, as after making a ample allowance for exaggeration, fully equal those of the preceding age." "Until George III. a royal mistress continued to be maintained & count as a state appendage, by which the public immorality was kept in countenance; and right revenue ~~generates~~ as well as grave senators did not disdain to watch the politics and profit by the favor of the predominating lady of the day!"

Female Education, during this period 1688 to 1760 corresponded with the superficial frivolity of the other sex, being confined to flimsy external accomplishments, — chiefly a very little music, some skill in dancing, and arithmetic sufficient to play cards. A fashionable lady was thought to be learned enough if she could ~~fairly~~ read & write. Her reading consisted of sentimental, worthless, ephemeral works of fiction, & plays, which a lady could not go without a mask. When a play was very gross, ladies sometimes stole into the gallery. It was unfashionable to be religious, & if a lady of ~~town~~ went to church, it was to see company & deal ~~with~~ from her pew. More commonly her Sundays were spent in walks, Park and at evening parties & card playing. The gambling spirit was the great female vice of the age.



The Depraved Manners of High Life descended to Lackeys & Servants. It could not be expected that they would be better than their masters. The charges against valets, footmen, &c. of being arrogant, dishonest, lazy, & luxurious were universal.

Female Servants had accusations against them equally local & numerous. The country girl was initiated into all the arts & doings of the city & generally, by the latter. —

A writer, 1735, says of the servants of the middle class, that their wages, from 30/6 to 40/ a year, have increased of late to 6/8 and 8/6 per annum and an ordinary tradesman cannot afford to keep one, but his wife, who ought help him in his shop, must do the drudgery of household affairs, because our servant drenches are so puffed up with pride that they think they never go fine enough. "It is a hard matter to know the mistress from the maid by their dress."

Boys were not much better instructed than girls. The substance of a finished education for a young gentleman was a little Latin & less Greek beaten into him abroad or at home. He merely went through a few fragmentary portions of the classics with dancing & a little music & was then qualified for <sup>any</sup> thing. Science was out of the question. The grand finish was the tour of Europe, by which he acquired the fashions, frivolities & vices of other countries.

Wild Off shoots were abundant, as Swaggers, Beaux, Darby Captains, Posh Captains, Cock & Scott Captains, Nickers, Whippers, &c. These latter were the most turbulent & atrocious of any of these villains. London was full of these lecherous characters who committed daring outrages.

Superstition & credulity flourished in the early part of 18th century as vigorously perhaps as in the middle ages. Almost every old mansion was ghost haunted, & every parish was tormented by a witch. Fortune telling was a thriving occupation in London, & the customers were sometimes women and even men of the highest rank.

Dr. Henry Calculated nativities, Steele almost ruined himself in seeking after the grand magisterium, Whiston believed that Mary Tofts brought forth a warren of rabbits,



Medical Quacks were possible more numerous & throwing them astrolagus & fortune tellers. Some became wealthy & rode about in a style, <sup>out</sup> trying that of the rich nobility. One used to ride his circuits in a coach drawn by 6 bay horses: and a calash and four followed & then a chasse-mareine and four - he had four footmen in yellow livery, & four in blue trimmed with silver. He cured every human disease and sold his packets for 6 pence.

Every street lane was filled with quack advertisements, & every trick was adopted to get practice & money. Some had studied 30 years; some had received their knowledge by divine intuition. "The seventh son was a man of healing, but the seventh son of a seventh son was an infallible physician."

Respectable chemists & druggists indulged in the same style in advertising the miracles of their laboratory, and their medicines were not only infallible cures, but might be taken with pleasure & delight.

From Newspapers 1700 to 1720, a few specimens of these announcements: -

Angelic Snuff cured all diseases of the head  
besides deafness, megrims, palsy apoplexy & gout.

Royal Snuff equally potent  
a medicine which cured the vapors in ladies  
clo which made lean folks fat.

Electuary, which renovated weak memories, & recalled  
all the past in an instant

Drops banished hypochondria -

Lotions to remove warts, pimples, to whiten the skin, &  
transform the whole complexion.

Distilled white water to renovate & beautify wigs:

Duels were frequent, arising from politics, love, &c.  
Accidental Encounters were frequent also near  
haunts of dissipation.

Authors could not succeed without an influential patron. The man of genius besieged the door of some great man.

Readers as yet were few. Science was hardly a marketable commodity. Lighter literature, as essay writing, tales & poetry formed the staple of the trade of authorship.

Most authors were reckless & eccentric, and so were a dissipated & dissipated generation. Their usual habitation was a poor garret.



*m. 187  
h. 319* Merchants. The mercantile class advanced in wealth & power, & was ambitious of aristocratic distinctions. Some were knighted; and all of any consideration, <sup>in London</sup> had the title of Esquire, or at least, of Gentleman, appended to their names. Even clerks assumed these designations, and Steele complains that England was a nation of Esquires.

London Merchants, as yet, generally had their ware houses or counting houses fronting the street, with their dwellings behind, which were entered by a small court.

Tradesmen in London, (next below merchants.) *Con. g. 342* They were very numerous, & competition was keen, & various tricks & puffing advertisements were resorted to. Sign boards were splendid, & some animal or object was commonly blazoned on them—something often capricious & absurd. They projected far into the street & swung & creaked with every blast. At length, they were ordered to be placed on the side of the building, about 1744. There was a rage for splendid signs.

[By Tradesmen, he evidently means retailers or what we call traders, booksellers, grocers, &c. Millinery shops were attended by showy young women.

*Con. g. 286.* Hawkers & female hucksters were plenty; and shops where articles were disposed of by raffle. This gambling was imitated by humble persons; and dice & the wheel of fortune initiated boys into the doctrine of chances.

*Con. g. 286.* Thimble rigging was a trade in the opium streets. The national love of setting was thus cherished.

*Sup. 166* Strong liquors were peddled in the street upon stalls, wheelbarrows, or carried from place to place.

Drinking Houses were at least as numerous in London as at present, though the population was little more than  $\frac{1}{3}$  of its present amount.

In 1725 there were in the metropolis alone, exclusive of the city & Southwark, 6187 houses "wherein Geneva & other strong waters were sold by retail" being in some parishes every 10th house, in others every 7th and in one, the largest, every 5th house. Besides these, were the liquor sellers on butchers' stalls, and wheelbarrows.

*Con. g. 322* Down to 1760, London had much of the rudeness and discomfort of earlier ages. The streets were mostly unpaved. Each trader paved the entrance to his shop in his own way. The edge of the street raised off for foot passengers was called the pavement. Kennels were open each side of the street, and swilled into indignation in wet weather, & sent forth exhalations in summer heat.



LONDON continued.

Con. 9. 322 Fair weather was scarcely tolerable in London from the clouds of dust; but a rainy day was worse, and the streets were soon covered with liquid mud.

Pickpockets were numerous - at churches, markets, theatres, ballrooms; purses, snuff boxes & watches disappeared strangely. - these articles.

Beggars were in throngs - clamorous & disgusting - and often thieves also.

p. 128. Lamps. In 1736, London had only 1000 lamps, which burnt only till midnight, & that only  $\frac{1}{2}$  the year. From March 25 to Sept 29, they were not lighted at all. Larkboys were in every public street, with light, but they were often in league with thieves, & conducted persons into an ambush.

Con. 9. 339. Seelers were used by ladies & effeminate men & others. The beavers were Irish. They & the Sedan were hired for 1/6 an hour, or a guinea a week.

Boats were much used to cross the Thames & to go up & down on the river. A man could be doved any where above the bridge to Westminster with one rower for 3d & with two rowers for 6d. - & below the bridge to the lowest part of the city for the same.

7. 11. 145 Watering Places. It became fashionable during this period to spend the summer in the neighborhood of medicinal Springs, where parties, balls & festivals were frequent. Bath had long been a chief place of resort, under Beau Nash. It now eclipsed all other places; sometimes about 8000 families visited it in a season. - next to Bath were Tunbridge & Epsom Wells. all manner of plays & diversions at Tunbridge. Persons with limited means went to Islington.

Spring Garden was a place of resort as a new London; after and Ranelagh & Vauxhall gardens.

The Theatre was not improved; the same plays and the same behavior as in days of Charles II. A striking difference to the proprieties of Costume especially in tragedy. - Every hero, of whatever vocation or occupation was dressed like an English Gentleman. Cato in 1712 appeared in a long wig, flowered gown & laced chair, yet Addison perceived nothing absurd. - Cleopatra & Semiramis appeared in a powdered commode, hoop petticoat & stomacher & fan.

Many other exhibitions. Belshire House.



London - continued.

Shooting Matches were common. A stall  
 fed deer was shot for (not said at) 1713  
 for half a crown a man.  
 Con. 9. 344.

Bowls, Skittles, Football, Cricket - common

Prize Fights were frequent - with swords, and  
 daggers. These <sup>singles</sup> gladiators, many times each  
 other for the amusement of the crowd and  
 for money. Ladies attended.

Boxing or Pugilism grew out of Prize Fights,  
 about 1700. & boxing matches  
 soon became popular. Persons  
 of rank & wealth attended these matches  
 and bet on the issue. They trained  
 their champions for the ring, as they had  
 been accustomed to train gamecocks  
 for the cock pits & then bet immense sums  
 on them. The Duke of Cumberland was a  
 lover of this sport.

A Love of Spectacles always distinguished the  
 Londoners. - now more rampant than ever  
 a bull baiting would rouse a whole ward,  
 but an execution could at any time  
 empty half of the metropolis into Tyburn.

Bartholomew Fair. There was tumult,  
 immorality, indecency, profaneness,  
 debauchery, & all sorts of excesses.

Country Esquires were not burdened with learning  
 or knowledge. They took care of their estates, and  
 enforced some laws - especially game laws.  
 On Sunday, they went to the village church  
 which they entered through a lane of uncovered  
 growing peasantry, and ascended to the "S. Virgins  
 pew," the chief seat in the Synagogue, where  
 they were bold in their responses, looked about  
 upon their dependants - A great time  
 at Christmas - "a string of hog puddings  
 & a pack of cards were sent to every poor  
 family in the parish". The old Hall full  
 of sports & feasting.  
 See p. 403.  
 Al. 8. 301/  
 Con. 9. 416.

Fox Hunting was the sport of the rural squires  
 Most of these foxhunters were as unintellectual  
 as their horses. There were great banquets,  
 brainless babble, boisterous & spurious. Thus  
 they lived, in violent excitement & stopped re-  
 action till cut off by some sharp disease  
 or by some fall of the horse in fox hunting.



*Con. g. 244* Country Ladies of this period, who had not learned the fashion of London, were quiet domestic drudges, with but little education. Formerly they thought the great business of life was to be in a cushion, and coverlets. In this there was a change. They aided the poor of the village, rebuked the vicious, and gave medicines & cordials to the sick. No ailment was so hard for some of them. Their remedies were for the most part the strangest quackery. They gave snail pottage for consumption. The snails were fried with earth worms, & then all mingled with strong ale, herbs, spices & sugar. *Con. g. 245*

*ill. 3. 14* Oil of Swallows they made. 70 or 80 swallows were pounded alive in a mortar with other ingredients. Cock-water was made by plucking the fowl alive. The receipt books of these Ladies had many possets and restoratives, which were composed of articles which required the witches' cauldron to prepare them.

*Con. g. 244* Elderly Ladies were commonly those who undertook the healing art, & the wife of the squire or vicar, some well-to-do widow or considerable spinster, who had the means & disposition to do good. The office of the village doctor was reduced to a starving sinecure.

Amusements of Rural Gentry, besides Fox hunting. Anniversary festivals, card playing, dancing, music, & shooting, fishing; county balls. Sometimes they visited London, to attend routs, masquerades, theatres, &c.

*ill. 2. 280* English Roads were execrable 1700 & after. Land highwaymen were not uncommon. Robberies were frequent.

*Con. g. p. 262* A family who travelled to London, had a ponderous carriage, & strong horses; many eatables, and for drinkable, by the way, they carried Usquebaugh, black cherry brandy, cinnamon water, sack, tait, & strong beer. and the conveyance was abundantly armed.



The Peasantry exhibited the same rude simplicity as in the days of Eusebius. Rural education had received little or no improvement or enlargement, during 17th century. The toils of the peasants were enlivened by wakes, fairs, where were puppet shows, pedlers' stalls, raffling tables, & drinking booths; and the peasants contended in wrestling, cudgel playing & foot racing. Young women frequently engaged in foot-racing & the prize for the successful one was a smock.

Gripping matches were favorite competitions at fairs. The candidates grined hideously through a horse collar.

Trials in whistling also.

yawning & other contortions were frequent at fairs and other festivals. They yawned for a cheshire cheese.

Saxon or Druidical superstitions were retained, especially those relating to courtship and marriage. Young damsels had various ways & rites - find out their future husbands. But before 1760, the belief in the efficacy of these things was fast departing.

## Scotland.

Amusements were frowned upon, - especially card playing.

He gives all the Scotch peasantry books & pamphlets; every hut had a niche in the wall which contained books - chiefly religious. - and above all the "big ha' Bible", a quarto covered with calfskin, or a smaller one. The business of every day was wound up by reading in the bible; the old man was priest as well as father of the family. - Sunday was very strictly observed.

Desperadoes were plenty in Edinburgh, & were worse than the London roisters.

Drinking was common. Many besotted themselves with strong ale & whiskey. [Con. g. 262.]

Many ladies of rank, 1700, could not write; and their conversation was not always decent.

Ladies sometimes frequented taverns.

Edinburgh was the filthiest city in Europe.

Misc. 1. 166.

The whole gaolage of many families was expected from the windout, with a cry of "Gare del'le au". This was generally done early in the morning. A different state began soon after 1745.

The Scotch peasantry did not attend to conveniences and the nobility were not very different.

Tea was imported into Scotland 1681, & was common in Edinburgh in 1750.

Misc. 6. 419



# Pictorial History of England. 1688-1760.

## Condition of the people

Gregory King wrote upon the Condition of England in 1696. Full reliance is not to be placed upon his calculations. [his book is not a Natural & Political Conclusion]

Houses in England 1696.

In London 105,000  
Other cities & towns 195,000  
Villages & hamlets 1,000,000 } all 1,300,000. and Population 5 $\frac{1}{2}$  millions.

Population according to the writer of this Pictorial History, in 1696, 7,200,000. and not under 7 millions in 1688. [The writer thinks King's estimate ~~not far from right~~]

p 368) Remarks, Occupations, incomes - by King

		Income ear	2800 <sup>th</sup> average
* Families of Nobility	160		1300.
" of Bishops	26		880
" of Baronets	800		650
" of Knights	600		450
" of Esquires	3000		280
country gentlemen men - 25 gentlemen	" of Gentlemen	12000	" $\frac{1}{2}$ " 240
" of Persons in Offices	10000	" $\frac{1}{2}$ " 120	
" of Merchants	2000	"	400
" and Traders	by sea	8000	" " 200
" of do. do by land	10000	"	140
" of profession of law	10000	" $\frac{1}{5}$ " 60	
" of Clergymen	180000	" $\frac{1}{45}$ " 45	
" of freeholders	150000	" $\frac{1}{49}$ " 84	
" of Farmers	150000	"	44
" of Scientific & liberal arts men	16000	"	60
" of Naval Officers	5000	"	80
" of Militaries	4000	"	60
" of Shopkeepers	40000	"	45
" and Traders	60000	"	40
" of Artisans	50000	"	20
" of Com. Seamen	35000	"	14
" of Com. Soldiers	364000	"	15
" of Laborers and outworkers	400000	"	6.10.
" of Cottagers & paupers	1,360,586		

Medical profession supposed to be included in men connected with sciences & liberal arts - not noticed separately. Clergymen probably only included established church. Last class but one called also laboring people and out of door servants. These numbers of each class were somewhat conjectural - also their incomes. Incomes generally seem small.

There was much less inequality in incomes then than now. The laborer was not so much lower than others as he now is

See also Cauley's account of Country Gentlemen, &c.

\* These estimates differ much from income in 1692. See Meres & 3. 62



# Pictorial History of England 1688, 1760.

b. 106  
m. 2. 292  
m. 13/71

Condition of the people about 1696.

Yearly consumption of flesh from King's book.

800,000 beeves & calves, averaging 260 lbs. at 1 1/3d per lb.	
3,200,000 sheep & lambs " 32 lbs. at 2 1/4d " "	
1,300,000 swine & pigs " 46 lbs. @ 3d " "	
200,000 deer & fawns " 70 lbs @ 6d " "	
10,000 goats & kids " 36 lbs @ 2 1/2d " "	
12,000 hares & leverets " 2 1/2 lbs @ 7d " "	
2,000,000 rabbits & conies " 3/4 + 1/2 lb @ 6d " "	
Game fowls, as geese, ducks, & hens, & turkeys, pigeons, & snipe & peacocks	@ 6d. £ 20,000.
Wild fowls	@ 1/2d. 20,000.

The estimate makes the annual consumption of flesh, 398,090,000 pounds, & the value £3,922,100.

Reliance cannot be placed upon all these estimates.

King estimates that half the population eat meat constantly; Of the remainder, he puts down 200,000 as infirm under 13 months; 40,000 as sick persons; 260,000 who eat flesh only twice a week; 1,280,000 persons, who by reason of poverty, eat flesh not over two days in seven; (the preceding class, 260,000, sum to repair not entirely on account of poverty) and 1,020,000, who receive alms & eat flesh not over once a week.

His figures, 200,000  
40,000  
260,000  
1,280,000  
1,020,000  
make — 2,800,000

This is half the population according to King's estimate. [King's estimate of common people at 5,800,000 for miles. Half had meat twice a week & others, that eat once a week or not at all, make up the balance.]

At this time, every body had flesh once a week — and near five sixths had it oftener.

Malt brewed 1688 — 23,500,000 bushels.

Musc. 4. 303. Producing 5,300,000 barrels of strong ale and 7,100,000 barrels of small beer.

" 8. 392  
" 2. 292

In 1695, after excise was raised, 22 millions of bushels of malt were used & producing 3,850,000 barrels of strong & 7,500,000 of small.

The beer barrel was then of 32 gallons or 32 1/2 imperial gallons.

If the beer drinking population was 6 millions, each individual had about 28 gallons of strong & 40 gallons of small beer in a year. But not more than 5/2 or 2/3 of the people drank beer; and the consumption of each beer drinker was more than 21 + 40 = 61 or more than 51 gallons a year in 1695.

Our population has more than doubled since 1695 but the barley consumed has only risen to 30 millions bushels. The consumption of malt in England has declined since 1695, partly owing to the substitution of tea & coffee.

[Malt used by P.P. Chancer, Gascoigne, &c — at Althorn. a tippler of malt. Maltster used by Holmsted. It was made of barley. Malt was also made into low wines & spirits. Smith. Wey. N.]



Condition of the People.

In 1696, according to Mr. Locke, one half of the <sup>poor</sup> in England were so because they could <sup>not</sup> get employment - they were able-bodied paupers.

Dunning in 1698 estimates the charge for the poor in England at £819,000. per annum. He attributes the increase of the poor & poor rates to ale houses & brandy shops; says the money spent at such shops in country places amounts to an <sup>almost</sup> incredible sum. He says the paupers bought strong ale and fine wheat bread. (Where did they get money to pay for it? They were generally idle where they could be; and the parish allowed them more than a common laborer could earn.)

Dunning's 1st Edition - wages in 1685; 2<sup>d</sup> Edition 1686.

Living of a Laborer. This Richard Dunning estimates that if a laborer has a wife and three children, his wife supports herself & one child, leaving two children for the husband. He must pay 20s. yearly for house rent, or 4s. a week. Wood costs 3d. a week; his clothes 20s. a year or about 4s. a week. Sunday's diet 2d; working tools weekly 1s. All these sums make 13s. a week - leaving him only 1/2, or a penny a day for each child, including their food, clothes, &c. He estimates the weekly wages of a laborer at 2/5; or, in some places they are 2/6; in others 2/8. But in these houses rent & wood are dearer. In some places wages are less than 2/5. - Diet they seem to have all had in addition to the 2/5, 2/6, &c. per week, except on Sunday. [There is only 5s. a week for diet; cutting diet 2/6 on Sunday 5s. a week this would be 13s. or 40s. less than King's man. The wife's wages not included.]

\* Sir Matthew Hale estimates the necessary expense of a laborer's family of 6 persons in Gloucestershire about 1660 at 26£ a year. [in some parts, a little more or less something 9, or 10, or 11.]

Dunning estimates the money income of a laborer at £6.10. a year, or 52 weeks at 2/5 or 2/6. The diet of the man must have been about as much more, making 13£. Then there is the earnings of the wife & diet, which must make the 13£ above 20£. for a whole expense - & one child less than Sir M. Hale's family.

\* King makes the earnings of the laborer 15£ a year - that is so much for his work, he dieting himself. This is higher than Dunning, 40£ a year. Perhaps quite as high as Sir M. Hale. [Hale's family has 5s. in his family, on average.]

Defoe maintains, 1704, that there was no one laborer then hands in England; a want of people, not of employment. He mentions the great difficulty of raising soldiers - the dishonest means resorted to to get them, as well as forcible ones. [He mentions that the soldiers were not paid for 5 weeks.]



# Pictorial History of England - 1688-1760.

## Condition of the people

11.2.2086.

Here is 6<sup>3</sup> a day  
11.2.2086.

**Soldiers.** Defoe says 1704. that jails were runnaged for malefactors, & prisons for debtors, to make soldiers. Men would not enlist for soldiers, to be knocked on the head for 3/6 a week, when they could live at home & earn a good living. Poverty, he says makes men soldiers; and our people are not poor enough to go abroad.

Defoe accuses his poorer countrymen of great improvidence. The Dutch save, the English spend. The Dutchman aims property; the Englishman spends all. An Englishman earns money & then goes & spends it for drink, & is idle some days. He says he can produce 1000 families within his knowledge, who go in rags & wanting bread, whose head can earn a good living for all (he says 15/ to 25/ a week) but will not work. He has paid men 18 shillings on Saturday night, who went directly to the ale house & spent it all there, & gave not a farthing to their families. The real poor were families deprived of the labor of a father by death or sickness. These should be relieved. The beggars lived by begging because they could get more in that way. He offered a beggar 9/ a week, & he told Defoe to his face that he could get more a-begging.

The writer of the Pictorial supposes Defoe's account is correct; and that the state of things then much resembles what it has since been; that a constant increase of poor rates did not imply an increasing scarcity of work, nor a decline in the condition of the laboring classes from other causes.

**Work Houses established 1723.** Did not answer expectations. The cost of supporting paupers in work houses before 1732 was 1/ 4/6, 2/ 6/ per week for food, or 1/6 on an average. They lived better than the man who maintained himself by his industry. The pauper had meat dinners 4 times a week. They had wheat bread in part, cheese, broth, hasty pudding, milk porridge, peas & peas porridge, good beer, carrots, turnips, mackerel, herbs, &c.

**At Beelford** - the pauper had for breakfast - bread & cheese 4 days & broth 3 days in a week - for dinner, boiled beef & sweet pudding 3 days, and cold meat 3 days, and hasty pudding or milk porridge once in a week - for supper, bread & cheese, & sometimes broth.

Poor rates 1713, about a million  
do do 1750, about 3 millions

[ Poor rate under Henry II was estimated at near 700,000 £ in a year, & went on increasing, when population was 300,000. & allowance to paupers about 1/2 what it now is. Paupers were a great burden on the poor rates. In 1696 & 1698 estimate the paupers & beggars at 1,330,000 in a population of 5 1/2 millions. In 1846, 1,332,089 received relief in 17 millions, 1/10 of all were in bad years; 1/13 in good years.



# Pictorial History of England - 1688-1760.

## Condition of the people.

p. 134. Wages fixed at the Quarter Sessions of the  
 county of Lancaster in 1725, after consulting  
 with others in the county

£  
 Bailiff of husbandry & haygar, Miller with food & drink 5s  
 117) Ch. Servant in do 5<sup>l</sup> " Miller without " " 10<sup>l</sup>.  
 Com. Servant in do 4<sup>l</sup> "  
 24 years old or more }  
 Servant 20 to 24 yrs 3.10. "  
 do 16 to 20 " 2.10. "  
 Best Woman servant. 2.10. "  
 Chambermaid, Dairy- & 2<sup>l</sup> "  
 maid, wash maid, &c }  
 Woman servant under 16. 1.10. "  
 They had victuals in addition

Labors by day or week, to work  
 from May 15 to Sept 15, from 5 AM.  
 till 7<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> PM. Rest of year  
 from spring of day till night.  
 resting 1 hour at breakfast,  
 1 hour at dinner, & 1 hour at  
 drinking. In summer  
 may sleep each 1/2 hour.

### Wages - for best husbandry

Labors - Sept 15 to Nov 15  
 6d with meat & drink, 1/ without  
 In summer 5d with & 10 without.

[This must be wrong seemingly, yet]

Ordinary labors have most in winter  
 as 10d without & 5d with meat & drink  
 In summer 9d without & 4d with victuals

Haymakers, men, 10<sup>l</sup> a day  
 without & 6d with food  
 Women Haymakers 7 or 3d.  
 Mowers 1/3 or 2d.  
 Mansheavers 1/ or 6d  
 Women do. 10d or 6d  
 Hedges, Ditching & 10<sup>l</sup> or 6  
 Pales, threshing, &c }

Masons, carpenters &  
 joiners, plumbers, } 1/ or 6  
 tilers, slaters,  
 Coopers, turners

Master workman, these 1/2.

Pair of Sawyers 2/ or 1/2  
 that is, each 1/ or 6d

Master Tailors 1/ or 6  
 Their journeyman and apprentices } 10 or 5

These rates were higher  
 than they had been,  
 but not so high as  
 in the Southern  
 Counties of England

Sir Frederic Eden 1797. gives wages, &c. in

Carlisle 30 or 60 years before - say 1737 to 1745.

Reapers 4d a day & diet

" 6d a day in summer

Com. Labors 1/6 to 2/ a week & board - now (1797) 10d to 1/ a day & diet

Maid servant 40/ to 50/ a year & diet - now " £6 to 8<sup>l</sup> & diet

Man servant 80/ to 120/ a year & diet - now " 15 to 20<sup>l</sup> & diet

Masons 1/ or 6d, in winter } - now 1/4 with board  
 do. 1/2 or 8d in summer }

Carpenters 1d a day less than masons - now 2d a day less.

From another, who lived near Carlisle, going back to 1727.

Labors in husbandry 4d with victuals in summer; 3d with victuals in winter  
 Reaping 6d & dinner or 4d & days diet

Women for weeding, spinning wool, spreading peats & manure, &c 2d a day & diet  
 " for a half year, seldom had more than 20/ for that time

1720 to 1730 - Butter (near Carlisle) 2d lb. Barley 1/2 Winchester bushel,  
 Oats 8d, rye 1/8 wheat 2/4 to 2/8 per W. bushel.  
 Mutton quarter 1/ (now 3/), fat calf 3 or 4 weeks old 4/6 to 5/.

This was in the N. of England. Everything was higher South.



Pictorial History of England - 1688-1760.

Condition of the people

Price of wheat - Windsor quarter of 9 bushels

1686 to 1705 - 20 years, average	45/10 3/4
1706 to 1725 - 20 years	" 44/9
1726 to 1745 - 20 years	" 37/9 3/4
1746 to 1764 19 years	" 40/1 1/2

Winchester Quarter was less price - & middling wheat was less. The above is "best" wheat.

Wages rose but meat did not. Laboring men did not subsist on wheat, chiefly. "At no period of our history has wheat been the ordinary food of laboring men" (Sir F. Eden. In 1626, barley bread was the usual food of ordinary people, so said King Charles.

Produce of England, a few years after the Revolution.

Wheat	12 millions of bushels.	This seems Kings Estimate 1696. Macaulay quotes him as giving the <sup>or</sup> old quantity at less than 10 millions of quarters (50 millions bushels) and wheat at less than 2 millions. Macaulay, 1848 estimated the average crop at over 30 millions of quarters, and wheat alone at over 12 millions quarters.
Rye	8 do.	
Barley	25 do.	
Oats	16 do.	
Peas	7 do.	
Beans	4 do.	
Petches &c	1 do.	

*Wet. Hist. 2. 274-275*  
Bread - The use of wheat bread was gradually introduced among laboring classes after 1700.

About 1747, only a rich family used a peck of wheat in the course of a year, in Cumberland county, and that was at Christmas. The crust of the rose pie was made of barley meal. Oatcake was common. Puddings & dumplings made of oatmeal & suet were common at rural entertainments.

This was in the North. In the South was much more wheat.

*Macaulay 153*  
*Macaulay 302*  
A writer about 1764 (published 1766) says wheat bread is much more generally the food of common people since 1689 than it was before; but is still far from being the food of people in general. He thought that in 1764 not more than half the people had wheat bread. (Charles Smith). About the same time however, after extensive inquiries, it was calculated that 7/8 of the people of England & Wales lived upon wheat, over 1/8 upon rye, about 1/8 upon barley, and less than 1/8 upon oats.

In Wales 8/9 of the people lived upon barley & rye, 1/9 on wheat. In the 5 northern counties of England, over 2/3 lived upon rye, oats & some barley; and near 1/3 upon wheat. In going S, there were was more wheat, & less barley, rye & oats. In the eastern & southern & most middle counties, from 2/3 to 9/10 of the people lived upon wheat.

Macaulay says wheat used only by those in cases, etc. instances, &c. and that the great majority of the nation lived almost entirely on rye, barley and oats 1685.



# Pictorial History of England - 1688 - 1760

## Prices. [Prices 1770. see Misc. 4. 304]

Mutton 1660 to 1690, 2d lb; 1706 to 1730, 2<sup>nd</sup> d.

do 1730 to 1760, 3d "

In 1710. Beef 1<sup>st</sup> d per lb; Veal 2<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> d; Lamb 2<sup>1</sup>/<sub>10</sub> d.

Victualling Office paid, 1740 to 1760, Beef usually 2<sup>nd</sup> d. lb

for Pork 2<sup>nd</sup> d to 3d: Butter usually <sup>over</sup> 5d.

" cheshire cheese 1<sup>st</sup> to 1<sup>1</sup>/<sub>4</sub> d. — This office did not pay so much as private consumers. No rise from 1740 to 1760

Wool in 1681. 8d. — 1707, 7d. — 1713. 5<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> d. — 1713. 7<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> d

" in 1717. 10d — 1722. 9d — 1732. 8d — 1738. 5<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> d

" in 1744. 9d — 1754 5d — 1755. 6d — 1760. 8d.

No advance in price.

Consumption of London, in cattle & sheep, was but little increased from 1732 to 1761 —

In 1733, cattle 80.169 — In 1733 sheep 535.050

In 1761 cattle 82.514 — In 1761 sheep 666.010 —

In 1746, cattle 71.582 — In 1746 sheep 620.790.

Excessive gin drinking of the populace is not much complained till after 1720. It became a source (the principal one) crimes, & one of the main causes of poverty & wretchedness.

Parliament took up the subject 1736, and imposed a duty of 20s per gallon on all spirituous liquors sold at retail, and every retailer of spirits was to pay 50s for a license. This made a great storm among the distillers, retailers, & drinkers.

They set the law at defiance; & the liquor of gin was sold in <sup>all</sup> corners of the streets, without license, & the consumption is said to have increased.

In 1743 the law was repealed.

This gin which did so much mischief was distilled in the country. Mr Putteney said in 1736 that distilling had been carried on in the country by royal authority "for nearly a hundred years", & had been encouraged by acts of parliament since 1660. that all inns, alehouses & coffee houses in England owed a great part of their profits to the retail of spirits.

One speaker in Parliament said the business of distilling gin was introduced into England in 1684.

Distilled 1684, 527,000 gallons; 1694, 948,000 gallons

" 1704 2,000,000 do; 1724, 3,520,000 do.

" 1734, 4,947,000 do; 1744, 1,375,000 do.

" 1742 7,160,000 do. <sup>under the law of 1736</sup> misplaced.

In 1736, every 6th house in the metropolis was a licensed gin shop. Under the law 1736-1743, only 2 licenses were taken out — many were prosecuted but informers were cruelly treated & some murdered.



167

circ. 8 388  
 " 15. 7  
 p. 135  
 m. 2. 24  
 m. 2. 292  
 m. 18. 209

Statistics. "All the older statistical tables of England are  
notoriously imperfect and inaccurate". Von. Zimmer.  
Statistics is applied to every thing pertaining to a state, -- its population,  
soil, produce, &c. R. Dic. -- a recent word.  
Carlyle says somewhere [not for Carlyle] that tables of statistics may  
be like sieves for holding water. "The truth shall run out of them as it  
you are looking into them." N.Y. Times -- Sept. 1856.



Thomas Arnold, D.D. late head  
master of Rugby School, & Regius Professor of Modern  
History in the University of Oxford.  
An American Edition. 1845 of Mrs.

Miscellaneous Works, was printed in N.Y.

The spread of Christianity has been partial; its  
real moral effects have been still more partial.  
When Christ is acknowledged in name, he is denied  
in many instances in works.

The Christian Religion & Christian Church  
are two distinct things, the former may do it, and  
though the latter be disabled or perverted.

Priesthood. The essential point in the notion  
of a priest is, that he is a person made necessary  
to our intercourse with God, without being necessary  
or beneficial to us morally. This unreasonable  
unnatural, unspiritual necessity is the essence of  
the idea of priesthood. Priesthood, properly speaking  
is mediation. This human mediator makes us  
neither better nor holier; its claim is false.

Christianity sanctions the principle of  
government & the principle of obedience in the  
Church, of the principle of priesthood by which  
one man or set of men are declared to be necessary  
mediators for their brethren, the scriptures contain  
not one word, except in condemning it.

Baptism & the Lord's Supper are not in the  
Scripture sense mysteries at all. Paul was  
not a "dispenser of Sacraments". His business was  
not to baptize.

"The Apostles never exercised what is properly a  
priestly power.

Prayers. It is not the priest who is to  
pray for the people, but the ministers & people  
who are to pray for each other. The prayers  
of the people are as important to the minister  
as his care to them.

The scripture recognizes high powers of gov-  
ernment in the Church, but does not acknowledge  
a priesthood.

### 3 Stages of Christianity.

1st. State exhibits the spirit of Christianity, not absolutely  
without forms, but regards them as wholly subordinate and  
indifferent in themselves.

2d State. Ministers with the necessity of these forms, thinking  
the spirit will be lost without them.

3d State. The forms have done their work & should be laid aside.  
but they are insisted on. Men regard the form  
not as subordinate, or leave to the form.



Thomas Arnold D.D.  
Extracts from his writings.

He thinks a church establishment essential to the well being of a nation; and that Dissent threatens its destruction. He would extinguish Dissent, not by persecution, but by Comprehension.  
Church Reform.

"Letting Alone". He does not believe in this. says physical & spiritual ignorance are the fruits of this system. It leaves men to practice all sorts for their own convenience; allows every natural and artificial superiority to enjoy of its advances to the utmost, & suffers the weaker to pay the full penalty of their inferiority.

importance & benefit of the parochial minister. His object should be to do good to those around him morally and physically; and perform his duties as a minister of religion.

Differences of opinion among Christians are absolutely unavoidable. There exists no power or office in the Church endowed with infallible wisdom.

High Churchmen talk of the sins of Schism, as if they were not equally guilty of it.

18th Century. Increase of Dissent.

For many years the populace hate dissenters in the streets of their lives, & because they have departed from the institutions of their country. Ignorance, before it is irritated by physical distress, is blindly averse to all change.

The populace of Spain & Naples are decided enemies to the Constitutional movement. The mob at Birmingham plundered & burnt houses to the cry of "Church & King"; & threatened to roast Dr. Pusey alive as a heretic. — Long sisters & agitation turn this ignorance to an opposite direction; as now in England, & they now cry no bishops, no tithes, & join the dissenters in the work of pulling down.

He is for uniting in one church different opinions, & its ceremonies.

The Scotch Church does not reach up to the level of the Aristocracy. The English Church does not reach down to the level of the poor. The Romish Church extends to both.

The Laity should have a greater share in the government of the Church. The word Church has lost its proper meaning & is used to express only the clergy, and there is an unchristian distinction between clergy & Laity.



Thorneus Arnold, D.D.

Extracts from his writings

The parishioners (in the church of England) except about questions of rule, never act as a body, never feel as a body. They are no part in keeping up any religious discipline; those qualified to instruct others can do it only as individuals. The church is opened only for one uniform service, never to be added to, never to be varied. "Even the singing where alone some degree of liberty has been left to the congregation, is in some Dioceses brought down to the same uniformity, nothing may be sung but the old & new versions of the psalms of David." The people as members of the church are also passive, & the love of self government, one of the best instincts in our nature & one most opposite to the spirit of lawlessness, finds no place for its exercise. They neither govern themselves nor is there anyone else to govern them.

He would divide dioceses; & would temper the power of the bishops power by a mixture of more popular authorities, &c.

He would make the clergy Christians, not priests, & would have them in both houses of parliament. He says "they are required to practice no virtue beyond the rest of their brethren".

The liturgy he would use <sup>once</sup> every Sunday, but leave the rest of the day free, & have various services. He thinks many of the humbler would be glad of a variety. He says the churches are now <sup>often</sup> left in uninterrupted loneliness from one Sunday to another - that is, there are no services except on Sunday.

This man, who has so many liberal ideas, says England will not be a Christian nation without an Establishment, though the majority may be Christians!

"Bishops confer a legal qualification for the ministry, not a real one, whether natural or supernatural. They can give neither piety nor wisdom, nor learning, nor eloquence".

He was willing that marriages should be performed by magistrates, but not by a dissenting minister, "who is, he says, a mere private individual".

"In retired parishes, the family of the clergy is often a little centre of civilization, from which gleams of refinement, neatness, taste, science & literature are diffused through districts where they would not otherwise penetrate".



- 1 "The Church of England is unpopular" he says. "It is connected with the crown & the aristocracy but is not regarded with affection by the mass of the people." "It was the Church of civil government, when that government was a despotism, and it learnt to echo the language & copy the arbitrary proceedings of its patrons. The church has never thoroughly harmonized with the popular part of our constitution." "This system of church patronage, & the rank of the clergy in society, makes them independent of popular favor, & is prejudicial to their influence with the poor." "Birth, habit and education have identified them with the higher orders; they share their feelings & enjoy their pleasures, and are ignorant of the language & manner most intelligible to the common people." "Their tracts for circulation among the poor are mostly stiff, & have an air of that of a condescending superior addressing readers almost of a different species."
- 2 "The Church of England is exclusive"; it has in many instances provoked the separation from it, which it affects at once to lament and to condemn." "It is also the the exclusive of dissent from public schools & universities." "He says the error of the civil power in England, has been to sanction what the clergy wished to have done; and he says Parliament at almost every period since the reformation would have consented to any alterations in spiritual matters, which the bishops & great body of the clergy would have recommended. The severe laws which drove the people into dissent "are almost entirely the fault of the clergy". The civil power has too negligently sanctioned what the clergy framed."
- 3 "The government & eternal constitution of the Church of England are full of abuses". A church was originally a popular assembly; now the bishops are appointed by the crown & the people have no voice at all, either by themselves or their representatives. The Church is no more a Society than the army or navy." "Then come Pluralities & Dispensations the relics of the worst times of popery." "He mentions some things that "mark how little the reformation in England was able to correct abuses patronized by the aristocracy." "The readiness with which the friends of the Church acquiesced in them [abuses] shows how greatly they wanted some of the most essential qualities in the character of perfect Reformers. He mentions other abuses to show "how imperfectly the reformation in England was effected".



Arnold says "the justice of the epithet <sup>"Judicious"</sup> which Hooker's admirers have attached to his name is questionable." He speaks of "the majesty and greatness of English nobility," as something which religion was not to meddle with in its reforms. "Certainly there never was a more thorough going advocate of things established than Hooker has shown himself," in his whole 5th book, forming one third of his Ecclesiastical Polity.

"Some of the English Clergy are, above all other Christian ministers, unfit for their station" He refers to their habits of dissipation & self-indulgence and aristocratical feelings. "Without being superior to the humblest dissenting teachers in secular learning, they are incomparably inferior to them in familiarity with the Scriptures"

"Parrot like phrases" — so he calls such as these "Constitution in Church & State", "venerable establishments", "heroic martyrs", "pious strenuous reformers", "mild and tolerant spirit of its doctrines & ministers". These as commonly used, are untrue or irrelevant.

"The Constitution of Church & State is like the feet of Nebuchadnezzar's dream, part of iron & part of mud; the State stout & strong, being gradually perfected, & continually repaired; the Church patched up in a hurry 300 years ago out of elements corrupted, & ever since allowed to subsist unlooked to, & unamended, as if like the water of the Thames it would grow pure by mere lapse of time". "We would ask, who would wish to live under our Political Government, such as it was," when our Church government was established?

It is preposterous to invoke the names of heroic martyrs who died in the cause of reformation, in aid of an argument that their example should never be followed again!

A knowledge of those times would show us that we may admire them far more safely than imitate them. "Our additional experience of 250 years gives us the same superiority of judgment over them, that a many an ordinary schoolmaster possesses over a very clever boy."

As to the mild tolerant spirit of the Church of England, look at the continued persecutions that which disgraced the reign of Elizabeth, & which added an additional brand of infamy to that dark period between the Restoration & the Revolution. In the 16th century, a comprehensive spirit of Christian charity was unknown to all parties.



"When the merits of the Church of England are reduced to their just proportions, and no longer magnified to our eyes by the mists of our own ignorance, the faults of its institutions will appear in their true colors, & we shall wonder by what strong infaturation they can have been so long mistaken for excellencies."

"Apostolic Succession, the dignity of the clergy, the authority of the Church, were triumphantly maintained for several centuries & their development was coincident, to say the least, with the corruption alike of Christ's religion & Christ's Church."

"Neither our Lord nor his Apostles have left any commands with respect to the constitution & administration of the Church generally." They have commanded us to celebrate the Lord's Supper, and "this is the one perpetual ordinance of the Christian Church." Other things are mentioned historically as done once, but not necessary to be always repeated.

The whole body of the Church was to take an active share in its concerns; though at particular times, it might give its power into the hands of its rulers.

The Christian Church was to be absolutely and entirely without a human priesthood.

"No wise man doubts that the reformation was imperfect, or that the Romish system had many good institutions, practices & feelings."

"The Established clergy must belong generally to the richer classes, because so long as a residence at the University is a necessary passport to ordination, none but the rich can afford to enter the church." The poor desire an instructor who by birth, station, language & manner is more nearly one of themselves. It is not an objection to a clergyman that he is a gentleman if he is a good, sensible man; but if the gentleman be the predominant element in the compound he will not inspire confidence & affection. There will be always a great many of the clergy in whom the gentleman, not in the best sense of the word, is predominant over the parson, & such a minister is entitled to the poor.



### Nobility & Commons.

Con. 9.382

The distinction was a real one originally, either physical or moral; every successive generation tended to make it more imaginary; till at the moment of the final struggle it had no existence still. The commons were then less well qualified as the nobles physically & morally, to conduct the affairs of peace & war; & the exclusion & alienation of the nobility became unnatural & absurd.

### Property & numbers.

In this contest the course of things is opposite. The final struggle takes place when the real differences have reached the widest point of separation; when the state is divided into the two opposites of luxury & beggary. It is a contest between utter contraries.

### p. 309. Wealth & Poverty.

It is the natural tendency of wealth to become richer; & of poverty to become poorer. This increase of wealth & poverty removes the different classes of society to a greater distance from each other, & they become stronger if not enemies.

Con. 9.369

There is an excess of aristocracy in our system, religious, political, social; an evil arising from causes running back to the earliest periods of our history; & which has separated the higher classes from the lower, in almost every relation of life. The rich & poor in England have each what is almost a distinct language.

The want of kindness is as bad as a want of food. In society at large it is far more mischievous. It spreads mutual suspicion & fear & hatred.

It is an universal rule in morals, knowledge & money matters, that "much will make much" & "little is apt to become less."

Con. 9.384

"Our business is to raise all & to lower none."

"Equality is the dream of a madman. Extreme inequality, or high comfort & civilization in some, coexisting with deep misery & degradation in others, is not only a folly and a sin." An inequality where some have all the enjoyments of civilised life, & none are without its comforts; where some have all the treasures of knowledge & none are sunk in ignorance, that is a social system in harmony with the order of God's creation in the natural world."



From Macauley.

M. 2. 296. 6.

M. 14. 3. 9.

Progress. If the influence of the Church of Rome in the dark ages was on the whole beneficial to mankind, we may yet regard the Reformation as an inestimable blessing. The leading string, which upheld the infant, would imbrue the full grown man. The means by which the human mind is in one stage of its progress, supported & propelled may, in another age be mere hindrances. The childhood of European nations was passed under the tutelage of a clergy, who had an intellectual superiority. The priests, with all their faults were the wisest portion of society. Their power was more beneficial than that of savage chiefs who could not read. But knowledge gradually spread among laymen, & many at the beginning of 16th century were fully equal to the most enlightened of the clergy. Thenceforward the dominion of the clergy, which with all its abuses had been salutary, became an unjust & noxious tyranny.

For three centuries past, the influence of the Church of Rome has been to stunt the growth of the human mind. The advances made in knowledge, freedom & wealth & the arts of life have been made in spite of her. Compare Italy & Scotland 400 years ago and now; Spain and Holland, &c. To the great rebellion of the laity against the priesthood, England is indebted chiefly for all her freedom & her blessings.

### English Church.

M. 2. 262.  
See Arnold

This was the result of a union between the Government and the Reformers. Many of the leading Reformers wished to go much farther, but needing the protection of the Government gave up to them; & they gave up also, as each needed the support of the other. Cromwell took the chief part in settling the conditions of the alliance, representing both parties a divine & statesman. As a divine he would have made a much greater change; as a statesman he wished to preserve the old organization. He was "sacredly in his professions, unscrupulous in his dealings, zealous for nothing, cold in speculation, a coward & time-server in action, a plausible enemy and a lukewarm friend." The government was not of property, they united & made the English Church "Cromwellian" avowed his convictions that, in the primitive times, there was no distinction between bishops & priests, and that the laying on of hands was altogether unnecessary. Cromwell was of opinion that the king as head of the Church might make a pope, & the priest so made needed no ordination whatever.

"All the traditions & usages of the Church of England were monarchical. Royalty became a point of professional honor among her clergy." Calvinists & Papists were different. The English Church gradually received its form from the passions & interests of a court, & began to mimic the style of Rome. Persecution found the Puritans, or sect, & made them a faction. They were found in every rank - the strongest in the mercantile classes in towns & among the small proprietors in the country. It turned a majority to the house of Commons early in Elizabeth's reign.

"No large society, of which the tongue is not Teutonic has ever turned Protestant. The religion of Rome prevails wherever the language is derived from that of ancient Rome."



75 Many Things, or Miscellaneous

Transubstantiation [Catholics are bidden to adore a God which the baker made - a passing deity, Bp. Hall]

U. 2. 241. 2. 248. Hooker says "a corrupt & barbarous church ingrafted upon the last supper, a doctrine more stupendously absurd and blasphemous than ever issued from the mouth of a pagan priest". R. Dic. "Transubstantiated Gods". Bale calls them new Gods. "They (Catholics) have made it an article of faith that the substance of the bread & wine, by the words of consecration, entirely changed into the substance of the living body and blood of Christ." See King's Sermon

Mutual Subjection.

Swift has a sermon on this subject. - probably from 1 Peter v. 5. "All be subject one to another."

He says, this doctrine may be hard for these. No value themselves upon their greatness or wealth, yet it is right. "Where there is mutual dependence, there must be a mutual duty & mutual subjection."

Con. 9. 307. Sumptuary Laws.

Bacon in his Essays is for sumptuary Laws. He says the material cause of sedition is want and poverty. To remedy these, he would cherish trade and manufactures, banish idleness, and "repress waste & excess by sumptuary laws."

Adam Smith says governments should not pretend to watch over private people by sumptuary laws.

Domestic Servitude & Severity R. Dic.

p. 93. p. 371. Horsley says "the lives of children & servants are no longer at the disposal of the father of the family; nor is domestic authority maintained as formerly by severities, which the mild spirit of modern laws rarely inflicts on the worst public malefactor" [This shows how things had been]

Locke thought that "great severity of punishment did great harm in education", yet he says some must be "scourged to their books"

p. 373. Keeping Christmas - Gold. R. Dic. See a Christmas song Athenaeum, Dec. 11. 1872.

Mis. 47. 234. At ewle [yule] we wenten gambole, daunce,

To carrole, and to sing,

To have gud spiced seive and roste  
And plum-pies for a king.

Warner. Albions England

Sewes are said to be dishes. They seem to have been of flesh.

Chaucer has "strange sewes, swannes and heron sewes".

Gower's woman made a seive of flesh & divers spices.

Lidgate has "strange sewes" served up at table.

Perhaps it was seethed, stewed or boiled.

"Seive's are dishes" Tyrrill.

At ewle (Christmas) they gamboled, danced, caroled, sung, and had "gud spiced seive and roste and plum-pies".

man at the full feast  
To do God honor, make himself a beast"

"Gower's in song to  
Christmas in the Athenaeum  
Dec. 11. 1872



# Many Things or Miscellaneous

M. 2. 208 ad } **Solstead** } These used by Holland for the solstice  
 } **Sunstead** } (but not in Webster) in the translation

Con. 9. 282 of Pliny. Summer-sunstead (Pliny says)  
 always fallth out (in Italy) the 24<sup>th</sup> day of June.  
 Chron. III. 137 P.S. When the sun has entered 8 degrees within Cancer, ex.  
 Of course the other solstice was Dec. 24. The equinoxes March  
 23<sup>rd</sup> and Sept. 25. - or may have varied part of a day. But this  
 is not according to chronology - which says the  
 vernal equinox was March 25. in 46 B.C. in time  
 of Caesar - must have been within 1 day of that in time  
 of Pliny. [From any equinox or solstice to the same again is 365 1/4 days  
 Thom. 48 min. 57 sec. Ferguson.]

M. 2. 221 **Sleep**. In T. 7 more days: - "almost half our time ever  
 in 24 hours, we be fain to fall into a swoon, which  
 we call sleep." R. Dic. [So it seems they slept  
 as much 3 centuries ago as now. But R. Brumme mentions  
 8 hours for sleep. "Sweet pleasing sleep; o peace of mind & repairer  
 of decay" Dryden's Ovid.]

Con. 9. 350 **The Middle**. When we travel in uncertain roads  
 'tis safest to choose the middle." Glanvill. R. D.

**Swains**. - a labourer, a rustic. Milton couples together  
 "swainish & ignoble minds", also "ungentle  
 and swainish beasts".

p. 13. **Swift Swallow**. Pennant says this bird is  
 always on the wing, except at night and  
 in time of incubation. R. Dic.

M. 2. 295 **Stealing of Millers**. - They were old often accused  
 " 1. 170 of stealing, of taking unlawful toll. "The miller  
 stole both meale and corn", says Chaucer, and  
 later writers refer to this propensity in millers.

Shakespeare alludes to another kind of stealing - "it is  
 easy of a cut loaf to steal a shive", that is, a slice.  
 "if miller that tollith take none but his due" Tamer.  
 millers were to be chastised for stealing by the Turnbrel

Turnbrel. One man was set in a turnbrel, in Paris  
 (Con. 9. 264) conveyed bareheaded through the streets, with clink of irons.  
 Law for millers. (Con. 1. 1. 229)

p. 394 **Bells in England**. Fuller says England is called  
 by foreigners the ringing island, as having greater  
 " 46. 308. and more tuneable bells than other countries. [Their  
 " 2. 234 fondness of ringing, he should have put in also.  
 " 45

**Music**. - "must have some passion or sentiment to  
 express, or else violins, voices or any other organs of sound,  
 afford an entertainment very little above the rattles of  
 " 9. 333. children". Spectator No. 258

**Liberty & Slavery**. "We hear the loudest yells for liberty among  
 M. 2. 199 the drivers of negroes". Johnson's Taxation no Tyranny,



177 Many Things. 1851

misc. 2. 292  
795 Onions & Garlic. <sup>1853.</sup> <sup>edible & counter "stink of garlic."</sup> Mechanics. &c. [Canadiana, smell of Onions. Misc. 3. 105]

a letter from Paris says the workmen eat many onions and much garlic; that these are kept on all fruit stands of old women and are purchased and eaten in preference to fruit. Onions contain phosphorus and sulphur, we said, and these are exhaled through the skin, and make a disagreeable smell. The higher classes do not eat onions, and cannot bear to ride, walk, sit or stand by the side of these onion & garlic eaters.

This may be fancy in part. But Shakespeare in his day represents the London mechanics as garlic eaters, as having a stinking breath &c. and he holds them up to ridicule. *See All's Well. 2. 144. Misc. 5. 152. Misc. 2. 278.*

u. 1. 56 [Fuller says "our palate people are much pleased with garlic." Misc. 2. 278.  
The *Somerset* (Chaucer) loved "garlick, onion & leeks". *Can. 9. 324.*  
"Wholesome garlic" is in Pope's *Homer*. — *Onion* in a *Shakespeare*. Misc. 5. 153  
p 306 [24 is the measure of the onion & mustard to draw tears. *See 900 on*

Old poets say much of the beauty of women. Drayton says the busy lawyer, "findeth that beauty gives his labor ease" and the toiling tradesman & the sweating clown "would have his wench fair."

Madal says (pro. writ.) that a number of noble women in England, & some young ones, are well versed in Latin & Greek. 16th cent.

Chaucer says (evidently from Paul) in habit made with chastitee & shame, ye women should appareile yow (quoth he) And nat in tressed here [hair] and perrie [jewels] as perles, ne with gold, ne clothe, riche.

Will seems to mean a low strumpet. Used by Garcoigne 1572, *Polished Beaumont & de la Haye* Holland, Steiner and Somerville. The latter says "of this great town" (London?) "a troop of trulls in every street"

u. 5. 152. Bad women are frequently mentioned by the old writers. Called strumpets, back to Piers Ploughman, and common strumpets. Chaucer, Shakespeare, & all others notice them. Prostitute; this word was not used so early — but abundant in 17th century — perhaps in 16th. Whore older. Harlot plenty. *Counteram. see Corinto Misc. 1. 263*

u. 100 Fuller says the Catholic priests, "by hearing feminine confessions & abusing the key of absolution, opened the coffers of all the treasure in the land." [Did they get much more from women than men? He intimates that.]

"Silly Women" is a frequent expression.

Wantonness is charged upon women (& sometimes upon friars & priests) by R. Gloucester, P. Ploughman, Chaucer, &c. upon men also more rarely. "Stinking friar" P. P.

Wench seems applied mostly to lewd females — not always. Le man or lemmann. One loved; often loved illicitly. male & female.

"Women be full of whispering for the most part till to entreat." *Vives* Woman means wife man. that is, one employed at the woof — weaving.

Chaucer quotes Solomon, who had not found a good woman in a thousand. "The kynde of woman is naturally given to muche gabbyng." He would have their womanliness "garnished with sylence". He speaks of the "frailty of their woman kynde". *See Misc. 2. 206.*



b.315 "Decency & Indecency." Consent of Nations.

Bp. Taylor says the consent of nations, that is, public fame amongst all or the wisest nations, is a great signification of decency or indecency, and a probable indication of the law of nature!

## Bishops.

Milton says that to mould a modern bishop into a primitive one, he must be elected by the people, be undiocessed, unrevenued, unlorded, & have nothing but brotherly equality, matchless temperance, frequent fasting, incessant prayer & preaching, continual watchings & labors in his ministry. R. Dic.

He who can preach well cannot be unable to pray well. Milton.  
Bp. Taylor says "all true prayer is private"  
"God can never hear the prayer of an unmerciful man"

b.309 "Great Persons". Barrow says it is the special intent of these to protect & promote piety, as the best instrument of their security, & of the enjoyment of their accommodations. R. Dic.

Misc. 2. 329 "Fashion gives absolute sway to modes, forms, colors, &c. wantonly introduced by the whim of an individual."

p.309 The Poor. Christ professedly preached his Gospel to the poor; that is, to the many, the vulgar, the ignorant, the miserable; those whom worldly grandeur & wisdom, and unsanctified science were at all times, apt to neglect & despise. Krige R.D.

Misc. 2. 275. 2. 210. Gluttony. Sir Th. More says people would not forbear delicacies & gluttony; and so far would have purging & vomiting medicines "to pull down and avoid that we cram in too much. R. Dic.  
Grew says many, ~~died~~ by spewing up their claustrum, saved their lives

Misc. 1. 367 Wake - a feast kept on the consecration of a church, and on the anniversary of it. They were transformed into meetings of amusement, conviviality and licentiousness. R. Dic.

Hobbs says - Our Wakes answer to the heathen Bacchanalia; our Carousals.

Misc. 4. 215 Wassailer - "applied to merry jovial drinkers - to revellers and rioters". R. Dic. "Dancing, carolling, wassailing". Sidney  
"Gaming, jiggling, wassailing & mixt dancing". Milton  
"Here were carolls for 'jolly wassel bowls': 'wassels of good ale'  
"Spiced wassel-bowl".  
Hobbs says:

The Law & Gospel. Udal calls more law waterish, but the Gospel, pleasant wine.



English House & furniture — house built 1608.

Furniture of a later date. From "The Doctor," London 1834.  
 Some of the furniture refers to 18th century. It was North of England.

A low house, with holly hocks, sunflowers about it; roses and sweet peas under the windows, & the everlasting pea climbing the porch. Two yew trees before it. In the garden behind it were gooseberry bushes, apple trees, onions, cabbages, turnips, carrots, and a few cabbages. Honey supplied the place of sugar. Tea was sent in.

Nov. 2. 1790 Kitchen had an open chimney which afforded great comfort in a winter's evening; in front of it stood a "wooden beehive chair," and on each side, was a long oak seat, with a back to it, these serving as chests for the oatmeal bread. The great oak table & a chest with the house linen. The chimney was hung with the lace, & the rack which half covered the ceiling bore equal weight, of plenty. Mutton hams were suspended from other parts of the ceiling; & there was an odor of cheese from the adjoining dairy. After fire, a few pewter dishes were ranged above the trenchers, opposite the door, on a conspicuous shelf.

In the "best kitchen" (in which the chest of linen stood,) was an open triangular cupboard, fixed in one corner, half way from the floor, & reaching the ceiling. It was covered with a silver salver, silver goblet, & four or five spoons. King Charles's Golden Rules were pasted on the wall, and a print of Daniel in the lions' den. Another print was Joseph & Mary & the infant, fleeing in a ship. Six black chairs were ranged along the wall, when they were seldom disturbed; backs higher than the head of the tallest man when seated; seats flat & shallow, set in a round frame unaccommodating in their material & in shape; the backs also of wood rose straight up & were ornamented with balls, lozenges & embossments, & the legs & cross bars were adorned with the same manner.

Nov. 2. 1742. Over the chimney were two peacock's feathers, some dry silky pods of the honesty flower, & a large "sinuous" shell; also a head of Indian corn, & "a back scratcher" with a hand & a handle (?).

The house below had four rooms, viz the kitchen, the best kitchen, the dairy room, & the cellar, the latter being on the ground floor (?). Above, under the roof, were three apartments "which served equally for store-rooms & bed chambers." [There must have been a bed below, I think, though not noticed in the extract.]

There were in those days no magazines, reviews elegant extracts; no Southey, Gifford, Broughams, Lockharts no libraries of useful knowledge. The books of the doctors father were large & few, or at least lengthy in size as the Death of Arthur, Plutarch's Morals, Pliny's Natural History works of Joshua Sylvester; History of the Netherlands, Karelson by G. G. Gifford, Stow's Chronicle, Life of Edward III, Pilgrim's Progress, Rabelais, Latinus Sermons, Fox's Martyrs, what was printed was believed; a book was full authority.



"The Doctor" - continued.

When he went to school, (about 1730), two miles, he carried a little basket with his dinner, consisting of oatcake & cheese (the latter did not participate in the cream of the milk), or sometimes of a piece of bacon or pork; and in winter, he had a "shred pie" which is a coarse north-country mince pie.

M. 2. 42.  
M. 2. 214  
Con. 9. 346

The Winter Evening (about 1730) in the "chimney corner". Old Danick told marvellous stories, the great fire shining upon his benevolent countenance. Young Daniel (of course) sat with open eyes & ears, and believed the whole. The wife & mother twirled the thread at her spinning wheel, but a ~~ball~~ ball that was said, & then they exclaimed, "What wonderful things there are in the world!" Haggie, (Agatha) the maid, knit stockings & shared in the entertainment.

The writer of the Doctor, a strong Episcopalian and a hater of dissenters, represents the clergy (about 1730, 1740, &c.) as generally very ignorant & poor, & their sermons uninteresting, even when taken from books. Very many preached the sermons of others, & the writer advised many more to do the same. Even Jeremy Taylor is quoted as advising the lower clergy, vulgaris cleri, not to attempt to preach their own sermons. He thought the liberty of making sermons ought to be restrained.

"The religion of the bulk of the people must and ever will be little more than mere habit & confidence in others. The greater party mankind have not the power or the disposition to think."

sin. 2. 298. ↑ "Samplers" worked by females & framed, are noticed, of a recent date. They had religious poetry in them; - old ones referred to

The Doctor's Dress. - That of a country doctor 1750. A smuff-colored coat, with broad deep collar, waistcoat with long flaps, breeches, that barely reach to the knees, sometimes a loose morning gown of green & a mask, a periwig. When he rode in bad weather he had a thick, close, Oreadnought-greatcoat. The stockings came above the knee. He had boots. The hat had a broad brim, which almost hid the wig. The coat covered breeches & stockings, or coat & waistcoat did so.

2 \* Rack seems also about the same. Bay, however has "Iron spits, racks, dripping pans, pot-hangers and hooks."

\* Rack is a grate on which bacon is laid. Webster. Belonged to old kitchen of the great man. S. 409. and to present farm house on E.

↑ Sampler Old ballad of T. ... "With her needle and sampler sew."



# Dancing. (from Blackwood's Magazine Apr. 1836)

The dance is the most ancient, universal, and seemingly innocent pleasure that sparkles on the rim of the Cup of life. To be young, to feel the joy of existence, and to dance, seem almost synonymous terms. But the danger of this pleasure is that it more completely unballasts the mind than any other, & spreads at the same time a full sail to all tinging and thrilling vanities. As a popular recreation it would be morose to condemn it, only it must be confessed that there are individuals & even peculiar Societies, to whom it would be injurious.

[Com. 9. 287.  
mis. 2. 287.]

## Progress. (from Carlyle's "Heroes".)

No man whatever believes or can believe exactly what his grandfather believed. He enlarges his views somewhat by fresh discovery & finds something incredible to him, that was credible to his grandfather. It is the history of every man.

2. 294. Sects. (The more sects the better. Adam Smith, *weir* 8. 92.)  
Men never differ in opinion till they begin to think. We hear nothing about sects among savages nor in a state of semi-barbarism. { *Burns* on the "New sects of Coleridge" *Gower*.  
The Reformers were called "Sectaries & seditions". } *History of Christianity*,  
Locke says that those misapprehensions of the church within the limits of their own civil service, & handle them from them by articles & ceremonies.

1846. Prices of Passage from Liverpool to U.S. States.  
The London Chronicle, says the steerage fare has been for a few years past about 5£ (about 44 dollars) but in 1850 has varied from 3£ 10. to 5£. When adults pay 5£, young children are half as much. Steerage passengers provide their own bedding; but for the 5£ (and I suppose for the £3. 10.) receive 3 quarts of water daily for each one; and provisions per week at the rate of 2½ lbs of bread or biscuit, good, (1 lb wheat flour, 5 lbs of oatmeal, 2 lbs rice, 2 ounces of tea, 1 lb sugar and 1 lb molasses. Such is the law, & each Captain must furnish as so much, whatever may be the price of passage.

Most of the passengers are Irish. Not one for 100 of these Irish emigrants know anything about tea. Some smoke it, they are equally ignorant of rice, and know not how to cook it. The poorer class of Irish are always filthy, & have but little sense of cleanliness. The Captain on board the vessel is obliged to be stern unyielding despot, in order to enforce cleanliness.

Passage in 2d class cabins, is from 4. 10 to 7. 0. when the 8th Steerage is 3. 10 to 5£. First class cabins the fare is 16 guineas (about 180 dollars). The food in 2d class cabins is the same as in Steerage.

Chambers Information for the people (1848) says the price of passage from Leith, Scotland to N. York, in the Steerage is 70¢ to 80¢ (3. 10 to 4£) passengers provide themselves. Children 7 to 14, 1/2; 1 to 7, 1/3; under 1. 0. Ship funds butter, fire & utensils for cooking.



# Capital Offenses &c. England.

p. 332. Mr. Bright said in the House of Commons, July 11 1850. "Within the last 90 years, the criminal code had included 240 crimes; thus capital offenses had been reduced from 240 to 1!" There were 240 capital offenses, he says, in the time of George II. Since 1841, only murderers have been executed. In 1849, 19 persons were convicted of murder in England, and 15 executed.

## Female licentiousness in England.

p. 306 Causes "Poverty, and the ignorance & exposure which it creates is the great inducing cause." This course of sin is very frequently preceded by a series of sacrifices & sufferings. In a less destitute class, it is usually the fruit of the very unselfishness and self-sacrificing impulses of woman. Her generous qualities occasion her fall. After the first fatal step the proscriptions of society drive them into evil, return is impossible. 50,000 women in England are sinning for a livelihood. The crime is participated in by the respectable & unsuspected (men) to an alarming extent.

Prevention is the only way of reform. Reforming the fallen will not reach the evil, while so many are ready to take their places. Radical melioration is required in the most ordinary views & habits of social life. The <sup>bad</sup> education of schools & seminaries & learning is one exciting cause. "A higher reverence for woman is necessary, &c."

Westminster Review, July 1850

## M. G. 340. England.

Vol. 430.

The culture of the fields, the buildings, the railroads, the thorough finish of things, the substantial air of men & women, in England, speak of thrift, energy, fixedness and long endurance. The race are worthy of their place in the world's history. The hideous violations of social justice and natural right are not special sins of England; the whole world shares in them. With the wrongs & evils, great good has been performed. There is in England, a miraculous industry, a practical wisdom & manliness & gifts of character, whose monuments are seen through the world.

Democracy of any sort has not made its way into society in England, everything is aristocratic, distributed into ranks & classes; the boot-lack is an aristocrat looking down upon others. The newspapers have the same spirit. A genuine sympathy with the people by a small minority of Englishmen, & are represented by only a few publications. The free-traders have struck blows at the old system, but they are not democrats. They are political economists. The inalienable equality of rights social & political is repulsive to them. The more radical & profound thinkers have a limited hearing. The labors of the Chartist, Socialists &c. will be better understood hereafter. They will have a larger audience & greater power.



**Education.**— From remarks made at the meeting of "American Institute of Instruction" at Northampton, August 13. 14. 15. 1850. (before I returned from Maine.)

Plymouth Colony passed a law 1631, requiring masters & parents to instruct children & servants so as to enable them to read the bible; neglect 10/ fine, & more if continued. "Similar laws were passed Massachusetts & other N.E. Colonies". So said Mr B. Field of Boston. This was before the school system established in 1647. the P. called this the free school system, which gave New England its character & prosperity.

The New England School Masters were generally good men; & moral delinquencies were fewer among them than in other professions, Mr. B. said.

The educational efforts of our fathers had reference to religion. The influence of education upon secular pursuits was an after-thought. The preambles of their laws recited the promotion of religion as their main object. Their plan was well fitted for their days, but not in all respects for ours. Education and religion were identified. All teachers were expected to teach the duties & principles of the Christian religion. The grammar school & college were nurseries of the Church. Now education has become secularized. What was then principally taught is now shut out as sectarianism. Learning does not make religion. Our fathers had sense enough to distinguish between learning and piety. 12 or 13 speakers

## Christianity in the East.

"The cold infidel Turk points the slow unmoving finger of deserved scorn to the ulcerated nominal Christian bodies. It requires some fortitude to acknowledge to a Turk that you are a Christian. The Sultan in a decree to the Greek Patriarch, says:—"It is well known that bishops commit sins too outrageous for the laity to think of!" and in this the Sultan speaks true!"

Letter from Mrs. W. L. June 4. 1855

"The word of a Christian in the east is valueless". Nili Notes of Howard J. 21

## Passage from England to America—sup. 182.

In Chambers "Inf. for people". 1844.

London to Quebec, or from East Coast of England, the shipowner finding water, fuel & bed places, no bedding,—the price of passage has generally been £3. with provisions. C. children under 14, half price; under 7, one third; under 2 months nothing. From Liverpool Greenock &c. a little lower—expected to be this year (year not given) 50/ without provisions and 80/ to 100 with provisions. Passage requires 50 days provisions at least, laid in, and may take 75 days.



Miscellaneous.

A true "Vicar of Bray".

Vol. 2. 213.

"My aim at every hour,  
Is to be well with those in power,  
and my material point in view  
Whoever's in, to be in too." Churchill. Thelystest.

Wood mentions some "Vicars of Bray" or similar in the Revolution 1640-1660. He refers apparently to some in the Colleges, who kept their places by complying with the Presbyterians and Independents; and at the Restoration, they were treated about and acted like protei." Athenae Oxon.  
Whitaker mentions clergymen who conformed to all changes 1640-1660  
Hes. el. y. 35.

Episc. Schismatic.

Locke says, that he that denies not what the scriptures teach in express words, nor makes a separation upon anything that is not manifestly contained in the sacred text, is neither a heretick nor a schismatic.

Schism <sup>as I understand</sup> is a separation. &c. (seems not to agree with the above) yet I think his idea is that he that separates from a church because of its departure from scripture, is not a schismatic.

Names given to the Reformers - according to Tyndale.  
 Rayless, seclitions, Masters of Discord, Troublers,  
 of the common peace, Schismaticks, Hereticks.

*Herpes* [Muscul. 9. 247. 279.]

Knott's were esteemed seditions.

Sedition. Seditious. As Hall says a seditious man in the state, or a schismatic in the church is like a sulphureous fery vapor in the bowels of the earth, making it reel again

Belgium.

4. Particular, a man but the Belgian Assembly, says  
the families in Belgium are as follows: -

154,454, families who occupy only a single room  
282,785, do " " by two rooms  
453,327, do " " three or more rooms

Total 890 566. averaging 5 persons to a family. About half have only one or two rooms; comfort & decency must be wanting in many of these houses.

Belgium has 10 paper to 7. hers; in some districts 17. 4.  
The arm of 80. 000 costs 15 millions of dollars a year. There  
is a heavy debt of which the annual interest, &c. is 7 millions  
being receives 8000. 000. Much drinking. Leg. pay a debt  
of a million of dollars. N.Y. Tribune. Sept. 1856.

\* Clearing

At 65, was the vicar of St. Mary in Berkshire was  
St. Lomou & Hays, who died in 1588. He had been alternately  
Catholic & Protestant, in times of Henry VIII, Edward VI. Mary  
and Elizabeth. But the author of the Ballad & sign known,  
was modernized the vicar brought his very white dove to  
the two times to times, whigs & Tories. When George came he  
said, "once more" And so became a whig, Sir - War this the  
old ballad, or a latrine.



History of Maine, by Am. D. Williamson  
In 2 Volumes. Halliwell 1832. - 1 of Bangor

Piscataqua River - boundary of Maine its at-  
length of [He says the word means "right angles". !!]  
Length to the Sea 40 miles - Course S. S. E.

At the head is a pond fed by two other ponds.

Quampegan Falls, at the head of the tide, are 26  
miles below the ponds. This is only a mill stream, of  
Salmon Fall River is its name, viz the river of 26 miles.  
Salmon Falls are 1 1/2 mile above Quampegan;  
Great Falls are about 4 1/2 miles above Quampegan.  
Stair Falls are about 10 miles above Quampegan.

Quampegan Falls are rapids or descents for a mile.  
The river is navigable to the foot of them 14 miles.  
The tide comes up to these falls. [The Indian  
name is said to indicate that fish are taken  
here in nets. Very doubtful].

Newichawannock is the name of the river  
from Quampegan to the junction of Cochecho,  
Oyster, Exeter & New Market rivers, 4 miles.  
This river bears vessels of 100 tons near to the falls.

The great Landing Place is at Quampegan.

Piscataqua is the name of the river for 8 or 9 miles,  
from the junction of Cochecho, &c. to the sea.

There are small creeks & streams on the east side

Agamenticus or York river has 7 miles of  
flood tide, & has a good harbor. It is a small stream  
above the tide.

Cape Neddock river is 4 miles east of York river.  
Flows from foot of Agamenticus Mountain. Not navigable in  
low water & only a mile in high water.

Negunket, formerly Aguntiquit, is a small river, or  
boundary of York & Wells:

Salt marshes very extensive are in Wells; and Wells  
has a tolerable harbor, east of Negunket a few miles.

Mousom river, formerly Cape Porpoise river, or  
Maguncook, rises in a pond in S. Lapleigh 20 miles  
distant. Has not a natural harbor - is 2 1/2 miles E. of Wells  
harbor - has a canal.

Kennebunk river is 2 miles East of Mousom, but west of  
Cape Porpoise; smaller than Mousom but has a good  
harbor for small vessels.

Kennebunk Village is on the Mousom.

Kennebunk Port, seems on the Kennebunk.

Cape Porpoise, 7 leagues N. E. of Cape Neddock - is east of  
Kennebunk river - a narrow difficult harbor.

Saco River comes next - 140 miles long - called formerly  
Sawocotuck, Sewahqua took, & by Roger Sockhigon  
Sagwaket, Peckwaket or Peguawett - said to mean Sandy Land - about  
36 miles to gain 4 miles.



# Maine.

Scarborough is east of Sacon. extends to Spawwinck river east at mouth of river. Black Point & Blue Point are in Scarborough.

Old Halmouth comes next - embraced Cape Elizabeth - Westbrook, Portland & Falmouth. De Laet calls it Tolam.

Cape Elizabeth extends, on the coast, from the mouth of Spawwinck, 8 miles to Porpoise Neck, on the shore runs, & 2 to 3 miles wide. Spawwinck settlement was towards Spawwinck river, and now is. Porpoise Neck village is opposite the compact part of Portland and connected by a bridge. - Land at Porpoise Neck was called by Indians Apistama.

Indian Island 2 1/2 miles S.W. of Cape Elizabeth Point

North Yarmouth lay next east of Portland; embraced present Freeport & Pownal. as well as North Yarmouth. Magocook bay adjoined it. First settlements on Narrakeet river in western part. Magocook was a part of Magocook bay - its N.E. part.

Merryconneag is a peninsula in Hallowell. 9 miles long and average width 1 mile, connected with Brunswick by a narrow isthmus.

Sekascodegan is an island east of Merryconneag lying north of Quaquebay - has 70 houses

New Meadows Bay & river are east of Sekascodegan island - form an arm of the sea 15 miles long, up north to within one mile of the Androscoggin.

Cape Small Point is 2 1/2 leagues south easterly of New Meadows river at its mouth - inhabited.

Casco Bay (formerly Acovisco) is between Cape Elizabeth & Cape Small Point - 9 leagues. has 5 principal entrances. About 110 islands are seen in this bay above the water at the height of common tides. Some inhabited.

Great Gelseag, formerly 10 leagues, contains 1800 acres; is the largest except Sekascodegan; has 43 families. Belongs to North Yarmouth.

Orrs Island connected with Sekascodegan, a bridge has 30 families.

Ct. Sekascodegan (same as above) is 6 1/2 by 3 miles; but its circuit is 30 miles, connected with Brunswick by a bridge. 450 inhabitants. Is a part of Hallowell.

Sequin Island, at mouth of Sagadahock river, 25 miles E. N. E. of Cape Elizabeth, 2 miles from S. E. corner of Phippsburg has 11 lighthouse on it. Formerly Satquin. Is 4 miles from Cape Small Point. latter is in Phippsburg.



## Rivers &amp;c

*Sagadahock* River loses name 20 miles from its mouth; constitutes *Androscoggin* ("Amoughcawgen, formerly) and *Kennebec* rivers, at *Merry Meeting Bay*.

*Pepiscon* was old name of *Androscoggin* from the falls at Brunswick to *Merry Meeting Bay*.

The Bay, from the Falls to the *Kennebec* may be 10 miles.

*Alagadusset* is a small stream from N.W.

*Weske* & *Creek* is 2 miles long extends South into land from near the shops.

*Kennebec* river 130 miles - (not so crooked as *Androscoggin*), in a direct line - runs 170 miles to *W. M. Bay*.

*Erratum* Falls - 35 or 40 feet in one shot, 14 miles above *Norridgewock* Falls - famous for *Salmon* formerly.

*Sandy River*; lands on it celebrated for beauty & fertility. Here were the Indians' corn fields.

*Norridgewock* point, a fertile interval, is opposite the mouth of *Sandy River*. Present Village is 6 miles below the point.

*Norridgewock* Falls just above mouth of *Sandy River* - are rapids - not a cataract.

*Scouhegan* Falls. miles below. River receives *Wessor* river, near the falls.

*Seconnet* Falls - 15 miles below *Scouhegan* Falls.

*Sebasticook* comes in near falls. *Fort Halifax* here, in present *W. M. Bay*.

*Fort Western* in *Augusta* 16 miles S. of *Fort Halifax*.

*Cobbescontee* (*Sturgeon* river) comes in at *Yard*. Comes in *Wentworth* pond.

*Swan Island*, between *Bowdoinham* W. & *Dresden* E. 4 miles long & 200 yds. mean width. Is a part of *Dresden*.

*Kepumkeag* is a small island & stream in *Pittston*. called also *Negumkike* (or *Eel-bed*, he says).

*Pownalborough* included *Dresden*, *Wescamnet* & *Salva* (ancient). *Frankfort*. Had a fort on the river 1754.

*Richmond* fort, an ancient one, was on west side of river 1/2 mile below *Frankfort*, & nearly opposite the upper end of *Swan Island*.

*Sagadahock*, he says (quotes *Hon. D. Sewall*) was anciently *Sunkatunkarunk*, meaning mouth of rivers. - or rather *imkaradenk*. Be to *Merry Meeting Bay*, has *Bath* & *Shipburg*, west; and *Woolwich* & *Norwintown*, East. *Arrowsick* island on E. side. *Arrowsick*, opposite *Bath*, & *Park's Island* still lower. Part of the river runs N. of *Arrowsick* into *Sheepscot* river - (*Arroscoguin* *Salt*).



Nequasset stream is in Woolwich. Place called.

Arrowsick or Arroseeag Island has 4000 acres.  
was early settled. Marseag Bay on N. or N.E.

m. 3. 345. Parkers Island, formerly Erastokegan, S.E. of Arrowsick,  
has 10,000 acres. 500 acres marsh. Georgetown.

Pemaquid. (formerly Pemaquid eag. or Pemaquida.

see page 201. John's River is an arm of the sea, stretching up  
2 miles from N.W. part of Pemaquid bay into the  
land between Damariscotta & Pemaquid rivers.

Pemaquid river is small; issues from Pemaquid pond  
in Nobleborough & is only 14 miles long.

Fort George was on the E. bank of Pemaquid river  
near its mouth where it turns to the West. It is 40 rods  
wide & tides from 14 to 16 feet. The fort was on a point  
of land that projects into the river.

Pemaquid bay is a pleasant harbor.

From the fort, south to Pemaquid point is  
3 1/4 miles.

Pemaquid river is generally about 4 miles from  
Damariscotta river, over land.

Muscongus river merges with the tide at Nobleborough.

St George river (formerly Segochet) meets the tide in Warren.

Jeremiguan Island, a part of Edgecomb has  
15,460 acres. (near Wiscasset).

Monhegan island was the most famous in Maine.

m. 3. 345. Is 5 leagues S.E. of Townsend - has over 1000 acres  
of good land - some good harbor. 12 or 14 houses  
on the island - people rural & well informed.

Belong to no county; have no officers: - govern  
themselves as they please - pay no taxes except

for their school. <sup>1855</sup> only 2 deaths in 5 years. said to contain

1,800. <sup>1855</sup> 120 inhabitants. Metinic Island 7 miles from Monhegan, has 30 acres  
of good land, & 12 families. Belongs to no town.

Owl's head, N.E. part of Thomaston was formerly Mecadacut

Matinicus Island is W. of Metinic has  
750 acres of good land. 16 families live there

The live without law & without rules - never voted and  
never were taxed. Have a school & school house, and  
a Baptist Church of 22 members.

Penobscot river - about 200 miles. Formerly Indecum  
called it Penobskag; the French Penlaget. From  
the bay to Mt Desert, was called Nasket.

p. 11. Chatawankeag, a branch, said to mean a stream running over  
a gravelly bed. (Doubtful)

m. 3. 344. Ketow or Necotok a branch, said to be where two rivers meet  
at an acute angle. (very doubtful. The fact is - m. 3. 344)

3. 344. Passadumkeag. Where water falls into a river above the falls.  
(no reliance on this). Has grassy meadows & mud boulders.



190 Maine.

Branches Penobscot - continued, or branches varieties

Sebascohegan, branch of the Tenawamkeag.

Medunkaunk, branch of Penobscot

Medamiscundus, " do.

Metanawook " do

m. 3. 344 Piscataquis, runs 100 miles - 30 rods wide.

Sunkhaze - means Dead water at mouth of a stream (Doubtful)

Kenduskeag, runs 50 miles - enters at Bangor. 8 rods wide

Segeunkedunk -

Sowadabscook or Sowadapscoo.

Penobscot generally from 80 to 100 rods wide. Tides at Bangor 15 ft.

Majorbigaduce point - on eastern shore of the bay

Many Islands in Penobscot Bay.

Schoodie river, he says is Scatuck, Indian

At the bestuck Hills or Camden Mountains,

called Penobscot Hills, 10 miles N.W. of Head

and not far distant from Camden Village.

There are 5 or 6 - some 900 feet high; old boundary

of Bashaba W. & Narratives E. - mentioned by

Capt Wapmouth 1605, & Capt Smith 1614. The highest

1500 feet high - in Camden. A great prospect

from there, of the See, Penobscot Bay, &c.

Mount Agamenticus - a noted landmark in York.

8 miles N.W. of the harbor. From the summit is

an extensive prospect.

Mt Kineo near Moosehead Lake - said to mean flint.

900 feet high. 120 miles from Bangor.

## Land.

Ledgy - much of it near Seaboard.

Clayey - from ledges to head of tide water, near rivers.

Loamy - on higher grounds between the rivers, & fertile

Salt marshes & Wells, Searboro, Falmouth, Machias, &c

Fertile generally, in rear of the ledge land.

Good swamps, about heads & branches of rivers & brooks

Sandy Plains, with pitch & white pine, in Wells

Burns, Wick, Topsham, Gray, Shapleigh, &c

Intervals, on the sea & in Fryeburg; from Gilead

to Weston Falls on the Kennebec again; between

Showhegan Falls & the Forks on the Kennebec,

on Sandy River, in Farmington 2000 acres, &c.

In Sunkhaze, Orono & other places on the

Penobscot. - Good soil on Aroostic, &c.



# Maene.

Clear, Temperature, Winds, Rain, Snow, Hail,  
Thunder & Lightning, Freshets, Droughts, followed by  
fires, weather, the Season, Winters.

Each Month of the year.

May is the month of Seedtime & Blossoms.

English cherries ~~usually~~ begin to blossom about middle of May  
Apple trees " " " " about 3 weeks in May

Cattle are fed with hay from Nov 20 to May 20.

Foggs. Aurora Borealis

## Trees.

Chest, white & black. Beech 3 varieties, Bass.

Birch whitest; black, yellow; Alder,

Button wood, Buller nut, Cedar, red, and

the white or Thuja occidentalis. Wild cherry  
Elder black & red, Elm, white & red. Hornbeam  
or Iron wood; Juniper, Maple white, red & rock.

mud sugar from the latter.  
Oak 3 species, black, red, white, chestnut,  
and shrub oak.

Wild plum; Pine, white, yellow & Norway,  
pitch, larch, fir, hemlock, spruce.  
He makes 7 species of pine.

Poplar, aspen or white, & Balsam poplar or balsam of  
epicad - willow white & swamp.

Sandpiper, Fever bush, Leather wood or Indian  
wickape (Muller use it for bag strings & thimbles  
for cordage).

He classifies the trees according to size. Says the oldest  
on the Oak spine, some being between 500 & 1000 years  
old.

## Shrubs

Buckley Ash, Mountain Ash, Alder meaning Prinos Vert.

Barberry, Bayberry, Boxwood or Shadblow (an aronia)

Bramble kind 7 species, Gooseberry, Black currant

Dogwood or cornel (he describes the Cornus Florida)

Whortle berries 4 species; Cranberries, Hardhack

Hazel, Wild Hare, Ground Hemlock, Lambkill,

or mountain Laurel, Mosserwood (Dica palustris  
named before) Osier, plum, Cherry, Rosebush

Poison Sumac, Common Sumac, Sweet fern  
Thorn bush

## Plants & Herbs

Agrimony, Rhododendron, Angelica, Ophioglossum

Asarum, Bearberry, Butter sweet, Betony, Banberry

Bloodroot or Puccoon, Buckbean, Asclepias tuberosa,

Celandone, Comfrey, Catnip, Columbine, Cowslip

Cuckhold (beggarticks) Chokeberry (Mittella)

"Clover is common", Geum rivale, Asarum Canadense

Anagallis arvensis, Crowfoot Geranium, Dandelion

Deersbane, Dovesfoot violet, Wake Robin, Elecampane

Fluorid, Triosteum perfoliatum, Sweet flag



## Plants &amp; herbs continued

Cattail flag, Blue flag or Iris, Foxglove,  
 Ginseng, Golden Rod, Gold Thread,  
 Greasewood — Knot, illa, sweetscented, tickle,  
 white, bog, goose, bluejoint, four meadows,  
 harsock, redtop, white clover, crowfoot,  
 star grass, many more as *Brown*,  
 bent, cocksfoot, hair, quaking, panic, soft.  
 Rub Chir. thier, Heartsease, Heal all, Hellebore (*Veratrum*  
*viride*)  
 (Poke resembles Hellebore. (His Hellebore is the poke  
 root & his poke is Stink Cabbage) Yet he  
 supposes that Josselyn's poke is what the Indians  
 took is the *Veratrum viridis*. — Horned toad  
 Henbane, Horseradish, Indian cucumber,  
 Indian Hemp, Spurge, Lobelia — Indian Tobacco,  
 (He says the Indian Tobacco which the Indians  
 use with their tobacco is a shrub, of which they  
 use the bark.) Life Everlasting, Loveage  
 Lungwort, Lionwort, Life grass, Darkspur,  
 Lilies several species, Pond lily white, & yellow.  
 Marsh Marigold (*Statice Carolina*) *Eryngium yuccifolium*,  
 mayweed, Motherwort, Maidenhair, aspen brake,  
 Spearwort, Mullein, meadow lark, all other  
 Milkweed (*Asclepias*). Milkweed (*Asclepias*) Nightshade,  
 Nettles, Wild Onion, Wild Bar, Wild pea, Oak  
 Jerusalem, Pennyroyal, T. thymorrel, Plantain  
 Parslain, Poor Robin, Plantain, Poke or Gargeton  
 Pigeon berries — Rushes several species  
 Sarsaparilla, Skullcap, Spikenard, Sheepsfoot  
 Wild Sunflower, Solomon Seal, Seaweed,  
 Carweed, Rowanweed, Succory.  
 Stink cabbage (*Ichthyophaga*). seems not his poke above  
 Shewberry, Two eyed berry (grows with near checkerberry)  
 Thruster, Thoroughwort, Violet, Daisy, Watercress  
 Pyrolas, Wormwood, Wild Marjoram, &  
 Artichoke, Ground nuts, Snakeroot, Feverroot,  
 Wild grapes, Woodbine, Hop is indigenous, Poison ivy,  
 Hemlock,  
 Arrowhead, Sandwort, Convolvulus, Burdock, Gerbil,  
 Burr many gold, Bush Honeysuckle, Abortive Cowfoot,  
 Caneupoil, Cackles, Cowparsly, Cowheat, Crosswort,  
 Dogbane, Dwarf Alder, Earthnut, Ferns, Humitory, Senecio,  
 Wild Honeysuckle, Horehound, Indian pipe, Labrador Tea,  
 Ladies Slipper, *Andromeda calyculata*, *Scellum* Loosestrife  
 Meadow Rue, Meadow Sweet, Headhack, Medlar, Yarrow,  
 Monk's flower, Mushroom, Mustard, Hydrocotyle, Pickweed  
 Oxeye Daisy, Pigweed (*Arenopodium*) pepperwort, Aries,  
 Samphire, Myosotis, Sedge or Carex many species,  
 Sidesaddle flower, Johnswort, Sonchus, Snowball  
 Rusty Elder, Speedwell, Spring beauty, *Heclysorum*  
 Turnip flower (*Lizenzia*) Venus Prige, *Calla palustris*  
 with *hyssopus*, *Sium*, *Penanthus*, *Elyrium*, *Anemone*  
 follow *Hub.* Wood Sorrel.



# Maine

Grasses. Heads — Barn, Blue-eyed, Chess,  
Cotton, Couch, Dropsid, Goosefoot, Horsetail,  
Herds, Indian Sweet, Knot, Meadow, Mullet,  
Orchard, Redtop, Timothy.

(Much that is wrong in his Trees, plants, & herbs.  
He meddled with things that he did not under-  
stand.

## Quadrupeds

Bat, Bear, Raccoon, Wolverine or Carcajou  
Beaver, Muskrat, Galamouth Indian, Lunkson).  
Wildcat, Blackcat called Wooleneag, Couperrier  
moose. Deer, Caribou, Fox red, silvergray, black, cross.  
Wolf, Hare, Rabbit, Mole, Mouse, shrew, ground & field.  
Hedgehog, Rat of the woods, Skunk. Ermine or Sable  
Squirrel, black, gray, red, striped, flying, Martin  
Mink, Otter, Weasel, Woodchuck

## Birds.

Bobolink, Cherrybird, Creeper, Nutcracker, Cuckoo,  
whetsaw, Crossbill, Turtle Dove, Wild Pigeon, Duck;  
Brant, Coot, Dipper, Noddy, Oldwife, Teal, Quindar,  
Whistler, Widgeon, Birdhawk, Kingbird, Chewink & Punt-  
Redwing Blackbird, Golden Robin, Kingbird, Chipping Bird,  
Winter Sparrow, Yellow bird, Spring bird, Flycatchers,  
Catbird, Hedgebird, Yellow Crown, Goose blk. blue, & white  
Grouse or Heathcock, Partridge, Quail. Gulls several sorts  
Baldpate Eagle, Brown Hawk, Kestrel, & Skunk  
Pigeon Hawk, Fishing Hawk, Heron, Crane, Stork.  
Humming Bird, Kingfisher, Skylark, marshlark, Red Tanager  
Loons, brown throat, & sea. Owls 4 species, Pelican, Snag  
Plover, Killdeer, Oxeye, Peep, Petrel, Crow, Bluejay  
Crow Blackbird, Penguin, Murr, Sea Parrot,  
Sheldrake, Snipe, Woodcock, Curlew,  
3 Sparrows viz. Chipping bird, Ground bird, Snowbird.  
5 Swallows viz. Barn, Chimney, 2 of Martin  
Thrush Fox colored, Thrasher or Mockbird, Robin.  
Titmouse, Tomteet, Humility & other Springs. Bluebird,  
Wrens, Wagtail, Waterwitch,  
7 Woodpeckers viz. great red, swallowtailed, redhead, whiteback,  
woollyback, whitetail, speckled,  
yellow Hammer, Whippoorwill, Night hawk  
wild Turkey — very seldom found in Maine.

Fishes 60 species. He says Tomcod & Trout fish are the same

Shell Fishes; many species. Tortoises.

Worms, Frogs, Toads, Lizards, Serpents 8 species  
Rattlesnakes never seen East of Kennebec River  
Beetles, Chirpers, Bugs, Caterpillars, Butterflies, Bees,  
Ants, Spiders, Flies

Judge Weston says wolves killed sheep in Augusta near the Stone  
Court House that was in about 1790.



194. Marine

Massachusetts purchased George's  
Island in Maine May 6. 1677. John Usher  
then in England, was the agent to make  
the purchase. Price £1250 sterling  
[with says May 15. 1678. ~~was~~ right. see page, 200.]

Marine Indians.

Belonged to New Hampshire Indians as far as *Agamenticus*.  
Eastern Indians began East of *Agamenticus*.

I Abenagues. — called Wapamacki, among the East  
 also Wabenakis, Eastland men.  
 The French shortened the sound to Ageneries

Wabemo. mean. light, or least, & aski, stand or earth,

The Abenagues extend from Agamenticus or near it to St Georges river. Smith names 11 tribes of them or 11 places of residence. Only 4 tribes,

1 Sokokis or Sockigones, on the Sacc near

or Anasagunticooks or Pesagunticooks, Amerascoggan, Aumoughcowgen - are names of this tribe & their residence. Amerascoggan is said to mean, Banks of river abounding in dried meat, that is venison.

These claimed Andronoggin & its lands to all, excepting B  
and the west side of Sagadahock to the sea. Pezefox  
or Brunswick Falls was their place of resort.

Canibas, lived on the Kennebeck. Kennebis <sup>chief</sup> resided on Swan Island. Abagadunet on N. side of Old Mill Bay, near the Kennebeck. There & other chiefs sold the lands ten miles in width on each side of the river from Swan Island to Wenarunet river near Couchegans Falls. Another chief was Essemenosque who possessed Tecoumet.

*C. Korridgewoek*, are same as *Cassiba*.

Norridge is falls, and rock, smooth water, he says.  
Not to be relied on.

4 Wawenocks, lived from Sagadahock to St George's river  
called also Wawenocks, Weweenocks, Wewenocks.  
Capt Francis says the word means, very brave.

11 Etechemung or Etechemins - who inhabited  
from Penobscot to St John's, both inclusive.  
(who lived from St George's river to Penobscot?) 3 Tribes,

1 Tarratines on + about Penobscot - extended W. to mountains in Can. den. Remnant live at Oldtown.

2 Openaños about Panamaguddy Bay & Schuadi river,  
 & 2u Adle. Their Openaños said to mean Little Salt.  
 Their residence in Perry. (very cunning)

3. Mareschites or Amouchiquois. lived about  
near Oueygon, or St John.

iron Ouygonoy, or St John.  
Blackmacks or Sauriqua, inhabits Nova Scotia, Cape Breton, &c  
(Capt Francis whom he quotes is an Indian.



Abenagues & Etchehemins - could understand each other.

Keag is their name for land - to which they prefix other words & form the names of rivers.

Periopskeag, meaning rockland

Gundskag (Kenduskag) means leg-land.

Uedawantkeag - - - - ripples or pebbles land.

Pascodumogwonkeag, is Indian for Panamaquaddy  
Pascodum for pollock; ogwon for many; keag for land.

War of 1675.

Squanto, chief of Sokokis

Tarumkin " of Anasagunticook.

Robin Hood " of Canibai. His son, Hopewood.

Madockawando " of Parratines. Mugg, his minister.

Sagamore - pronounced by Indians Sunk-a-muk.  
He says - He was chief.

Sachem. was a councilor or wise man under a Sagamore.

Great Spirit - Tanta a Tatum of Abenagues  
Sagoo " of Etchehemins

Evil Spirit - Majohando

Good spirit - Mannitan.

Washing

Indians do not wash face, hands, clothes, or vessels.  
Their dark & dirty abodes are offensive to eye & nose.

Females sustain a much better character than men.

Ice.

Kennebeck is closed between Nov 14. & Dec 11. 1819 to 1825  
do breaks up " closed 27 & April 15. " to "

Penobscot closes between Nov 28. & Dec 13. " to "  
do opens " April 1 & April 18. " to "

Georgeekeag - so the Indians called the lower town  
on Georges river. (now Thomaston)

2000 men from Massachusetts Maine to Nova Scotia  
in 1755 -

Blue Hill. This town was named from a majestic Hill  
250 feet high. When covered with evergreen, its appearance  
was dark blue.

Mount Desert Island has 60,000 acres only  $\frac{1}{3}$  can be cultivated  
mountain over 2000 feet high.

Camden, & Megunticook is on west shore of Penobscot Bay.  
The highest mountain is at least 1000 feet above the sea.  
In another place he has 1500 feet - He often contra-  
dict himself.

Belfast, is on a stream named by Indians Passagassawa-keag.  
which Indians say means "place of sights or ghosts."



Portland Neck was called Machigonne by Indians 1630  
 " " also called Machagony by ~~the~~ 1659

Wentworth's Machegony, Machegone, &c. <sup>Willis' History of Portland</sup>

Presumpscot river at Casco is written also  
 Presumpscot, Presumpscot, Presumpscot.

Eag at the end signifies land, he-sag, sag  
 in Penobskeag, Naumkeag, &c.

Early Settlers of Maine under Gorges manifest  
 a litigious spirit, vicious & there.

m. Saladok. So Sebago pond is called 1659. Casco  
 river is said to run from it.

Chebeag Island at Falmouth, in Casco Bay, contains  
 2000 acres. Sometimes called Chebecho - now  
 in Cumberland. Little Chebeag has 180 acres

Susconong - Indian name of Cousins Island, New York

"Acentismen prevailed throughout the province  
 in the first stages of its history"

Westcustogo - Indian name of New York

1666. "It cannot be disguised that the tone of  
 morality in the province was and had ever  
 been at a low point."

Sawmills. In 1682, there were 24 Sawmills in  
 up. 38 Maine, viz in Kittery & Berwick 6, Wells and  
 Kennebunk 6, York 2, Cape Porpoise 4.  
 Saco 2, Casco 3, Black Point 1.

Men were sent by Mason and Gorges, 1634  
 to erect a Sawmill at Piscataqua, and  
 another at Agawamitecus. <sup>Winthrop.</sup>

Articles sent to England, 1638, &c. Pipe Staves,  
 beaver, fish, oil.

Sawmills & Cornmills were in Maine 1640.

Mill at Falmouth <sup>(Gorges Narrative)</sup> erected on Presumpscot river about 1645,  
 probably a corn mill.

Corn Mill at Black point 1670. & at Casco 1670.

"Amancongan" is name of Indian village, in Indian  
 deed 1666; and great falls in the river are called  
 Sacarabigg. (Saccarappe)

Kennebec & Ogunquit - names of rivers in N. H. <sup>Winthrop</sup> 1643  
 Kennebec river named 1643. <sup>(also Ogunquit)</sup>



*Inventories of the Robert Trelawny estate, Merchant, &  
of the John Winter's of Richmond Island & Spunk  
Oct 10. 1648. R. Trelawny owned 1/10. J. Winter 1/10. both dec?*

*Lands not taken, Housing & buildings, 80<sup>th</sup>. 3600<sup>th</sup>, 28<sup>th</sup>  
3/20 ordnance; muskets, halberds, long pikes, sword  
Howling pieces, 1 harquebus, Skiff, canoe, root shins,  
whipsaws, thwart saws, axes, hoes, adze, drawing knife,  
cutting, reeling rings & wedges, reaphooks, saws, leavers,  
grinding stone, trowell, pitchforks, shovel, spade,  
lanthorn, brewing Kettle & other Kettles, 1 new Kettle,  
2 iron pots - an old one out of use 20/.*

*2 Triposts (trevels), 2 iron posthangers, old boxier 1/1.  
1 chamber pot, 2 pot hooks, 2 tin platters  
1 quart pot, 2 Water buckets, 1 ten Gason -  
1 Cowle, 1 pair tongs, 17 milk pails + 5  
2 bowls, 3 wooden platters, 1 Churn  
5 Chests, 3 Cutters & shenas, 1 pr Steely  
1 pair scales, 25<sup>th</sup> Lead, 2 old wheelbarrows  
16 white, motheaten, 1 old flag, small earthen ware  
400<sup>th</sup> hoops, 2 bill hooks, 2 tubs  
2 cheese vats, 1 post changer, 1 hand saw  
1 pickaxe, 2 old boxes, Goldscythes  
1 pair of elms, Old Iron, 6 herring lines  
2 plow chains, 1 dung pot, 1 pot hanger  
2 wooden platters, 1 old lanthorn, - 6 old bags  
1 seine & 2 old nets, 90/ 7 pickaxes & 4 trows 18/ 10 fishing leads 5/.  
1 Cock & Key 2 splitters & 5 gutters, 1 Kettle 40/-*

*4 Cows - £20.0.0 - 4 steers - £20. - 20 bush meal 4.10  
12 calves 13.10.0 - 3 heifers 9 - some musty peas 0.10  
18 goats, young & old 4.10.0 - 5 steers 20 - 1/4 Cut bread 0.6.3  
13 - 64.0.0 - 16 pigs of 2 yrs. 28 - 4 Cut beef 5/ 4.10.  
6 yearlings 13.0.0 - 7 pigs of 1 yr. 3 1/2 - 21 Cheeses 1.15  
3 Oxen for yoke 40.0.0 - 3 1/2 - 160<sup>th</sup> Butter 4.0  
1 bull 9.5.0 - 2 sucking pigs 5/ - 22<sup>th</sup> soap 0.12.  
5 bullocks 32.0.0 - 24 pigs on Island £18 - 90<sup>th</sup> Salt 65.0.  
Crop of Corn, peas, barley, wheat - £53.0.0. 2 bush Malt 0.10  
30<sup>th</sup> powder, Cannon, 30/.*

*All 647. 1. 3. viz. Mr. Winter, 64. 14. 1 1/2*

*Mr. Towd some & some to them; Mr. T's 1/10 due to him 82.0.5 1/2  
& Mr. W. also Mr. T's 1/10 owed 62.4.8 1/2*

*They owed Robert Jordan for 10. 9  
his ministry 1/2 year. £20 } added to his estate, £19. 4. 8  
as by composition }  
also for his charge 1/2 year 20 }  
They had Ministers bedding & Communion }  
vessels. } Dried fish seems 12 1/8 qd.  
Train oil, & mackerel. }  
Train oil - 52 1/6 hhd. }  
Mackerel 48 1/2 hhd. }  
277 lb beef, owed for 0 3 d. 69 1/3 }  
16 bush meal do 24 1/2 64 1/2 }*



198 Maine Hist. Col. Vol. 1. 1831.

Wells, settled about 1640-

Salary of Rev John Buss - 1672. - 60<sup>th</sup> used of passage house  
and land. To be paid 5<sup>th</sup> in money - rest in wheat & 5<sup>th</sup>.  
corn 1<sup>st</sup> beef 4d. boards 4<sup>th</sup> 100

Salary of Rev. Richard Marten - 1689 - 50<sup>th</sup>, sur. of house & land  
payable in wheat 4<sup>th</sup>, rye 2/6, peas 4<sup>th</sup>, pork 2<sup>nd</sup>.  
boards 19<sup>th</sup>. woo. staves 17<sup>th</sup>. 1000

boards 19<sup>s</sup>. 1000. salt 11<sup>s</sup>.  
Salary of Rev Samuel Emery, 1701. 50<sup>l</sup>. Land as before  
payable in wheat 5<sup>l</sup>. corn 3<sup>l</sup>. rye 3<sup>l</sup>/<sub>6</sub> } but not at base  
Hock 3d, beef 2d, & 25 cords wood } + 110 acres given  
out to sett.

Church organized at Kennelbank in Wells 1750.  
Kennelbank a town 1821 - was 2 parish of Wells

Wells has (1825) <sup>600</sup> 1400 acres of barren <sup>800</sup> marsh, the best land  
 5000 " of pitch pine plains, not worth improving  
 9400 " of sandy, gravelly land poor.  
 900 " of bledges & beaches.  
 16000 " covered with timber - maybe improved.  


---

 26700  
 1800 " Salt marsh growing poorer - 1/2 in a year  
 300 " fresh marsh  
 5000 " of good land under improvement  
 7200 " clay & loam " do  


---

 35000 acres in all.

morals p. 192. twice

Rev George Burdett, Episcopal minister at  
Albany (York) under Gorges, in 1640.

Agassiz was indicted "for a man of ill name & fame, infamous for incontinency, a publisher & broadcaster of of divers dangerous speeches, the better to seduce that

Disc. 2. 906. Weak sex of women to his incontinent practices". Awarded 10<sup>th</sup> sterling by Court at Saco, to the king, and 10<sup>th</sup> to Geo. Pudding to whose wife had been with him; had committed adultery with wife of John Gough. She was to stand in a white sheet publicly in the congregation at 10 ga. mentions two Sabbath days, & one day at the general Court "according to his majesty's law in that case provided".

Wolves killed cattle. 1/2 bounty for killing a wolf 1640.  
 Wolves killed cattle. 1/2 bounty for killing a wolf 1640.  
 Wolves killed cattle. 1/2 bounty for killing a wolf 1640.

All who had children unbaptized were obliged  
to bring them to baptism, as soon as a minister  
was settled in their plantation; or answer their contempt, &c.  
— or all from Piscataqua to Kennebunk. 1640

*Pinus Alleni* acuminata.

jurors to have 3/4 a day, 1661, & 3/4 a day going & coming  
to & from the pillory at York "next training day" 1671

A woman to stand with a gag in her mouth half an hour  
at Killybeg in town sleeping, for striking her husband. 1671

Order the King.

A woman for fornication, to stand 3. abbaths in a white sheet in public meeting or pay 5£. The 5£ was paid. 1686. The judges ap. by Carr. Gathright and Lovelock.



1690 Complaint of Ordinaries. ordered  
 that the keepers sell no "rum, or strong liquor  
 or *Flie*" to town's people; not over a jill to a stranger.  
 Court at York

Newgewanacke - for Newichawannock ap-  
 parently - so used twice by Edward Rishworth  
 1656 - They wanted a minister at it.

Norridgewock Language is said to be the  
 same as that of the Penobscots. That at Pannam-  
 squoddy is different in some respects

Words in Norridgewock from Father Rallé (by Gov. Lincoln.  
 [He read many of them wrong]

Abow. Tonbee		Mountain, Pamahdane
Strong non-patenn		Bird. Sipsis
Arrow without head, akroos		Portage, Oonegan
Arrow with plumage, Koukskany		Cat, Paswise
Beast - ahovahis		Song, Keoobhdwangan
Finer Wild beast, ahooahankdon		Horse, Ahharoo
dooak		Chase, Pipamagon
Indian corn, Skahmoon		Way, Ahnoodee
White corn, Boanbighanoom		Chief, Pakootahgahkigon
Skahmoonar		Crow, Mkahret.
Red corn, Mleskoobenoomeanar		Horn, Ahookoor.
Black corn, tlegnemenar		Head, Matepo
Yellow corn, oosoomenar.		Forehead, Mskatagwa
Little corn, Ahbaphnar		Eye - Pseehoo
Great corn, Skagooanauanar		Cheek, Mahwa
Strong Drink, Ahhoobee		Tongue, Mrahoo
A Branch, Paskahhakoon		Ear, antahooahkoo
Arm, Padan		Devil, Matseeneoethkoo.
Cabin, Wegwan		Water, Nahbe
Canoe, Agooiden		Child, Coansis
Captain, Songmon		Star, Ooaktahooessoo
Image, Ahookigon		Fire, Skootap
Flower, Pepskooahsahook		Leaf, Meebee
River, Seepoo		Tempest, Hasoutgwee
wave, Tagoo		Squirrel, Nooka
Ditch, Pooskanegon		male squirrel, Aianba nooka
Skund, Padangheahkoo		female do, Kevag-nooka
Attusket, Pestkooondee		Bear, - Ooasoo
Boy - Ooskanoo		Male Bear, Ahranooank
Hook, Mkekan		Female do, Atseeskoo
Meat, Paboon		High, Spamek - Black, Mkatravog- hum
Meat, Ahranouba		Slow, Telnetebneis. All, Mlesseewee
Garden, Keekom		slowly, Nananmeh - right, Sannagheooe
Day, Keesookoo		Different, Peerecooa.
Milk, Pagwaksabum		Ooantakeg, tranquil.
Bed, Kahoodel		
Morning, Tsakiwa		
Middle, Naberom		



Col. Montessoro, a British Officer, came through Maine from Quebec, 1760. His journal is published. He had Abenakis Indians with him, & seems to have got his names from them.

Original - so he names Moosehead Lake; and he says it takes its name from a mountain near it, which resembles a moose in a stooping posture.

Ushga - a mountain near the lake.

Ohegla, a mountain - one of the high in this region; or Onegola } to the N.E. - he had seen it before

Panavanset, at the foot of which runs Penobscot, - higher still.

Onqueachonta, a mountain on bank of the Kennebec.

Arransoak. So the Indians named the Kennebec and tracing it through the Lake, gave the same name to Moose river.

He descended this river, & came to "Carrartoank or Devil's Falls", perpendicular.

Falls of Arransoak "below, so called, from a village of the Abenakis before the war, 1/2 mile below. He says this fall is a rapid. Opposite the village of Arransoak, on which once was, or a large river coming in (Sandy river, but not named by him)

[Skowhegan Falls, ~~are~~ noticed - not named - he calls them "9 mile Falls", where the river runs 1/4 of a mile with vast rapidity, just precipitating itself over high rocks.

Ticonic Falls next, immediately above Fort Halifax Fort built by Gov. Sherburne 1754.

Fort Western, 6 league lower. From this fort to the sea, he says is 41 miles.

He went back up the Kennebec & Dead river into Canada

Arnold went the same route, having seen this Journal.

Decd of the Province of Maine from Ferdinando Gorges, <sup>of Hallowell. Berkel</sup> (grandson of the first F. G.) to John Usher of Boston. Dated Aug. 13. in 30th year of reign of Charles II. AD 1677 for 1250<sup>l</sup>. - all the country from Piscataway to Sagadahock & 120 miles northward - also the Isles of Capawocke & Nauticam near Cape Cod.

Decd of the same from John Usher to the Gov. Comdr of Massachusetts Bay - same consideration, description. Dated March 15. in the thirtieth year of Charles II. AD 1677. Copied from Massachusetts Archives. 1847. Date 1677. said to be in old style, corresponding to present 1678.



Eag. Sullivan says is the Indian word for Land.  
 kik ohi (or keek okee) means land in father Ralls.  
 keagh or eage. — was land, in language of Long Island.  
 Norëmbega — applied to territory from Kennebec to S. roix.  
 and to the places. Mr. Holborn supposes this  
 to be an Indian word with a Latin termination.  
 yet it was sometimes written Arcumber  
 and Arambeag, having an ending denoting Land.

Cadie or Acadie, so the French wrote it. Called  
 Cadie on Delaet's map 1633.

Passamaquoddy Bay on French maps is called  
 Pesmo-cadie; and it is supposed that the English  
 made Passamaquoddy from Pesmo-cadie.

Mawooshen — a name given to Maine by Hakluyt, from  
 English voyagers.

Sir F. Georges. He places the  
 Tarnation. E. and N. E.

Bashaba. next S. W. governed. Country called Moasham.  
 He lived not far from Passaquid.

Sockhigones. W. & S. W.

Apastema was the country between the Sockhigones & Moasham  
 Massachisany — he so names some Indians — probably the  
 Massachusetts Indians.

Myramack (he names the Mercimack

Newichuanack. Piscataway. he names. Also Sagabeguy.

Voyage into New England 1623 & 24 by Chr. Levett.

Sauco, he names. River is Swanckadock in patents  
 Quack — he so names a place or bay E. of Cape Elizabeth.

Cascoe he placed between Quack & Sagadahock —  
 harbor & land. perhaps broad bay on Cumberland & N. Yorkmouth.

Capemanwagen — some parts Booth Bay.  
 afterwards called Cape Newagen

History of Bath by Gen. Jos. Sewall. 1833.

Sagadahock said to be sunka-tunka-tung as pro-  
 nounced by Indians — said to mean mouth of rivers.

Pemiquid harbor has Pemaguid Point E. main land of Bristol W.  
 From Pemaguid point to Fort point, a entrance of inner harbor  
 is about 3 miles. Inner harbor would contain 10 ships of the line.  
 Outer Harbor large & safe. Salt river extends inland 3 miles to  
 falls, of 12 ft. a fresh stream coming from ponds. Sir Wm. Phips  
 built a fort here (Mr. Henry) in 1692. Fort took 3500 tons of stones



**Pemaquid** again - this word or **Pemiquid** is said to mean long point - Doubtless Williamson says the fort built 1692 was where Fort George was before, on a point of land near mouth of Pemaquid river, on its east bank.  
 An account of this Fort in 2d Vol. of His. Col. differs some from Williamson's.

**Morhegan** Island is 9 miles S. E. of Pemaquid Point.

### 6105 Kennebec Purchase.

In 1629 the Plymouth **Company** granted to the company at New Plymouth, the land adjoining the Kennebec, 15 miles on each side "between the utmost limits of the Colibonsee Centre, which adjoins to the river Kennebec, toward the western Ocean, and a place called the falls of Nequamkike," and the grant the Plymouth Company claimed to the mouth of Kennebec river.

The Supreme Court of Mass. 1768, determined that the southerly line of the patent passed E. and W. through the head of the river Colibonsee Centre which is nearest the western Ocean (this was confirmed by a state deed 1789, & defined to be, on the east side of the river, "in the N. line of Woolwich? The north line being uncertain, was determined by deeds from the Indians 1648 & 1653, which granted the lands from Cushnoc to Wesserunset.

In the deeds, **Cushnoc** & **Wesserunkike** or **Wesserunset**. - This last stream empties into the Kennebec a little below the village of Norridgewock says Robert H. Gardiner Esq. - Williamson says the **Wesserunset** comes in several miles below the Norridgewock village, & the N. line of Plymouth patent is 2 miles above mouth of this stream. Williamson estimates the land at 1,500,000 acres. Gardiner says it was 31 miles wide sextine from Merry Meeting Bay to Norridgewock and by a compromise with the Pejepset Company took in the lands in the present towns of Phippsburg & Bath.

Plymouth Co. sold their right in 1661 to four men for 400 £ sterling, & the additions made to it by purchases from the Indians. Nothing more done until 1749 and not much until 1753. - Fort Richmond built 1750. Fort Western 1754. Fort Halifax 1755, Gardiner says, "There were many errors in Gardiner's map." Swan Island was included in the Tract. Dr Gardiner built a house there & others in other places. Houses 2 stories in front & one back.

The **Nequamkike** of the original grant, has never been ascertained.

**Robin Hood** called also **Moholiwoomet** (2 Duck Swash) and at **Nequaseag** sold land about Sheepscot river in 1652. He also sold land on **Wesserunset** river (Nequamkike) 1673. **Nequaseag** is probably **Nequisset** - about W. of Lewis.



Russell's History of North Yarmouth - gives an account of the old Horseblock. 1833.

Con. y. 284. **Horseblocks.** "For many years a large congregation assembled for public worship, when there were not two carriages in town, in which persons could ride to meeting; yet every horse carried as many as at the present time, & to accommodate the ladies, a large piece of timber was placed at the east end of the meeting, about 3½ feet high with steps at one end. When the congregation were dismissed this became the centre of a most animated scene. The top was immediately occupied. Men & boys soon mounted, came round in turn with the pillion, the horse hardly stopped to receive his burden, a lady was ready to occupy a seat behind her husband, another tossed a child into her lap, & the next moment was on another horse herself. In this style half the assembly were in a few minutes, without confusion or disorder, on their way home, the horses two or three abreast and conversation was carried on by the riders, either grave or gay, according as impressions had been made upon their minds by the preacher."

George Felt was in N. Yarmouth 1643 - built a stone fort.  
 John Cross " " " 1645. near Cousins River & Island  
 William Royall " " 1646 near Royall's river  
 Richard Bray " " 1647. bought 1/2 of Cousins Island  
 James Lane, of Gloucester, settled in what is now Freeport 1651.  
 John Maine, settled on Maine Point 1652 gave name to an island  
 John Holman - 1670 lived there. Thos. Blamfield, Benj. Herrabee,  
 Amos Stevens, Thomas Reding, William Haines  
 W. Gardall. - These last 6 about 1674, or previously.  
 There were others. All driven off by Philip, and  
 a sawmill built in 1674 was burnt. - After 1678  
 the people returned. Town named N. Yarmouth 1680.

Old name of North Yarmouth Wescustogo  
 " " of Freeport - Harbortel.  
 " " of Harpswell. Meniceneag  
 " " of Cousins Island. Susquesong  
 " " of Cousins river. Sequisit  
 Head of tide on Royall's river. Pungusuk  
 Other name. Gelceak. Chelascodegar, Maguik, and  
 Burngornungong & now pronounced Burngonung  
 a small river emptying into Maguik Bay.  
 Town destroyed again 1688 - rebuilt after peace  
 of 1713, N. Yarmouth again desolated.  
 Their progress was slow. They did not do much  
 in agriculture but were employed in curing wood  
 and lumber for coasting vessels, of which many were owned  
 here.



## 204. Maine, + Novascotia

War of 1754, &c. The Maine Historians seem not to know that men were drawn from Maine to attack Picorderog, &c. in 1755, or in later years.

The Indians did much damage in Maine 1755, & 1756, and some in 1757 & 1758 & 1759. None after.

2000 men enlisted for the expedition against French, Acadians and Indians, in or about Novascotia. They were from Massachusetts & Maine chiefly. Arrived at Annapolis May 25. 1755. They captured the places held by the French on the bay of Fundy. — Removal of the French Neutralists — about this time — Fort Beauséjour was changed to Fort Cumberland. Many of the Neutralists lived about Minas, and Cumberland.

Expedition against Louisburg. 1758. 8925 men were enlisted in Massachusetts, including 1600 in Maine. Cape Breton captured July 26.

Proclamations of the Gov. of Nova Scotia inviting people of New England to settle on the tracts of land lately possessed by the Acadians or French Neutralists; and other modes of invitation, Oct. 1758.

He mentions 100,000 acres which had produced grain in hemp, flax, &c. "for the last century" and 100,000 acres stocked with English grass, orchards, gardens &c.

Many emigrants from New England; 6 vessels from Boston carrying 400 settlers; 4 from Rhode Island with 100 passengers; 100 emigrants from New London and 180 from Plymouth — in all 580 souls — In 1764 the Acadians were permitted to settle in Novascotia.

Was at Saco, an Esquire 1688 — see page 206.

**Benjamin Blackman.** H.C. 1663, married a daughter of Joshua Scottow 1675. He was a representative <sup>of Maine.</sup> sent out from Saco in 1683.

**Bowdoinham** — from Cobbessecountee N. to Merry meeting Bay S. Formerly Richmond so called. Fort Richmond about 1720, was opposite head of Swan Island. Tract claimed in a grant of F. Gorges & by Plymouth Company. Later conveyed it to Wm Bowdoin of Boston. Bowdoin established his little, though the S. line of Plymouth's extent was fixed in Maine of Bowdoinham.







206. Maine. Williamson's History

1st War began 1675 Sept. and ended April 12, 1678. No fighting after 1677. - 260 Persons in Maine killed or taken in this war and never returned. Returned captives not included. France many wounded. Several places burnt. (about 150) & England at peace.

2d War began in Aug. 1688. England & France at peace. ~~Am 1688~~ plundered the house of Baron de St. Castine of furniture, arms, coarse cloths, &c. & gave him quest. Limbaze about April 1688. Andros' expedition. late in November 1688, he left 566 men in 11 garrisons if we may believe him. What the hostilities were in August, and where they were, he does not say. No details given. There had been a "homicide", but it is not explained. The Indians had committed ravages, but we are left to conjecture what they were.

1689. No Indian ravages particularized.

He begins the war in another place.

Complaints of the Indians.

1688. Aug. 13. First attack of the Indians on North Yarmouth. 3 killed & some taken & murdered that night. 18 or 20 Indians arrested near Saco under a warrant from Benjamin Blackman Esq. & sent to Boston. Discharged by Andros.

Indians made 9 prisoners at Sagadahock: plundered & slain some & killed some of the Q. They destroyed a few Dartmouth & Sheepscot Sept. 5 & 6 & took some & killed some.

June 7, 1689. Cocheco destroyed - after this, mischief in Maine.

The captives of Cocheco were carried to Canada. The first I learned of this, he says, & sold - error. This taking captives & carrying them to Canada saved many lives. War ended 1697 - some at age 98.

Maine lost about 450 persons, killed or died of wounds. " had " 250 " carried into captivity.

All towns & settlements were broken up except Wells, York, Kittery, & Isles Shoals.

3d War. Queen Anne's war with France began or was declared May 4, 1702.

Indians from Maine, moreover, were induced to settle on & near St. Francis's river in Canada about 1703 or before, 80 or 90 miles above Quebec. They were Wawenock, Sokokis, Anasagunticook, and Algonquians, from Three Rivers in Canada. These intermingled were called St. Francis's Indians.

War began 1703. Some mischief at Courbeck. Some English plundered the house of Castine, &c. But not much until Aug. 10, 1703, when 500 Indians & French attacked Wells, & the Bayview, Saco, Scarborough, Brunswick, & New Woodstock and Casco in one day. Many killed, many taken. 155 & 160 other attacks. - Peace 1713.

Maine lost in this war 282, killed & taken - 1/4 of all her people.



## The Wars.

In the 1st war, the Indians fought with the aid or art of Europeans. Skulk, ~~surprise~~, ambush, surprise & massacre were its traits & footsteps. Their numbers were respectable. King Philip's war.

In the 2d war, they were instigated & managed by the French; by the aid of Jesuits, &c. The French often lead, then fought by their sides; furnished them with arms & ~~ammunition~~ - some arts of warfare were taught & promoted, as campaign, siege, undermining; Captives & scalps were sought for, premiums being paid by the French. King William's War

In the 3d War, their strength was less; their tribes had been thinned. They made no advance in civilization. Their religion made them more implacable & bloodthirsty. The French had made them dishonest & their faith perished.

The Indians suffered <sup>much more than the French.</sup> ~~more than the French.~~ ~~than the English.~~ Williamson thinks they lost  $\frac{1}{3}$  of their fighters &  $\frac{1}{3}$  of women & children in the last war - and that not more than 300 warriors remained among the Abenakis & Etchemins.

see p. 209. Three Tribes, Wampanoags, Sokokis, and Anasagunticooks had lost their distinction of tribes, by a gradual decline, and by an association at St. Francis. They are not named in the Treaty of 1713. - The Indians exhibited less cruelty & daring in the last war than in the preceding. Castine, the younger,  $\frac{1}{2}$  an Indian was a mild generous character.

The English exacted terms of the Indians at the peace of 1713, that they could not have done in 1678 and 1698.

The People of Maine suffered every thing in these wars. Many were slain, many taken, many left the country, many lost all their property; all that remained in 1713 were in mourning. In these 10 years of the last wars, habitations were generally destroyed or had become miserable; their outer fields were overgrown with wild shrubbery; the fur trade, the lumber business & fisheries were gone for the present. Courage, fortitude & brotherly kindness remained.

For 38 years, 1675-1713, little more than a third of the time was tranquil.

York, Kittery & Wells were preserved; also Berwick, the southern part of Kittery, all the rest were destroyed some forts or garisons excepted. In 1714, Saco, Scarborough were resettled, Saco named Biddeford 1718. Falmouth & Saco had a garison then - the war. Falmouth began to be resettled in 1714 or earlier, ~~and~~ <sup>Piscataway</sup> ~~and~~ <sup>Shirburn</sup> ~~and~~ <sup>(Lake Elizabeth)</sup> Cape Porpoise about 1714 & named Arundel 1718. North Yarmouth ~~in 1714 or 1715~~ 1719 or 1720. Indians very hostile to settlement of N.Y. formerly.



## Wars, &amp; resettlements

Arrowsick Island was resettled 1714. and with Parker's Island, incorporated as Georgetown in 1716. Georgetown formerly included Woolwich, & in 1741, what is now Bath & Phippsburg was set off from North Yarmouth to Georgetown.

Harpwell began to be settled about 1720, & was a part of ~~North Yarmouth~~, ~~Brunswick~~. Brunswick, & Topsham began about the same time; and a fort was erected at Cushnoc (Augusta) by ~~the~~ <sup>the</sup> south proprietors. It was of stone. The inhabitants withdrew in Lovewell's war, & the Indians destroyed it & several houses. The public maintained a garrison at Cushnoc for a time, Topsham was broken up by Lovewell's war.

Ten towns only in Maine 1720. ~~10 or 12~~. Kittery, Berwick, York, ~~Wells~~. Arundel, Biddisford, Scarborough. ~~Halifax~~ <sup>Halifax</sup> ~~North Yarmouth~~, Georgetown. Exportation from the Sagadahock, Turgeon, pine boards & plank, shd. pipe & barrel, staves, & all sorts of timber.

Indians, inflamed by French missionaries became very uneasy. The English forts were a trouble to them. They denied that they had sold any land East of the Kennebeck. Treaty of 1713 renewed 1717.

Some settlements east of the Sagadahock about 1719. Some settling at Damariscotta; Fort St George built, on east side of St George's river in present Thomaston 1720.

Fort Richmond built W. of Kennebeck, opposite upper end of Swan's Island, 1720.

4th War began June 1722. Brunswick burnt in July, & Fort George at Brunswick attacked.

Gov. Hume declared war July 25. Lovewell's war.

2 Mohawks (after the great meeting in Boston) came to Fort Richmond 1723 - assisted in one attack & then returned to Boston.

3 Mohawks were in the attack at Norwidgee 1724, and one was killed.

Peace 1725 Dec 15 at Boston. Ratified Aug 6, 1726.

Maine had in this war about 200 killed, mortally wounded & taken. Indians much weakened, about 1/3 taken. 200 seems all that were killed & taken in Maine.



Truck or Trading Houses to accommodate the natives were established soon after peace of 1726. - at Fort St. George, Fort Richmond; and 2 years later at Fort Mary near Winter Harbor. Each had a Truckmaster, chosen by Gen. Court. Every year necessaries & some gewgaws were purchased in Boston to amount to 1000 to 1500 £ for each trading house. & the Truckmasters were directed to sell to the Indians at an advance only sufficient to cover cost, freight and waste. There was considerable waste on Molasses, sugar, rum, corn, meal, &c. tobacco, & sometimes articles were sold at a loss to the colony. Full price was paid to the Indians for their furs and skins, presents were made, & they were rewarded for any services performed, & were sometimes maintained for a season & kept from starvation.

This trade on the whole was a tax on the Province, as the advance on furs did not pay the wages of Truckmasters, the gratuities to Indians, & the expense of a small garrison at each trading house. But it tranquilized the Indians; & withdrew them in some degree from French influence; they purchased cheaper here than in Canada.

Treaty confirmed by chiefs of Caribos, Wampanoag and Anasagunticook tribes at Falmouth July 11. 1727. (These confirmations brought presents, &c. to the Indians.) Presents were sent to the Penobscot chiefs with from 30 to 40 £.

Joseph Kellogg & attendants & two Indian pilots sent to Canada to procure the release of captives early in 1728.

Sagadahock, from the river to St. Georges - not a white man ~~was~~ lived on this territory for about 30 years, from early part of King William's war to about 1720 (Quebec must be excepted.) There were 150 families on this territory in 1730.

Conduct of Dunbar.

Gov. Belcher met Indians at Casco July 20. 1732. Distributed presents to a large assembly. He told them that three chaplains would be sent to Fort Richmond, Fort St. George, & Northfield, Mass. to <sup>also</sup> act as instructors of the tribes, or missionaries. Gov. Court had voted to each an annual salary of 100 £, they officiated as chaplains to the garrisons & instructors of the Indians.



**New Townships.** Methods of settling them had been the subject of legislative inquiry for some years. Final Decision - each town<sup>ship</sup> to be divided into from 60 to 100 lots, & to be offered to as many settlers, each settler to be an actual one, & to clear from 5 to 8 acres for mowing or tillage, & build a house at least 18 feet square & 7 feet posts, all in 3 years. The whole to build a meeting house in 5 or 6 years, & settle a learned & orthodox minister, & make provision for his support - to reserve three lots for public uses, viz. the ministry, the school, & the first settled ministry. At a later period, a lot was reserved for the government.

1733. Lebanon, above Berwick, on E. side of Salmon Falls river was the first township in Maine, granted in this name. Next came No. 1. (Buxton) & No. 7 (Gorham), were granted same year - (Indian name of Lebanon was Tow-wok).

1734. New Marblehead or Wendham, granted this year to 60, 63, 10 acre lots laid out, & 63, 120 acre lots.

1734. Philipston, now Sanford, adjoining Berwick and Tow-wok. Also grants to individuals who had suffered in the Indian wars.

Great trouble about the King's forest trees. & had been for many years.

**Valuation of Massachusetts, 1735.**

147 towns. Hampshire had 13 towns and her proportion of 1000 £ tax was £54. 12. 7. Proportion of 1000 £ tax was £46. 7. 2. No towns nor plantations in, East of the Sagadahock, not even Georgetown.

Taxable polls 35,427 - Estimated population 4 to 1 poll, would make about 142,000.

Of these, Maine 9 towns contained about 7,000.

Plantations in do. west of Sagadahock " 500.

Plantations & Georgetown, East of do. " 1,500.

9,000

500 died of Throat Distemper in Maine -

~~the year~~ Kittery lost 22. N. Yarmouth 75. Falmouth 44. Porpoosuck 26.

1736. Towns of New Gloucester granted

1736. Canada Townships granted - nine. Two located in Maine, viz. Chips Canada (Jay) & Western Canada (Turner).

**Exports of Maine.**

See - mostly confined to truck houses - less than formerly.

Fish - considerable taken from rivers & coasts of Maine, besides as were taken farther off.

Lumber. This was the great store house of eastern wealth. The main business was confined to Great Britain.

Boards, shingles, timber & fish were principally exported by Boston merchants.



Brunswick incorporated 1737. 11 towns in the territory, Family called Pegypscot. Settled about 1625 & 26. Destroyed 1676, again 1690. again 1722. Fort built (Fort George) 1715.

1739. Gov. Belcher met Indians at Falmouth. Gave a public dinner to 200.

1741. Whitfield preaches in several towns in Maine

1740. Indians withdrawing to Canada - of the broken tribes upon the Saco, Androscoggin & Kennebec.

1742 Governor meets a great assemblage of the Etchemians at St Georges. Many presents. Presents to chiefs & tribes (these only or all in Maine?) had annually cost the government 300 £.

1742 Fees. Judges & civil officers had large fees. Some wished to reduce them. Gov. Shirley said a reduction of fees would multiply lawsuits. He referred to these colonies - said the fees in N York, N Jersey & Pennsylvania were 3 or 6 fold higher, and in Rhode Island a third higher, than in Mass. according to late value of money; in Connecticut some lower - yet in neither of the three first are there 100 judgments by the courts of pleas in a year; "being less by 10 times than in the single county Court of Hartford; and less by five times than in the County of Newport." Light fees & small costs tempt men to litigate, disregarding the waste of time & money which the prevailing party never recovers, & the animosities which a lawsuit never heals.

1747. 5 years later Gov. S. said when he first became governor of Mass. the Province was overwhelmed with lawsuits occasioned principally by the cheapness of law. "You passed an act making the fees double what they had been in value, lawsuits are reduced about one half" He was appointed Gov. 1741.

1743<sup>2</sup>. Valuation of Mass. Jan. 1743. - Rateable polls in all 44,000 - 154 incorporated towns. Population, estimating 4 to 1 poll, 164,000. 109 representations. Of these, Maine & Sagadahock had about 2300 taxable polls, & paid 52. £. 1. on 1000 £. Only 11 towns in the valuation. Georgetown is in Brunswick. Kittery was the most wealthy town; York next, and Falmouth was No 3. Brunswick No 4. Population of 11 towns of unincorporated places 12,000

1743 War feared. Some preparations for one. Increase of soldiers. Forts repaired - new ones in Maine.

1744 War declared by France & England.

Garrisons in Maine reinforced - Scouts ordered.

War declared against all east of Panamagueddy. Dec 20. 1744, ver. against Marichites and John's river, and which much of Nova Scotia; who had joined the French.

Maine now had about 2385 able bodied men; & Sagadahock 470 all in two Regiments - Pepperell's & Waldo's.

Massachusetts sent 4 companies to relieve Annapolis - They arrived July 3. 4 x 60 = 240 men. Remained until 1746.



1745 Jan. Plan of attacking Louisburg—formed by Gov. Shirley & communicated to legislature, at first the Gen. Court rejected it; upon reconsideration it was carried Jan. 26, by a majority of one. All now fell in, & promoted the design.

The Commanders, Pepperel & Waldo, were both of Maine. The Colonels were Moulton, Hale, Willard, Richmond, Gorham, Dwight. Moulton, the 3<sup>d</sup> in command was of York, the others of Massachusetts. — Samuel Moore was Lieut. Col. of N. Hampshire Regiment, 304 men; Simon Lathrop, Lt. Col. of Connecticut Regiment 516 men; Richard Gridley, Lt. Col. of Artillery.

Men raised Mass. & Maine 3250. Connecticut 516 New Hampshire 304. — Sailed March 14, arrived April 14 at Capbreton — first attack May 2. Surrender June 16.

1745. Indian outrages began July 19. in Maine several places attacked — ended almost every settlement. War declared against all Eastern tribes Aug. 23.

1746. Troops raised for Canada expedition — viz Massachusetts 3500, N. Hampshire 500, N. B. and — 70 Connecticut 1000, N. York 1600, N. Jersey 500 Maryland 300, Pennsylvania 400, Virginia 100.

Troops remained for time at Louisburg beyond their enlistment — and others — recruited under Shirley (700) and Pepperel, 500.

Much killing & burning in Maine in 1746.

Massachusetts & Maine send 470 men to bay of Fundy — landed at lower Horton<sup>Dec. 4</sup> — were attacked & defeated & forced to surrender Jan. 31. 1747 — 130 killed & wounded. One of Shirley's wild projects.

1747. Another project of Shirley was to send 1500 men against Crownpoint in midwinter, & Gen. Court raised 1500 men, who were put under command of Gen. Samuel Waldo — Small pox & other things prevented the expedition, the troops remained inactive and under pay 8 months longer. Discharged Sept.

1747. Indian outrages all about Maine settlements as usual. Many whites killed.

Agents sent to Quebec. 36 English prisoners in Canada. 17 came home, 90 were scattered, 30 were sick, & 70 had died in captivity — almost all from Mass. N. H. & Maine & Sag.

1747-8 — Great scarcity of provisions in Maine & Sag. Corn 30¢ bush.

1748. The Indians, & French partly, were a mere banditti, doing burning & murdering. News & peace arrived at Falmouth July 2. Eastern Indians did not ravage after this.

End of 5th Indian war.

1749



The province of Massachusetts lost in this war 3000 effective men; expended half a million sterling. England & France gained nothing important. The war originated in unhallowed motives.

1749 Eastern Indians visit Boston - Conference with them - June 23d.

Cornrs. to treat with Indians reached Falmouth Sept 28. (Israel Williamson) & chiefs arrived Oct 14. Treaty 16th.

English were to enjoy all their possessions & places of settlement in Eastern parts; Indians reserved lands not conveyed by them nor possessed by English; and privileges of fishing, hunting & fowling - as much as in Treaty of 1726. To faithful subjects to the King. - Presents given as usual.

Treaty signed by 6 chiefs called Anasaguntetuck and Wawenocks - (St Francis Indians).  
by 8 chiefs called Norridgewocks (Camelot Indians).  
by 5 chiefs called Penobscots. (or Tarratives)  
No names of those east of Penobscots.

Williamson thinks Maine lost 2 or 3000 men in this war; yet business soon revived. The Country afforded lumber, potash, furs, fish.

1750. Indian attacks again - some killed, more taken, much burning. This was done by St Francis Indians chiefly. Some damage 1751. Soldiers raised.

1751. Aug. 3. Treaty of 1749, confirmed by Indians at St George's fort -

"Whenever a white person was tried for killing an Indian, even in times of profound peace, he was invariably acquitted." No jury could be impeached which did not have some persons who had suffered from the Indians.

Valuation of Massachusetts 1751. (peristed 1751)

Population had increased in 7 years only about 500. So destruction had been war, sickness, small pox, &c.

Maine had only 11 incorporated towns - her proportion of 1000 £ tax was only 55. 8. 4. having increased in 7 years only 2. 11. 3.

Duties on Tea, coffee & arrack, 1750. in China ware, when?

1753. Newcastle incorporated - 12th town in Maine & Sagadahock.

It was the first town incorporated in Sagadahock. Georgetown was in the old province of Maine though east of Sagadahock river.

Newcastle was first settled 1730 - Or 1731. - long called Sheepscot plantation. Called New Dartmouth by Kings Cornrs. 1765. Broken - 1876. & again 1688. Renamed 1719. It is between Pamanscotta & Sheepscot rivers.



1754, Preparations for the 6th Indian War.  
 Units at work as usual.

Parley at Hallowell with Norridgewock Indians, June 1754. Governor Shirley told them that he had concluded to build a fort at Tecumet on a point of land between the Kennebec and the Sebasticook. They objected strongly till they were shown by deeds that the territory had been conveyed to them. Then they signed a treaty & had a dance. Two days after 15 principal Penobscots came & signed same treaty (nearly same as treaty of 1726.)

Fort Built at Tecumet. Shirley went up there and as far as Norridgewock. Fort was made of heavy pine timber, round 20 feet high, with flanking blockhouses, could contain 400 men. Garrison of 100 men ordered. Finished Sept 3. & called fort Halifax. It was in a very eligible situation,  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile below Tecumet Falls, 37 miles above Richardson's fort, 50 from Penobscot 31 by water & 22 by land to from Norridgewock & 18 above Cushman - so recorded.

Plymouth proprietors built two more sea castles on a fort at Cushman, named fort Western; another in the plantation of Frankfort (Dresden) called fort Shirley. A road for carriages was ordered from fort Western to fort Halifax. 20 men was Cushman's garrison.

Other new fortifications ordered.

300 $\frac{1}{2}$  in presents voted by Mass. to be sent to the Indian tribes on the Kennebec & Penobscot. Some depredations having been committed, & others expected, the presents were not sent them; but afterwards were sent to the Penobscots.

"Staunch Hottreds" were recommended, and tried, and "well taught Dogs" to scent the footsteps and detect skulking parties. It is not said that any thing was gained by these dogs.

1755. 2000 men sent from Massachusetts to bay of Fundy.  
 The French & Catholics

The Expedition against Cawumpit (Williamson did know that Maine ~~secrets~~ any more to Abenaki in this war.)

Discreet done by Indians in various places in Maine & Mass. declared war against all Indians east of the Piscataqua, except Penobscots, June 11. 1755. & against Penobscots Nov. 5. Some bore conduct. 1st towards Penobscots. "a shameful violation of their rights."

Earthquake Nov. 18. 1755 - more violent than any before & had people to repent before in some places, as in 1727.



6th War - continued.

1756 Various attacks & ravages of Indians in Maine  
Many killed - many removed -

1757. Gov Pownall arrives.

Harpwell, 13th incorporated town, 1758 Jan.  
Indians did less harm this season than in the  
two preceding ones.

Small pox did some damage - it also <sup>frightened</sup> ~~black~~  
the Indians, & the fear of it kept them from the  
English settlements, partly of the year.

1758. Mass. Pitt's plans.

Massachusetts raises 6,925 men; of whom, 600 in  
Maine, besides 300 in Maine for prisoners. The  
300 were at 19 forts & places in Maine  
Lonsbury captured July 26.

Indians did less than usual - killed & took some.

1759. Mass. voted 6500 men.

A fort built in Prospect for the Penobscot, called  
fort Pownall. Completed July 28. cost 5000 £ the  
best fort in the province

Tronderega, Quebec. & taken

Great excitement.

Expedition under Major Ross to St. Francis.  
That place destroyed Oct. 4, 1759 - a place enriched  
by plunder from the English - Great suffering  
of those men on their return.

Woolwich, 14th town in Maine incorporated Oct 20.  
was Aquanet or Kauses. - Had been a precinct of  
Georgetown. Settled 1638. Deed from Robin Hood 1639.  
Destroyed in 2d Indian war - has Monswee &  
bay E. Dresden St.

1760. Indians disheartened - their allies the French  
every where defeated. - & they were wasted by war,  
famine, small pox, & the those who had  
duped them could render no aid.

The Marachites of St. John's River killed Kenneth of  
Nova Scotia made a treaty with the Gov. of N. Scotia.  
Penobscot chiefs came to Boston, & signed a  
treaty April 26, 1760. - They acknowledged their  
lands forfeited, & were to have only such tracts  
as the English might assign them, & the privilege  
of hunting. They stated that they had left only  
15 sachems, 73 warriors & perhaps 500 souls.  
The Abenakis had become insignificant, even  
the Canab's took no leading part in settling a peace.

A new impulse to business of all kinds -

Pownallborough, 15th town, incorporated Feb 13, 1760.

1761. Valuation. Maine had 15 towns & 4 plantations in  
the valuation - to pay £74 6. 4 3/4 in 1000 £.

Hampshire with 31 towns paid 75. 15. 6. in 1000 £

Falmouth paid 13. 16. 2; Kittery next 9. 10. 8; York

the 3 towns, 9. 3. 5, Bowditch 4th, 5. 10. 9. Scarborough, 5. 5. 5. 6.

Whole population may have been 17,500.



1761 } were years of drought & fires & scarcity. Great  
 1762 } fires in the forests & great quantities of timber  
 destroyed; some houses, barns & sawmills burnt  
 and many fences.

1762. Windham, Buxton, Bowdoinham incorporated, 16. 17. 18<sup>th</sup> towns

1763. Peace.

1764. Census of this year (estimating the plantations)  
 was 24,020. York had 11,145, Cumberland 8,146  
 and Lincoln 4,347. Add to these 332 blacks.

Blacks were 56 in York, 62 in Kittery, 34 in Wells,  
 44 in Berwick, 44 in Hallowell, 18 in N. Yarmouth,  
 15 in Scarborough, 14 in Harpswell, 12 in George town,  
 and some in other towns. Probably slaves, most of them.

Gov Bernard estimated the Indians in 1764, as  
 follows; Norridgewock 30 warriors, Panabscotti 60,  
 about Panamaquaddy 30; Others in Canada.

1764. Topsham, Gaham, Boothbay. Incorporated, 19. 20. 21<sup>st</sup> Towns

1765 Bristol & Cape Elizabeth, 22d. 23d.

Bristol between Pemaquid & descopus, embraces  
 the ancient Pemaquid a noted place. first  
 settled 1626.

1767 Lebanon (Towson) Incorporated, 24<sup>th</sup>.

People of Maine in a bad condition after peace  
 They were in debt, taxes were heavy; and there were  
 imposts & restrictions by England. Lumber & fish  
 were their exports, but they paid but little attention  
 to agriculture or manufactures, their consumption  
 of foreign articles was heavy. Some pot & pearl ashes  
 exported. It has been remarked that those who  
 live in the lumber business never make property.  
 The estates of the eastern people were generally small  
 and were ready to resist the taxation of England.

1768 Sanford incorporated. 25<sup>th</sup>

1771. Hallowell, Sarraborough, Winslow, Winthrop incorpo-  
 rated - 26. 27. 28. 29<sup>th</sup>

All families settled at Winslow the same year  
 the fort was built, viz 1754.

Cushnoc (Hallowell) had inhabitants or residents  
 in at least as early as 1650. Depopulated in Philip's  
 war, resumed before the second, and again fortified  
 in 1713. Hallowell was called the Hook.

Sarraborough included Sidney until 1792.

Winthrop settled 1760.

1772 Pepperelborough (Saco) incorporated. 30<sup>th</sup> town

1773 Belfast & Waldoborough incorporated. 31. 32.

1774 Edgecomb & New Gloucester - 33. 34

No more before the Revolution.



Maine.

217 7

Malibus - named from the Indian name  
of its river, which was Mechises.  
Has 1500 acres of salt & fresh marshes.

Wolamontogus - he calls the stream  
that comes into the Kennebeck at Pittston.  
Is not this the stream that goes from the pond  
called Worumontogus? The river was famous  
for alewives.

Nahumkee } Falls of this name were a limit of  
Stahumkike } the Plymouth Company. The place  
Nagumkike } was never ascertained (perhaps  
the proprietors did not wish to ascertain it.)  
Authenticated in 1752 that there was a brook  
& falls called Nahumkeeg by the Indians  
on the east side of the Kennebeck, about  
30 miles above the foot of Swan Island.

Massabesek - the name of a pond in Waterboro.  
The plantation name of the place was  
Massabesec - is south of Little Ossipee river.

Mouson river runs from ponds in Shapleigh  
into Sanford.

Stories in Maine. Among the 310 whose  
estates were confiscated in Sept. 1778, <sup>by Mass.</sup>  
were 19 who had dwelt in Maine, viz  
16 in Falmouth & one in Pownalborough. Among  
them was Rev John Wiswell of Falmouth  
the Episcopal minister. The other Episcopal  
minister Jacob Bailey, at Pownalboro. removed  
to Annapolis.

Alamasook - Indian name of Eastern River  
on E side of Bucksport.

"Mathebestuck hills". Heights of Gunden

"Skahmoon" is Indian corn (Rallé). May not Skowhegan  
be Skah-head; that is, corn land?

"Keloo giuk" to be good. (Rallé is another  
word for good.) Oolakeg. tranquil. sig.

Asjectives make plural in quick. { Ooantakeg. quick. Do. plural  
Ooantakequick. Do. plural

Pers. Pronouns - Nil. I. Kil. thou; Negeum. he; Kinkooninen we;  
Kileum. you; Negeum. they.

Plurals. Nixham. god; Nixhammoal. gods.  
Nixhammoal.

Algonquian language has inanimate plurals in al, el, ul, il.  
Diminutives of nouns in chick { Oolakan. plat. F.  
Oolakanel. plats.  
Oolakanichick. sin. petit plat; Oolakanelchick. petits plats.  
Amplified by To or K'chi. - K'chi oolakan. Grand plat  
K'chi oolakanel. grands plats.

Pamahdana, is Mountain (Rallé). Perhaps K'taholam, is point this

Collegewickwook - said to be Indian name of Bluehill  
Peribosquisunguis Sebou - name of Sandy river - Hanson. Hishko.  
Skookhegan, "a place to water". Hanson says. On & below the falls  
was a famous place to catch salmon & other fish.



218 Maine, &c Williamson

Offers for Scalps, &c. Dec Con. 9. 349. Miscel. 9. 295  
In Philip's War, no price given - in Maine

89. Major Benj. Church & men - to have captives  
and plunder, & 8£ for every fighting Indian slain.

1703. Massachusetts offered 20£ for Indian prisoners  
under 10 years, and 40£ for older prisoners or  
scalps. - Capt. Tyng of Falmouth & others  
induced by this reward made excursions in  
the depth of winter, 1703-4 upon SNOW SHOES,  
though without success. [Sum to have killed 5. m. 9. 295  
m. 9. 268]

1706. Tariff of Counties. For an Indian scalp, a  
regular soldier to receive 10£. a volunteer & out-  
wages 20£, and if not furnished with rations or supplies  
50£. Very few taken.

1722. Bounties offered. 15£ for a scalp of a male Indian  
over 12 years old; 8£ for a captive woman or child  
30£ bounty for prisoners taken on a sudden alarm.  
Afterwards 100£ bounty offered to volunteers without  
pay or rations, for a scalp: 60£ if he had rations.  
Wage, Capt 7£ Lieut 4£, Sgt. 5£, corporal 45¢, private 40¢  
per month (New Hampshire perhaps). Overell & his  
men had 1000£ for 10 scalps. 1724.

1744. Offered, 100£ for a scalp of a male Indian above 12 yrs  
and 50£ for scalp of younger male or of a woman  
5£ and additional, or 10£ and 5£ for captives. New Town  
1745. Offered 100£ for a scalp taken by a soldier in the service

" 250£ for one having provisions not wages  
" 400£ for volunteers without pay or rations  
[The 400£ is for  
Old Town 1745.]

1755. Volunteer companies of 30 men, out a month or more,  
to have 200£ for a scalp & 250£ for a captive  
Individuals 100£ for a scalp & 110£ for a captive.

from Massachusetts Records. [see Misc. 9. 245]

1703-4. 100£ offered for scalps to volunteers without pay. [I think  
March Mass. 2. 166. [Mass 2. 164.]

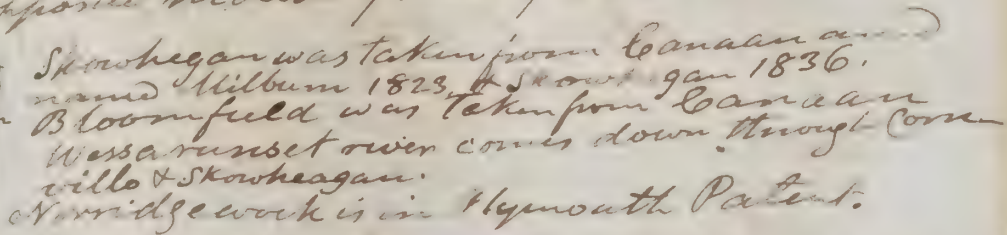
Dec 1704. 10£ for scalp to volunteers on wages.  
March 1706-7. 100£ for scalps taken by volunteers without pay. Mass. 2. 164.



Con. 10. }  
p. 290. 291 }

In 1874. there were 240 dwelling houses in it New  
Gloucester;  $\frac{1}{2}$  one story;  $\frac{1}{2}$  two story.

N.E. & S.W.



Arantsook, old name of upper Kennebec means great jumping  
 Salantsoo - said to be more correct - grows. Hanson  
 Korrelge (falls) wook (smooth). - Hanson  
 Katueh, said to mean an interval. [Hobbs & Co.]



"History of New Netherland" counts 1647.

By E. B. O'Callaghan, M.D. member of N.Y. Hist. Society, &c.  
Volume I. New York, 1848. 493 pages.

1609 Henry Hudson discovered & explored Hudson's river.

Among medicinal plants, found growing about this river, O'Callaghan has the following.

Plants

Maidenhair,	Kartstongue,	Angelica.
Polypodium,	Mullein,	Sweetflag
Sassafras,	Bayberry,	Crowfoot,
Plantain,	Marshmallow,	Marjoram
Cranebill,	Wild Indigo,	Mezercon
Sarsaparilla,	Violet,	Dragon's blood
Touchmenot,	Blessed Thistle,	Agremony
Snake root,	Coriander,	Plurisy root
Spikenard,	Solomon's Seal,	Ginseng
Motherwort,	Consumption Root,	Pennyroyal.

There must be several errors in these. Some are not native plants of N. America.

Map of New Netherland & the date of 1616, Mr. Brodhead found at the Hague, 1841 and copied it.

This has the Great River of Canada, City of Quebec, Island of Orleans, &c.

On the sea coast, it has the river Pointe-aux-Peres (or Penobscot,) coming from near the Canada river above Quebec.

Next west of this river is the river Quirino Beguyer evidently the Kennebec, with a lake in the upper part towards Quebec, a bay or wide place in the river below; & bay & islands, & a rocky mouth of river;

Farther west is another river, named Epouacoint and a large bay at the mouth. Islands are plenty all along the coast.

Farther west & south are other rivers, bays, hooks or points of land, some with Dutch names till we come to

Staten Hoeck or Wit Hoeck, which is Cape Cod. The bay west of Cape Cod is Staten Bay, & some small bays are named

De Noord Zee, & North Sea is between Cape Cod & Cape Anne. Cape Anne is Wyngaerd's Hoeck; the bay south of the Cape is Cape Hendrycks Bay.

North of Cape Anne is Witte Bay; with an Island, & a river (Merrimack) named Ant river. (the A is blotted, perhaps another letter is intended.)

The Piscataqua apparently appears N. of Sant river with a rock between, & the river has a haven or harbor.



## Map of 1616 - continued.

A river & harbor (later called Vos Haven) appear south of Hendrycks Bay - islands about.

Farther South, about west of the N. end of Cape Cod is a harbor with islands and three rivers or streams; it seems Boston Harbor - called Crane Bay apparently.

Staten Bay connects with the sea S. W. making the real peninsula of Cape Cod, an Island. The bays each side were supposed to form together probably.

Rock Eylant (Island) Capehaus Eylant (Island) are north is South (perhaps M. Vineyard, and Nantucket; Capehaus is the largest & most western. On the same coast is Drie Hoecken; and the S. E. point of Capelod (of the whole peninsula) is de Vlache hoeck.

Almouchicoviser designates the inhabitants from Capehaus Island to Chunarointer and Graef Willens Bay.

Tuxanois designates a part of these, residing S. of Sant river & west of Cape Anne to the bay S. of the Cape.

Trocoissee and Meer van Trocovisen, as Lake, are west of the coast from Sant river to the Kaunnebeck a stream running & truly connects the Meer with the great Canada river. This must be Champlain, but with some notions about Ontario probably in the mind of the sketcher.

A long Island is put down extending almost from Capehaus Island to Narraganset & it seems like named Texel at one end Vlissant at the other.

Narraganset Bay has no name - has 3 large islands "Floupe Bay" is the upper part of the Great bay on the west side. Or between an Island & the west main land. A river comes into the N. part of Narraganset bay, and another on the east side.

Wapanoos - dwell on both sides of the Great Bay & on both sides of river that comes in on the north. Neck of the Wapanoos, is Point Judith.

Pegucats are west of Wapanoos - extend from Ooster Riviertjen, which seems the Paukat river, or "riviere van Seecahams" (Seecaham river, or Thames intended,) and perhaps to Vriesche riviertjen. (Probably jen is a diminutive, & the river is Fresh little river.)

Mohicans are west of Vriesche riviertjen on Island opposite mouth of Seecaham river. Adrian Blois Island is S. E. of this island and nearly opposite mouth of Pungatuck river - a little east.



## Dutch Map of 1616 continued.

Nersche Riviere (Fresh river, or Connecticut) runs about south, & the mouth is opposite the east part of Long Island.

The Nawaacs are on each side of this river, at the north part of it that begins - as far north as Boston.

The Sequirs are below them on each side of the river.

Rodenburg is N. of New Haven Harbor.

Rodnygs is E. of " "

Alakimanes are north of New Haven and the region west of it - about half way between North River and the Connecticut - lower down than the Sequirs.

Kellegatta is down:

"Manhates" is the name of the island of New York or of the people on it. The name of Hudson's river is Riviere vanden vorst Maurities (Prince Maurice, probably)

Sanguians are west of lower part of Hudson's river

Alahicans are on both sides, up farther.

Fort van Nassauwen (Nassau - Albany) is still higher - with Alaguas N.W. of it. and Senneecas S.W.

Minguaas are on a river (Delaware) nearly west of Manhates River.

Aguemachakes are in New Jersey, below "and bay" Sandpoint (Sandy Hook).

Africans are on S.E. part of Long Island. No other tribe named on the island.

"Hoek vande visschers" is the name of Montauk point.

Fort Nassau is said to be 58 feet wide within the walls, and the moat 18 feet wide. The house in the fort is 36 by 26 feet.

The Indians - from O'Callaghan.

The Alahicans and River Indians occupied each side of Hudson's river, below the Alaguas, to its mouth. The Matouwacks or Montauks had power over 13 minor tribes, at Seward-hacky or Long Island, and thereabouts.

The Mopawks, extended west of the Hudson back or west some 70 miles - from the head of navigation.

The Mopewags (Alahicans) were east of them, extending "beyond the mountains to the Connecticut." South of there were the Waraorckins, east of river, and Waranancongyns west of river, near Esopus, afterwards called Wapping or Wappingers.



## New Netherland Indians

Packhamis  
 Tankitekes  
 Weiquaeskeeks } were east of Tappan's bay.  
 The last were between North and  
 East rivers, on two streams  
 called Sintsinck and Armonck - a few  
 miles N. of the fierce Manhattans.

M. 3. 300 Mahattans held the Island.

Hackingacks were opposite them, on the west.

Raritans were south of the Hackingacks.

Eghquaous - was the name of Staten Island.

(Mr O'Callaghan is puzzled to find out why the island  
 3. 4. 7. of New York was called Manhattan, or he says others  
 have been at much trouble on the subject. He finds  
 that the Dutch writers say the island was named  
 from the Indians. He knows no other reason. It  
 had not occurred to any of them, that Manhat-  
 tan, with a little change, is the Indian word  
 for Island.)

[ O'Callaghan says the Mahicanders lived both  
 banks of Hudson river to its mouth - and yet he  
 says the Delawares & Minnisi "occupied the  
 country bounded east & south by the Hud-  
 son river & the Atlantic". He knows the whole  
 into confusion by further remarks - and  
 if this is a specimen of his accuracy, no  
 confidence can be placed in his facts.]

## Long Island Indians.

- 1 Canarsee or Canarisse, claimed most of land  
 in Kings county, Jamaica, & part of Newtown.
- 2 Rockaways lived where their name is retained - & had  
 part of Newtown & Jamaica.
- 3 Merrikoke } These tribes extended from Rockaw-  
 4 Mersapeague } through Queens county into Huntington,  
 on S. side of Island.
- 5 Mattinecock tribe, extended from Flushing  
 and through Queens County to Caw Harbor in Suffolk  
 on the north side, only 30 miles / 650.
- 6 Nissaquagues extended from the last to Stony Brook.
- 7 Setaukets " from the last to Wading river
- 8 Corchaug " from the last to Southold.
- 9 Manhasset held Shelter Island.
- 10 Secataugs adjoined Mersapeague (S. side) to
- 11 Patchogue.
- 12 Patchogue tribe reached Southampton.
- 13 Shinecock nation extended from Canoe place  
 to Montauk.
13. Montauk held this peninsula. Their chief  
 was called Sachem of Long Island.  
 They lived on the borders of the Island, or near the sea. They  
 made Sewan or wampum.



## 294. New Netherland

<sup>Am. 2. 265</sup>  
<sup>Nov. 2. 205</sup> Indians were a dirty race. They wished to make their bodies shine by accumulated oil, grease and paint. "They cooked meat & fish of every kind, clean & unclean, entrails and all". (This may be doubted, as to animals.)

When they first had presents of axes & shoes, they wore them as ornaments around the neck & used stockings as tobacco pouches. Heekewil m.

Medicine-men or Soocerers thrived upon the ~~the~~ ignorance & simplicity of their tribes. They not only undertook to heal wounds & diseases, but to divine the future & to expound dreams, their medicinal skill was of the humblest sort.

Gum of the pine tree (he means turpentine) was used for wounds of all descriptions.

Rheumatic pains & inflammatory diseases were subjected to the vapor bath, with scarifications. From the vapor-bath, the patient plunged himself into the nearest pond or river.

If these did not answer, he assumed the magician, sung & danced & made loud cries; pretended to tear a bone from the evil spot in the patient's body. These things were repeated, and various incantations were had recourse to. If the man died, the confidence of the people in the medicine-man was not shaken.

1600. Dutch sent a vessel to the Manhattan <sup>167. 3. 30.</sup> to trade.

1611. Two vessels preparing. Early in the year

1612. they sailed to Hudson's river

1613. They erected and garrisoned one or two small forts, to protect the fur trade. Manhattan was the head quarters. Submitted to Argal, 1613

1614. 5 Ships sent out, of which 2 were under Adrian Block. Block sailed along the East river, which he named Hellegat, and entered the Sound & discovered the Housatonic, and the Fresh River, sailed up the latter to the Narrawagansett bay, & gave the name of Sloop Bay to its Western entrance.

O. Callaghan makes some strange blunders. says Block called the Indians on Narrawagansett Bay (Native am.)

1614 "New Netherland Company" incorporated.

1614 They built a fort on an Island, below the present Albany. and trading house. (Their grant is dated at the Hague Oct 11. 1614. yet it seems to be supposed that they built the fort in 1614. impossible.) A fort was built on Manhattan Island.

O. C. seems to place these in 1614 - yet he has 1615 against the latter part.



1618. The Dutch fort on Castle Island below Albany, much injured by a freshet vice. They built another south of this, on main land, on bank of Normants Kill.
- 1618 Treaty of Alliance & Peace with the 5 Nations. *M. 9. 250* The Dutch supplied these Indians with arms, ammunition, &c. as the French did those of Canada, & enabled the 5 Nations to gain an ascendancy over others.
1620. The Congregation of Mr Robinson at Leyden ceased to emigrate New Netherland. Some of the Dutch petitioned in their favor, Feb 12, 1620, but the government did not favor the plan; they refused to entertain the petition.
1621. Dutch West India Company established. It contained nothing favorable to freedom of the Colonists, but it was like others of that age. The company was purely commercial.
- 1623 Fort Orange (Albany) commenced.
1624. A settlement of Walloons at Waple Bocht (Wallabout). The settlement extended & was named Brukeleu, from a Dutch village. Child born June 6, 1625 - first in New Netherland. *M. 13. 1.*
1625. Dutch bought Manhattan Island for 60 <sup>guilder</sup> \* about 24 dollars! *[about 1/2 of the western world in 1625]* They began to raise wheat, barley, rye, oats, buckwheat, beans & flax - very little.
- 1626 8130 Beaver skins sent home valued at 45,000 guilders, almost 19,000 dollars (about \$2.30 a skin). - In 1624, they sent home 4700 beaver skins & Otter skins, valued at 27,125 guilders or \$11,302. - In 1625, 5,758 skins valued at 35,825 guilders, or \$14,927. (He estimates the guilder almost 42 cts)
1627. 7890 skins - estimated at 12,730 guilders.
1629. Regulations for planters. The Patroon or Feudal System *M. 13. 8. 7* Patroons - this title was given to those who would plant a colony of 50 souls, ~~over~~ 15 years old, in four years. They might have 4 miles along the river (16 English miles) and as far into the country as necessary. *[The included colonists under halfboons]*
- The Colonists were not to make any wollens, linen or cotton cloth, nor weave any other stuffs on pain of being banished. *[The included colonists under halfboons]*
- This charter contained the feudal tenure & feudal burdens of Europe. It enjoined schools & churches but scattered the seeds of slavery & aristocracy. The French were doing worse in Canada.
- The Patroons and Colonies were like the seigneuries in Canada. The Patroons of New Netherland, and the lords of Canada were feudal lords.
- \* Dr Brulhad says this one of a well observed commemoration as the famous treaty of Amiens, immortalized by painters, poets & historians.



1630. Several now hastened to become patroons by purchases of the Indians - above and below Albany, on both sides of the river, & on the Delaware at Cape May, opposite New Amsterdam, Staten Island, the lands at Jersey City, Hoboken, &c. In 1637 Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, or others for him, purchased on the east bank of the Hudson from opposite Castle Island south to the point opposite Smack's island, & all in the interior back as far as the Indians owned - a tract, says O.G. 24 miles long and 48 miles broad, composing 700,000 acres in the present counties of Albany, Rensselaer, and parts of Columbia. [This <sup>includes other purchases.</sup> ~~includes other purchases.~~ <sup>including things.</sup> Van Rensselaer's agents purchased for him on W. side of the river <sup>1630,</sup> a large tract from Beeren island <sup>1630,</sup> up to Smack's island and in breadth 2 days journey. This may have been in Albany county; & another above & below Albany.

<sup>Dr. Brodhead says the rural tenantry of this island had not means to emigrate, so the directors established manors for the large proprietors.</sup>

The Map of Rensselaerswyck, anno 1630 tells the following history. It says:-

K. Van Rensselaer caused to be purchased April 8. 1630 from Paep Sickenekomptas, Noneoutashal, & Sickenom their lands called Sarsckhagag, from Beeren Island to Smack's Island, & two days journey into the interior.

K. Van Rensselaer caused to be purchased from the nation named Matricans their lands on the west side of the North River, south & north of Fort Orange; or from Cottomaek, Kawanemut, Hantzen, Sagisguwa, & Kanamock - extending N. to near Moenimines castle, near the mouth of present Mohawk - also from Kawanemut, his grounds called Semesseeck on the east of the river, from opposite Castle Island to a point facing Fort Orange and thence from Poetanock, the mill creek, north to Negagouse.

There are in the whole 4 deeds to Van Rensselaer. viz - 2 on west side & 2 on east side.

1st West side - from Beeren Island to Smack's Island - and

2d. " " from near the Mohawk down below for Orange - perhaps down to Smack's Island. <sup>for the Normans hill only.</sup>

1st East side - from opposite Fort Orange up the river

2nd East side - from opposite " do - Down the river to Smack's Island.



## Rensselaerwyck -

O.C. says the whole ~~land~~ was 24 miles long, 48 broad, containing over 700,000 acres composing the counties of Albany, Rensselaer and part of Columbia. - Does he mean that it was 24 miles in length on each side of the river, ~~making~~ and 24 miles wide, each side, making 24 by 48 miles, or how is it?

These lands were purchased of the Mapicans (Mohicans). They held the lands on both sides of Hudson's river. They were purchased for duffels, axes, knives, wampum, &c. of no great value apparently. 5

Van Rensselaer associated with Samuel Goddyn, Johannes de Laet, Samuel Bloemmant the latter having with him Adam Bissels and Toussaint Houssart. Of 5 shares, Van R. had 2 and the title of feudal honour of patroon; De Laet 1, Goddyn 1, & Bloemmant the associate 1. The rights of the others were all purchased by the Rensselaer family before or in 1685.

Exports 1631 - 7,126 "peltries" worth 68,012 guilders. Imports 57,499 guilders or 23,000

M. 3. 399 | 1632. The Dutch in a paper to their Government, say "the North river, commonly called Manhattan, also Rio de Montaigne".

1632. Exports. 15,174 skins, mostly beaver, valued at 143,025 guilders, equal to \$57,250. (about 40 to a pound) Imports 31,000 guilders, about \$13,000

The fur trade on the North River was estimated to be equal to 15 or 16,000 beavers, per year.

## Connecticut River

O.C. says, under 1633, that this river, discovered by the Dutch 1614, had been since exclusively visited by them, who purchased annually in the river & in the district 10,000 beaver skins and other things. In 1632 a Dutchman purchased at the mouth of the river, Kievits Hoek (Pewees Hook) of the natives, and erected the arms of Holland.

This tract of the country around belonged to a chief, Sequeen, but the chief of the Pequots, east of the river, claimed it, and they decided the question by pitched battle between their warriors by agreement. After 3 engagements, the Pequot chief obtained the victory, and the land, & the lordship of Fresh river, & Sequeen's tribe became his subjects.



## Connecticut River - continued

1633 Van Twiller, sent Jacob Van Curler, with  
 a party of men to Fresh River, or Connecticut.  
 as the Indians called it, to purchase a tract for  
 the W.I. Company, & to erect a fort. The purchase  
 was made June 8, 1633. *The Deed given.*

Van Curler and the sachem named Wapoyquant  
 or Tattoepan, chief of Sickenames river,  
 and owners of the Fresh River of New Nethuland,  
 called in their tongue Connecticut, have  
 agreed for the purchase & sale of the tract named  
 Sicajook, a flat extending about a mile  
 [Dutch, 4 English] <sup>along</sup> the river to the next little  
 stream, and upwards above the kill, being  
 a third of a mile [Dutch - 1 1/3 Eng] broad to the  
 height of land. It is further agreed that ~~some~~  
 Sequen should dwell with us, all at the  
 request & to the great joy of the sachem Altur-  
 Cadenroet, & all interested tribes. This has  
 taken place on the part of the Sequen with  
 the knowledge of Magarittine Chief of Sloops  
 Bay. The chief of the Sickenames, is paid  
 for the said land by Jacob Curler one piece  
 of duffels, 27 ells long, 6 axes, six kettles, 18 knives,  
 one sword blade, one spears, & some toys. all  
 which was signed by Jacob Van Curler  
 Gnechik Lubbertsen, Gyllis Pieters, Claes Jan Ruyter  
 Domingo Dios, Barent Jacobs, Gool and Pieter  
 Louwensen. (some abridged).

Another record of this transaction, says  
 the land was purchased of the chief of the Sickenames  
 with the free will & consent of the ~~indians~~ <sup>indians</sup> ~~to~~  
 them, "land along the river 1 mile long and 1/3 of  
 a mile wide," and a musket shot over the  
 kill where the said Corlaer has commenced  
 building the trading house called the Hope  
 situation on the Fresh River of the New Neth-  
 erlands". To the great satisfaction of the Sequen &  
 Stuyvesant, 1604, says there were 8 witnesses? of  
 which 5 are living, who will attest that the  
 purchase was made & possession taken before  
 any Englishman had ever been on Fresh  
 Water River; & that the land was purchased  
 of the natives who lived on the river, & declared  
 themselves the right owners.

There is no Indian Deed given - no Indian  
 signatures - only Dutch testimony that such  
 a purchase was made.



Connecticut River - continued

Vancurler erected a trading post, which he armed with 2 pieces of cannon. & called it "The House of Good Hope". The Gov. of Massachusetts wrote to Van Twiller on the subject. & the latter replied Oct 4. 1633, N.S.

Holmes & his bark & the frame of a house, passed by this fort Sept. 16. 1633.

Mass. 3. 164 Protest of the Dutch, &c.

1/133. Church ordered to be built at New Amsterdam for Rev. Mr. Bogardus.

Hardly an agricultural settler had yet gone over, or been sent over.

Open war with the Dutch at Good Hope and the Pequots. The Pequots had killed some Indians that came to trade at the fort Hope, & the Dutch in revenge slew the old Pequot chief and several of his tribe, & open war was the result. This, O.G. says drove the Pequots to invite the English of Massachusetts Bay to make a plantation on<sup>th</sup> Connecticut. (Is he not wrong? He quotes Wentthrop F. 143.)

"Sewanhacky" - so Long Island is called in some Dutch records 1636, and before. Does it mean wampum-land?

Avarice, selfishness & dishonesty of the servants of the Dutch Company - that is, those employed by them.

160 Pagganck, name of Gov's Island. Bought by Van Twiller  
200 Tenkenas } 2 islands in Hellgat river purchased  
120 Minnahanock } by the same. - all 1637.

Leotenis. So the Dutch name an island near Rhode Island.

Prices 1637. Rye 2 1/2 florins a schepel of 3 pecks  
maize 1 1/2 to 2 florins, peas 4 to 5 florins. wheat  
3 florins, broken barley 4 florins, whale oil 3 f. gallon  
Vinegar 2 f. pepper 2 1/2 f. lb. gunpowder 1 1/2 f.  
candles 10 stivers, shot & ball 1 florin, pork  
7 stivers, meat 6 stivers, tobacco 12 stivers, 900  
bundles of reed 13 1/2 f. 500 nails 2 1/2 f. brick 10 f. 1000  
scythes 6 f. keg butter 2 f. Labor in harvest  
about 80 cents a day; in other business 60 cents. Price  
of a negre 40 florins or 16 dollars. (florin 40 cents.)

1638. Hardly any farms or farmers. Only traders & clerks.  
The Patroons sought chiefly to make money by trade.  
Contrast with New England.



1638 William Kieft, Director General arrives.

He introduced order & regularity. Every thing was at loose ends.

Salaries. Councillors, 35 guilders a month (14) \$

Bookkeeper. 36 guilders a mo. + 200g. for bread.

Mason 20g. (8 dolls) a mo. gunner 16g. per mo.

Commissary 36g. Carpenter 48g. (7.20) a mo. + 100g for

Overseer 30g. Indian Interpreter 12g. (16)

House Carpenter 36g. per mo. (14.40.) (+ 100g for board a yr

Van Twiller had farms with horses, cows, & other creatures  
goats, tobacco plantations, &c. oxen.

The State of Morals was bad. Much Thieving  
and lewdness; some executions. Much Dishonesty.

Tobacco Plantations were increasing.

The Mass of people were unable to read or write.

1638 Swedes on the Delaware

1638 Trade with N. V. thrown open to all Dutch  
and others. Planters to have land but to pay 1/10 of  
produce to the Company.

103 Farmers encouraged to settle in N.V. both  
owners of land & tenants.

1639 Some English from N.E. & Virginia settle there,  
Take oath of allegiance.

Difficulties between English & Dutch at Hartford.

English begin to settle on Long Island, where  
Lyon Gardiner purchased the island Moneponock.  
containing 3000 acres - This was first Eng. Settlement  
in that region

Dutch had small settlements at West end of L. Island.  
- very few settlers at Breuckelen - Gravesend begun.

1640 Renewal of Differences at Hartford. Gysbert of Dyck  
commanded there - had 18a 16. soldiers. Mr. Hopkins  
maintained that the Dutch had no valid title to  
lands there; that the Pequods never owned the soil. The  
English drove the Dutch from some of their lands, to revive  
Hempstead their horses & cows, &c.

Jan Hendrickson Roesen succeeded Opdyck this year - was  
Commissary at Fort Hope. had 36 guilders a month  
Dutch purchased of Indians in this & preceding years  
almost all lands on Long Island, West of present town  
of Suffolk.

Emigrants from Lyann begin to settle west side  
of Crow Creek, at Schout's Bay, on land of Dutch, May.

They withdrew, except 6 were taken, viz Job Locers,

George Wells, John Harrington, Philip & Nathaniel  
Cartland or Kortland, William Archer or Harcourt.

These were carried to New Amsterdam - arrived at fort  
May 15. 2 men & a woman & child left. The 6 went from  
Buckinghamshire, England, but last from Lyann had  
been induced to go by Lord Stirling's agent, Farrell,  
and by one Howie, a leading man. The 6 dismissed.



1640.

The Lyren men with Have, driven from Cor Neck, bought of Farrette Southampton, June 12. from Peconek to east point of island, & from sea to sea. Gave 400 £ sterling Southold settled about same time.

Greenwich, was the Indian Petuquapaw. on main land. Some English settle there. Kieft protested.

1640. New Order about Patroons, <sup>or Charters,</sup> future ones to have only one Dutch mile on a river, coast, or bay & two into the country - to plant 50 settlers in 3 years. Patroons to have feudal privileges of erecting towns & appointing their officers, with "high middle & low jurisdiction" exclusive hunting, fishing, fowling & milling within their manors, to be holden as an eternal inheritance, &c.

Any man conveying himself & 5 souls over 15 yrs to N. N. was to be acknowledged a master or colonist & entitled to claim 100 morgen, or 2.00 acres of land, with the privilege of hunting in the public forest and fishing in the public streams.

When these colonists became numerous enough for towns, villages or cities, they were to have municipal governments - magistrates & ministers of justice, to be selected & chosen by Director General & Council, from those nominated. Each emigrant to have a firelock or musket, or a hanger & side arms.

"No other religion was to be publicly tolerated or allowed in N. N. save that then taught & exercised by authority in the Reformed Church in the United Provinces. The company were to maintain preachers & schoolmasters.

Duties at rate of 10 percent <sup>on cost</sup> to be paid to Company on goods sent from Holland: 5 per cent on return cargoes, and beavers, Otters, & other peltries, 10 per cent.

By this charter, people might manufacture cloth - old clause repealed. Company were to supply the colonists "with as many blacks as possible". Company reserved <sup>the right of</sup> great & small tithes, waifs, estrays, forests, <sup>conveying</sup> money, making roads, erecting forts, founding cities, towns, churches, - were to support a governor, counsellors & other officers.

Increase of population & business, was not favorable to the Indians. The Dutch cattle destroyed their cornfields; and the authorities undertook to levy a tribute from the savages in corn, furs & swampan, under pretence that the Dutch forts & soldiers protected the Indians from their enemies.

The Algonquians paid 20 beavers for a musket - and 10 to 12 guilders for a pound of powder. They obtained arms for 4000 warriors, & swept the country from Canada to the seacoast, levying tribute on other tribes.



1232. New Nethuton

1640 The Dutch would not sell fire arms  
m. g. 299. to the river Indians, though they did to the Mohawks.  
Indians greatly irritated, especially by the Tax.  
This tax led to war.

Imprudence, & cruelty of the Dutch towards  
the Narritans.

1.229  
1.242 Prices paid at the company's store in  
New Amsterdam by all; being 50 percent above cost.  
Indian corn 60 cts; barley 2 dolls. peas 3.25. wheat  
flour 1 dollar per schepel of 3 pecks. pork 5 stivers,  
fresh meat 5 stivers, butter 8 stivers, tobacco 7 st.  
dried fish 12 stivers (or 25 cents) per lb. hard bread 15 stivers,  
cabbages 12 cents each; staves 32¢ per 1000 of 1200.  
a hog 8 dolls. rye bread 5 stivers; wheat bread 7 st.  
corn bread 4 st. per loaf. Sour wine 31 bhd. Spanish  
wine 4 st. French wine 10 st. per quart. Sugar 17 + 24  
stivers per lb. yogram 1 dollar, Kersey flannel 1.20  
per ell, cloth 2 dolls. White linen 18 to 20 stivers,  
red flannel 1.20 per ell; chamois shoes 36 stivers  
per pair or 6 York shillings (He makes a stiver  
equal to 2 1/2 cents.)

misc. 5.92.  
1.267 Distillation. William Hendrickson  
erected a still on Staten Island, for Director  
Kieft, & distilled a considerable quantity  
of brandy & other strong liquors, during 6 or  
7 months. He began in Dec. 1640. H. had  
25 guilders per month. The first Ardent  
Spirits made in America.

1641. Six slaves killed the 7th in New Amsterdam.  
They could not afford to lose all the 6, so they drew  
out one by lot, and he was to be hanged. The rope  
broke, and he was pardoned.

Difficulties continue at Hartford. Dutch  
much annoyed by the English. The English restricted  
the Dutch to 30 acres of land. Massachusetts  
advised Hartford people to be more liberal.

"Schter ceel" he names so, Newark Bay.

War with the Narritans again. Kieft  
\* offered other Savages 10 fathoms of wampum  
for every head of a Narritan. Peace followed.

Sovereign Kings - so the Indians called Europeans  
Kieft was an absolute ruler, a despot, & acted as such

\* Scalp. Gov. Hunter of Pennsylvania in 1756 offered 150  
for Indian male over 12 years; for his scalp, or for a female,  
or boy under 12, 130¢. Scalp of an Indian woman 50¢.



1642 War with Indians - entered into by the tyrant Kieft. The Indians, or one, had killed a man, in revenge of the death of his father, killed by the Dutch some years before. The murderer of the Dutchman was of the Wechquaesqueeks, who resided about 20 miles above N.A. near Sintsink creek and opposite Tappaan. They refused to give up the murderer.

Kieft sent 80 men against the Wechquaesqueeks in March. They did nothing, except alarm the Indians, & they agreed to give up the murderer some time after, but would not or could not comply.

1642. Difficulties continue at Hartford.

April 9. Capt Daniel Patrick & Elizabeth Feake authorized by her husband, Robert Feake who was sick, gave in their adherence to the Dutch, and swore allegiance, provided they should be protected against Indians & "enjoy the same privileges & all patroons of New Netherland have obtained".

Dutch Gov. Council offer to cede their land at Hartford July 9, on condition of receiving 1/10 of the produce of all the land they claimed (apparently) same differences at Hartford.

Rev. Francis Doughty driven from Goshasset, Mass. ~~Rev~~ Richard Smith & others, obtained a patent of 13,332 acres at Uxpath. L.I. now Newtown.

Oct 3. Mr Throgmorton & others driven from Mass. had permission to settle at Westchester 35 families, called by Dutch Oredeland.

Lady Moor, having rejected infant baptism, was excommunicated, she & her son Ser Henry & their followers, located themselves at Gravenzande or Gravesend, named from a place in Holland, not from G. in England. This was in 1643.

George Baxter, English Secretary of Kieft Council, Kieft agreed with John & Richard Ogden of Stamford to build a Church at N.A. of rock stone 72 feet by 52, & 16 feet over the ground for 2500 guilders, equal to 1000 dollars. Dutch to furnish lime & transport the stone from the riverside, & give the use of the company's boat, & if the work was well done, a discount of 100 guilders. The Ogden to procure the stones & bring them to the shore. In agreement, "John Ogden of Stamford and Richard Ogden engage to build" &c. Richard is not said to belong to Stamford.



## Indian War.

1642 Some traders stupefied an Indian with brandy and then stole his dress & beaver skins. He was a Hackensack. He in revenge killed two men, one English & one Dutch. Indian chiefs offered wampum, but Kieft demanded the murderer. He fled to the Tappankees, and Kieft demanded him of them; he was a chief's son.

1643 Mohawks, 800 ago, in winter made an irroad upon Wechquaesquecks & Tappaam Indians, to levy tribute & a 500 of these, terrified, having many dead, fled to the Dutch at New Amsterdam, who fled them. At New S. Thinking themselves unsafe, they again fled to the Hackensacks & other Indians. One party of the Dutch were for exterminating the Indians - another party for kindness.

A violent party prevailed, with Kieft to lead them. In the dead of night Feb. 25-26, one party proceeded against the Wechquaesquecks & Tappaam, at Hackensack or Pavonia. Another again, then of the same tribe at Corlaer's Hook, intending to set them all to death. The blessing of Heaven was clearly & humanly invoked on the expedition. Eighty Indians were slaughtered in Pavonia, with the Hudson & 30 at Corlaer's Hook while sunk in repose, supposing the Dutch to be friends. All sorts of barbarous & cruelties were exercised. Orders for their going were given by Kieft.

The long Hauden (Dutch) wished to repeat the same scenes there, but Kieft did not give liberty. They however rolled the Indians and killed two.

Eleven tribes of savages took up arms against the Dutch, and killed or captured men, women & children, burnt their dwellings, killed their cattle, &c. All was terror & consternation.

The brutal Kieft appointed a day of fasting & prayer.

Peace with Long Island Indians March 5

Do with River Indians April 22

"chickinkashacky" is used for Hackensack.

July. War breaks out again - Wappingers begin it.

Eight men selected to aid the Director & Council.

Two of them were Isaac Allerton and

a Thomas H. See in Thos. Hall p. 243. p. 235

Heydrick Heydricksen - was an unbel. of N.A.

Gouert Koeckmans " " " "

Philip Cgrave " " " "

"The Gul" was a name for Newark Bay - Scher Gul also was bay land.

7 Indian tribes were engaged in the war. Pavonia, Scher Gul, great parts of Manhattan, mostly Long Island &c. were soon in their hands. Suffered to be 1500 fighting Indians in the 7 tribes.



New Netherlands

Indian War—

1643 Mrs Anne Hutchinson, her son Francis, her son in law Collins, & all the rest of her family & other persons in the neighborhood were killed. O.C. represents that she lived towards Stamford but all is indefinite or vague. The other persons he says belonged to the families of Mr Throgmorton & Mr Cornhill—18 killed in all & property destroyed. [Seems at Westchester, see 233d page. — They attacked the place of ready bloody without success; she was well guarded.

Oct 24. The Dutch had only 250 or 300 soldiers & 50 or 60 Indians to oppose the Indians — Capt John Underhill engaged to lead the Dutch about Sept. 1st. De Isaac Allerton went to New Haven to obtain aid, but did not succeed. The Dutch apply to Holland. Their mournful complaints. They say the Indians besides the English, are about 200 in number—more than were gathered near the fort. The names of Isaac Allerton and Thomas Hall are to this paper, asking for relief of the States general, &c. in Holland. Isaac Allerton was a pilgrim 1620; removed to New Netherlands 1644. died 1659.

1644. War continued.

Meyn Mayans was a chief who resided between Greenwich & Stamford. He attacked 3 Christians & killed one but was himself killed by the others & his head brought to Fort Amsterdam. The Dutch sent a detachment of 120 men, part English to destroy these Indians. They had done much damage. Capt Patrick had requested these troops to be sent. They came & could find no Indians; they had escaped. Some of the soldiers were provoked with Capt. Patrick, & one of the Dutch soldiers, after some altercation shot Patrick dead in the house of Capt. Underhill in Stamford Jan. 2. 1645. The soldier escaped. The party first landed at Greenwich where Patrick lived, & then after marching after the Indians all night, came in at Stamford. After this murder guided by some Shaker people, they came to an Indian settlement and killed 18 or 20 & took some prisoners. They then went back to New A.

1644.

Capt Patrick's wife was Annetje van Beyeren. She married Tobias Feek, of Flushing, after his death.

An expedition to Heemstedede, N.J. resulted in the destruction of 120 Indians. Capt. Underhill was at head of English; the Dutch commanders. Some abominable cruelty to Indians.

Feb. 13. p. 15 Capt Underhill went to Stamford—ascertained that 500 Indians were in that region, encamped. 130 men now embarked at Fort Amsterdam, under Underhill & Van Dyck, and went to Greenwich—marched to the Indian village—had a severe conflict—killed 180 Indians on the outside then fired the village. The survivors endeavored to escape but were driven back into the flames & perished. In this merciless manner 500 humans were butchered (some say 700) men, women & children. Only 8 escaped.



## Indian War - continued

1644 } The Expedition under Capt. Underhill and  
Feb. } Ensign Vandyck - went from Greenwich, and  
13.15. } had to pass over a rocky mountain - & over two  
rivers, one of which was 200 feet wide & 3 deep. They  
went from morning till 10 o'clock in the evening in  
reaching the village. The evening was clear: the moon  
was full. The village consisted of 3 rows of houses  
or huts, ranged in streets, each 80 paces long  
(about 16 rods,) backed by a mountain on the N.W. side.  
The Indians were not taken by surprise; they fought  
bravely for an hour, & attempted to break through the  
Dutch line, but without success. 180 lay dead on the  
snow outside of the buildings. They continued to discharge  
arrows from behind the huts. Underhill and then to be  
fired. The Indians endeavored to escape in every way  
but without success. As soon as they showed themselves  
they were driven back into the burning hovel.

Indians reports that 500 were killed in this manner.  
Others carry the number to 700. (Does he mean in addition  
to the 180? There is doubtless much exaggeration.)  
The whole only 8 escaped; of these, three were badly wounded.  
No man, woman, or child was heard to shriek or  
moan, through the entire carnage.

Fifteen under Underhill were wounded. The  
weather was cold, & they spent the night on the field  
of battle. The next day at noon they arrived  
at Stamford, where they were received with great kindness.  
Two days after they arrived at port Amsterdam, where  
public Thanksgiving was ordered.

O.C. professes to take this from the Journal of a  
Viceroy of Holland. - The New England Historians  
place it erroneously in 1646. Trumbull says 300  
Indians were killed - probably this number is right enough.

Some Indians desire peace. Peace with some in April  
others continued the war.

May. 130 soldiers & 70 others arrive at N.C. having been driven  
from Brazil by the Portuguese.

There were 50 English in the pay of the Dutch.  
130 soldiers arrived from Brazil via Surinam; 45 Dutch  
soldiers; Mariners willing to serve 55; freemen, not including  
the companies servants, 200. - all 480 men.

The Dutch sold Indian prisoners into Slavery. "The  
practice of reducing Indians to slavery is as old as  
the discovery of America." "It was continued as a  
trade by the English colonies." (very wrong - this would  
run down to 1800.)

8 men in writing to Holland, say the Indians  
were unjustly ~~treated~~ - that they had always lived  
as lambs among us, until provoked by Kieft, &c.



# New Netherland

297

## Beemsteed

from Stamford

1644 English ~~Dutch~~ settlers at Beemsteede had a place so named, from one in Holland. They were allowed to manage their local affairs.

Nov 16.

Date of Patent - Nov. 16. 1644. Patented John Findham, John Stecklen, John Ogden, John Lawrence, Jonas Wood, John Carman. First child born was Caleb Carman, son of John, born Jan. 7. 1645. He says English & Dutch both valued the privilege of electing, being governed by their own magistrates.

## Rensselaerwyck.

Some families came out over in 1630, & in subsequent years; also stock, farming tools, &c. Settlements began around Albany in 1630.

The Patroon administered civil & criminal justice, in person or by deputy; he hung, castrated, inflicted corporal punishment, &c. He had many officers under him. Arendt Van Buerler was superintendent of Rensselaer's Colonie. He was in great repute among the Indians; & they addressed all succeeding governors of New York by the name of "Corlaer".

The Colonie had 3 classes of population.

1st. Freeman, who emigrated at their own expense.

2. Farmers or Tenants, sent out at expense of the Patroon. The Patroon erected buildings & furnished animals and implements, & first fences. The farmers paid an annual rent in grain, beavers & wampum, or some paid half, & some  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the produce; and the Patroon had half the increase of the stock & and  $\frac{1}{10}$  of produce of each farm. The tenant to keep houses, tools, fences &c. in good repair. Wild land was let for 10 years free of rent and tenths; then all came to the Patroon. Each settler had clothing & some cash furnished, for which he was to repay the Patroon, at least the latter at 50 percent advance in produce & wampum.

3d Farm Servants or Laborers. The Patroon was to supply his colonists with these, & assist in the work of the farm. For engaging them & conveying them to America he was entitled to 16 guilders about 6 dollars, per annum for each laborer, over & above the yearly wages which the farmer was to allow such servants, which ran from 40 to 150 guilders (16 dollars to 60 dollars) and board. The laborer found his own clothing.

The Patroon had many feudal privileges, about mill, hunting, fishing, &c.

Kiliaen van Rensselaer is said to have come over in 1637. If he came, he did not stay long.

Adrian van der Donck, of Breuckelen a graduate of Leyden Univ. came over as New York's Sheriff & Schout-fiscaal, came over in 1641.



2 38. New Netherland,  
Rensselaerswyck.

Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, came over in 1642, to be the minister to the Colonie. The Patroon paid his passage & that of his wife and 4 children; gave him an outfit of 300 guilders; he was to receive for the first 3 years, an annual stipend of 1100 guilders (440 dollars, he says) 30 scheepels of wheat, 2 firkins of butter, or in place of it, 60 guilders in cash (24 dollars). For second term of 3 years, the salary was to be 1300 guilders annually (520 dollars).

An Oak house was purchased by the Megapolensis, built for another, for 300 guilders.

Walt tiles, stone for building (30,000) were brought from Holland.

Tuscameatick - Indian name of Greenbush.

A Church 34 by 19 feet was erected in 1644. It had a pulpit & canopy, pews for the magistrates & deacons and 9 benches for the congregation. This furniture cost 32 dollars. New Church 1656. It was near Fort Orange. The Churchyard in the rear. Houses, traders, mechanics, &c. in the same neighborhood.

Beaver trade, the great business. Competition raised the price of peltry 100 percent almost.

Price of a beaver averaging about an ell square before 1642, was 6 fathoms of wampum. It rose to 7 fathoms, 9 fathoms 1642. 10 fathoms white w. 1643. Fixed at 9 fathoms white, or  $4\frac{1}{2}$  of black wampum.

The Patroon had every 6th beaver skin purchased by those not licensed to buy; and one guilder on each of the other 5 skins.

"Beverswyck" was the Dutch name of Albany until 1664.

The Patroon & his partners were the only ones who could import goods into the Colonie.

He licensed traders to sell goods. He had a fort and trading house at Beeren Island. 5 guilders was paid on every vessel passing this fort.

The Patroon died in Holland 1646.

1646-7. Long & severe winter. North River closed at Fort Orange Nov. 25. was frozen about 4 months. High freshet followed, which did much damage. Highest flood since 1639. Whales went up the river.



1645. Director Gen. Kieft <sup>to be</sup> recalled - was not till 1646  
The country was no profit to the W. I. Co. Every  
thing was in ruin & confusion, owing to the  
unnecessary war & other foolish things.

It is stated that the country had cost the company  
500,000 Guilders (220,000 dollars - here he means  
the guilder 42 cents) above the returns, since 1626.

Estimates of expenses - 1645.

Director 3000 florins a year

Second.. 1446 " "

Fiscal. 720 " "

Secretary 720 " "

Clerk of Merch. 720 " "

Clergyman 1440 " "

Schoolmaster - 360 " "

Constable 240 " "

Commander 720 " "

Ensign - 340 " "

2 Sergeants 300 " " each

2 Corporals 216 " " each

1 Drummer - 156 " " "

4 Cadets - 180 " " each

40 Soldiers 156 " " each

1 Surgeon 300 " "

1 Skipper 300 " " each.

4 Sailors - 156 " "

1 Boy - 108 " "

more officers -  
Schoolmaster is also reader & scribe

1645 Peace with many of the Indians by Kieft &  
May. on Long Island.

Names of Chiefs & places on Long Island.

Whiteney was sachem of Mockgonecoeks

Rock How " of Cootjawanick's

Mamawicktow chief of Cooteyick

Weyrintenick " of Meranla-hacky

Villages - Dupeew-hacky - Suchta-hacky

Sichetany-hacky - Nisingjueg-hacky

Reichou-hacky -

Peace with others August 1645

Oratory. chief of the Pachingoacks

Sessekennick, " of the Tappaans & Pachgawwank

others named - Mohegans, Wappinecks,

Wachagwagwagwag, Sintsing,

Kitchitawanks,

Thus the war ended. Oratory was to be given at Stamford.

Mrs. Hutchinson's daughter was to be given at Stamford.  
or Fort Amsterdam. English had promised a ransom.

Same year, Kieft made a treaty with the Mohegans, & Mahicananders, & others up the river.

It does not appear that these upper Indians had  
been engaged in the war.

Day of Thanksgiving Sept 6.

Of the ~~all the~~ ~~at the~~



## 240 New Netherlands

1645 Vlissingen on Long Island settled by English from Massachusetts. They had a patent for 16,000 acres, east of Maspeth (Newtown). Those names Thomas Farrington, John Townsend, Wm Lawrence Robert Froman.

1645. Rev. Everardus Bogardus. - used to get drunk. He quarrelled with Kieft.

Rev. Mr. Dougherty was still in New Netherlands. <sup>(had a patent at Maspeth 1642.)</sup> <sup>(indicated at Maspeth)</sup>

Sweelens on the Delaware were insolent, and abusive to the Dutch. They claimed every thing. Their object was trade-furs. In 1644 they sent to Sweelen 70,421 ds tobacco & 2127 pack-ages of furs. Gov. Printz was a coarse, violent man; - weighed 400 lbs & drank three drinks at every meal. He took up a Dutchman & threw him out of doors.

1646. New Haven Trading House up Poughkeepsie river protested against by Kieft. Answering Gov Eaton.

A colony granted at Catskill.

Another " " at Nepperhaem, now Yonkers. This to Adrian vander Donck.

## Population

Slavery had existed many years. It was difficult to get free labor.

The whole population of New Netherlands in 1643 is estimated at 2900, viz. in and about New Amsterdam 2500, and the rest on Long Island & at Rensselaerwyck, viz. 400.

The war reduced the population very much. Many were slain & many removed to Holland & elsewhere. He thinks the whole population in 1645 was not over 1000. He is forced to contrast this "with the progress & flourishing condition of the English ~~New England~~ Colonies." He supposes New England then contained 50 or 50,000 population. The government of an exclusive mercantile company is the worst of all governments for any country.

Most of the houses around forts Amsterdam & Orange were low wooden buildings, with roofs of reeds or straw and chimneys of wood. There were wind & water mills to saw and grind. There was sawmill on Nebo Governor's Island in 1639. It was leased the 4 year for 500 merchandise board yearly half oak, half pine. There were water grist & sawmills at Rensselaerwyck also, a flour mill erected 1646. A brewery there before 1637.



In 1646. there were small plantations under the  
 watch on Long Island - at Breukelen, Amersfoort (or  
 Flatlands), Groenensande, Vlissingen (or Fleetsing)  
 & Amstede, Mespath (or Newtown) and Gowanus.  
 The war destroyed all West of the North River  
 Rensselaerwyck was not injured by the war,  
 but Beverwyck (Albany) had only 16 houses. There  
 were some boweries east of the river opposite Fort Orange,  
 & some houses below the fort or South, on west side.  
 From Rensselaerwyck to Manhattan, on  
 both sides of the Hudson, it was all a wilderness.  
 The Dutch built a fort at Esopus 1614, but it was  
 gone.

On the Delaware the Dutch possessed  
 only a single colony; ~~Dutch~~ entirely controlled  
 by the Swedes.

morals, &c.  
 p. 230.

Drunkennes & boils were common at N.A.  
 A fourth of the city consisted of grogshops & houses where  
 nothing could be got but tobacco & beer.  
 Church begun in 1642 was unfinished 1646  
 No school house had been erected; & little or no  
 effort had been made by ~~the~~ authorities  
 to establish a common primary school in any  
 part of the country. Goeblanac hussath had been  
 a college 9 or 10 years.

### Names

Pachonahelick - island in the Hudson below Bethlehem - called Long I.  
 Nachtenack - Indian name of site of present Waterford  
 Maccakassin - Sawkill, above Jonkers.  
 Passapenock. Beaver or Bear Island. Lower corner of present Beverwyck  
 Zwanendal. Valley of Swans. Dutch name of some of present Delaware.  
 Pavorrier. Dutch name of a colony West of Manhattan in N. Jersey  
 Hobokan - Hackins. Hobokan is the name of a village S. of Antwerp on Scheldt  
 and in N. Jersey.  
 Peternoeck. Mill Creek in Greenbush ("greene bosch")

Sibert Claessen - named 1643. Richard Colfax 1643. Philip Grave 1643  
 Heyndrick Heyndrickson. 1643 - same as Hendrick Henderson.  
 and same as Heindrick Heindrickson.  
 Robert Pennoyer, was at N. Amsterdam. 1643. Perhaps a soldier. Helped  
 Kieft when Adriaensson attempted to kill him.  
 Samuel Godlyn. A conspicuous man 1629. Capt. Died before 1635.

Kiliaen Van Rensselaer was a pearl merchant in Amsterdam.  
 Johannes, his son, succeeded him as patroon. Other sons were directors  
 of the colony, viz. Jorenias, Jan Baptista, & Ryckert. Nicolaus was a clergyman



# 242 New Netherlands.

Prices in the Colonie of Rensselaerswyck  
from 1630 to 1646. <sup>This w<sup>d</sup> should have the S.</sup>

see prices  
p 229  
p 232

Compiled from the account books of the Colonien.  
Accounts were in florins & stivers; 20 stivers made  
a florin; a florin equal to 40 cents, stiver 2 cents.

	fl.	st.		fl.	st.		fl.	st.
Kersey, swivel Colors	2.	puell.	a scythe	2.10.	spade	1 1/2 to	2.10	
Cloth	2 to 5.	"	wooden yoke	1.5	Ploughshare		25.0	
Barwass	153.	"	Chisel	1.0	Iron Hammer		0.14	
Canabuck linen	9	"	Hoop net	7.10	Kettle	3 to 6.0		
Deffels	3.	"	Seine	6.0	Wood Lade	1.10		
Linum Breaches	1.10	+	Claz. Knives	4.16	Eng knife	1 to 2.10		
Trimmed shirt a chemise	3.10	+	Gympowder lb.	1.0	Cheese lb.	0.3		
Blanket a coverlet	7 to 8.0	+	Lead	0.3	Saxps	0.6		
Linum gown	1.10	+	Prunes	0.2	Steel	0.1		
Shoes, pair	2 to 4.0	+	Nails 100 to lb.	0.8	Large Pins 1000.	0.18		
Go burlap	1.4	+	Sole leather lb.	1.2	Walt-scraper	3.0		
Stockings	1.8	+	Upper do	1.10	White Salt-ton	7.13		
Shain of silk	5.	+	Span. Wine, can	1.0	1/2 bbl. Salt	2.12		
Hat	10.0	+	Vingarr. can	0.10	Amvil	100.0		
Pea jacket	4.10	+	Spruce beer	0.18	Bellows jrb.	47.0		
Sugar lb.	15.	+	Oil	1.12	Nutmeg oz.	0.10		
Yarn	2.0	+	Train oil	0.16	Ginger	3.0		
Cotton yarn	1.10	+	Brandy	1.05	Gloves	2.10		
Net yarn	12	+	glass Tumbler	1.00	Wlace	0.16		
Shamatus yarn	fl 1.10	+			Pepper	0.2		
Agass	11 to 17.10	+						
Waltket & Cartons box	19.0	+						
Oxear hatchet	1 1/2 to 2.0	+						
Cheese	2 to 5.0	+						
Grindstone	1.0	+						
Grinding fan	4.10	+						
Plough & iron work	28.16	+						
Sheeps bell, copper	1.6	+						
Silk Buttons doz	6	+						
Ob of Salt meat	33.0	+						
Smiths Coals chald.	19.10	+						
100 bars of flat iron	485.0	+						

1646.

Peers. schepel	3.10	fl
Ind corn	1.5	
Little Beans	2.10	
Wheat	2.10	
Blue kuteat	1.10	
Barley	2.5	
Wild beans	1.10	
Butter 8st. lb.	Pork 10st. lb.	
Gron 3 1/2	Tobacco 1 fl. lb	
Hops 17	Plank 1 fl. ea	
Bacon 6 to 7 fl.	Gum 15 fl	
Manosht 330 fl.	Horse 160 fl	
Cow 50 to 120 fl.	Yearling bull 8 fl	
Pig 25 fl.	Wine 3 to 6 yrs 120 fl	
6 cow 3 to 6 yrs 80	80 2 " 70 fl	
Stud 2 yrs 60 fl		

Domestic Produce		
Wheat, 1635, Schepel	2.10	same 16 to
Ind. Corn 1637	2.0 + m 1.43.	1.10
Barley	2.10	Malt. 2.10
Oats	1.0	San Ox (37)
Wheat corn	2.10	2 from 80 to 140 fl
Rye	2.0	Horse 80 fl
Turnips	0.15	Pig. 12 to 45 fl
She goat	36.0	Flour pr. 2 fl
Beaver	6 to 7.0	Butter 16. 8st
Beaver coat	25.0	Wampum all 2.17
Wing Stud a year	30.0	Plank. each 1.16
Wing Mare	40.0	Wagon 30.0
Small beer ton	6.0	300 Carrots 2.0
Strong beer	18 to 20.0	
Palisades 1000.	15.0	fl.
a barn, plough & harrow, 1643.	825.0	
Yellow Brick per 1000.	15.0	
Day laborers wages 1637. per day	1.5 to 1.10	
Carpenters	2.0	
Reed 100 bundles	1.0	
Sawing Plank a year	3 stivers	
Useful cow a year	20 fl	
Cracked	100	14 fl

2 1/2 florins was a fixed dollar.



## English.

In 1635, George Holmes, his hired man Thomas Hall and 12 or 13 more English, proceeded to the Delaware to make a settlement. They were captured by the Dutch & sent to Manhattan; treated leniently, and they established themselves around Fort Amsterdam, & were the first English settlers among the Dutch on this island. (Perhaps Holmes and some others did not settle there. This was not Lieut. William Holmes. [See a Thomas Hall p. 234.]

## Indian Lawlessness.

O'Callaghan says "both men & women were excessively unchaste." Lucy Wastin so?

## Sewan, or Wampum. O.C. says it was made from

Misc 3.431.  
M. 12.176

the inside of Congue & mussel shells - the white from the former, the black or purple from the latter. White was worth only half as much as purple.

M. 17.437

In 1673, 6 white & 8 black beads were a penny; but made equal to silver. 8 times as many would be necessary. Wampum currency was then much below specie. made chiefly on Long Island.

Beaver. In leasing a Bowery ("bouwery") named ~~the~~ the Fluit ("de Vlachte") 1647, for 500 guilders a year, payment was to be made in beaver skins at 4 guilders alt. (which, he says, is \$6.60) or in grain at current rate. - [Not a beaver on preceding page 1630 to 1640, & in 1646 is put down at 6 to 7 florins for a one skin - perhaps weighed over 1 lb.]

Grain at Rensselaerswick. It appears from the accounts of the patroon, that 1642 to 1646, they raised chiefly wheat and oats, some peas, & a little rye, barley & buckwheat. Indian corn, also.

Dutch at Fort Orange. "A report & Advice on the condition of New Nethland" by the company's Chamber of Accounts in Holland, Dec 15. 1664, says in reference to the Indian war, that all the boweries but 5 were destroyed, viz. 3 at Manhattan & 2 at Staten Island; "but Rensselaer's colonie enjoyed peace, because they continued to sell fire arms & powder to the Indians even during the war against us!"

Misc. 3.100.  
"4.299

English. In 1643, in the Indian war, the Dutch engaged 50 English (who seem to have dwelt among the Indians) to fight for them & engaged to pay them. In 1644 Lieut Baxter with 35 English, & others with Dutch soldiers made an expedition to Staten Island. The same Lt Baxter led the English (part of the 120) to Greenwich, same year, & against the Weckquaesquecks. Next Sang Mlain Underhill a leading English, (with Dutch in Dutch officers) & they kill 120 on Long M. 2. Capt Underhill (with English & Dutch) fought the great battle with the Indians, N. E. of Greenwich Feb.



244 Rev Thomas Smith of Falmouth

From Boston. Began to preach at Falmouth June 1727

Ordained March 8. 1727. Married Sarah Tyng 1728

Salary at first 70 £ aboard & contributions of strangers. <sup>to 48</sup> <sub>to 198.</sub> About half firewood, lots cleared & fenced & a house. About 400 people. He was born March 10. 1702.

<sup>from 7 miles</sup> He was a practicing Physician. He says in 1748, "I am hurried perpetually with the sick; the whole practice rests on me". In July 1751, he writes "It is a time of health & therefore a time of leisure with me". He visited the local Indian population, on boats, on horseback on the ice, on snow-shoes. Sometimes prayed an hour. Had much wit & humor.

<sup>misc</sup> "There was infinitely more of wit & frolic & gaiety, in the olden days, on all occasions which brought the clergy together than there is in this prosaic utilitarian age." William Willis 1849.

He was a successful speculator in real estate.

<sup>to 45</sup> <sub>misc. p. 149.</sub> In 1742, he had a "Chaise" & a "Watch" both mentioned in his diary.

<sup>to 15, 267.</sup> Ordinations were rare events formerly and attractive & interesting. They were frequented by people from neighboring & from distant towns and there was conviviality & good cheer with all. Mr Smith mentions one ordination, which, he says, was "a jolly ordination; we lost sight of decorum; Mr. L. kept us merry".

<sup>misc. p. 269</sup> In those days there was reserve in the exterior, & a dignity kept up, in general intercourse of society; but in fitting seasons the clergy & others threw off the conventional mask & gave free play to social feelings.

Evert Jansen Wendell emigrated from Embden in East Frisia about 1645 & settled in Albany where he died 1709. His son John was the father of Jacob Wendell of Boston, who was born Aug. 5. 1691 in Albany & died in Boston Sept 7. 1761.

Rev. Thomas Smith died May 25. 1795, having just entered his 94th year & performed partly the duties of the Sabbath until 2 years before his death.

<sup>misc. p. 88</sup> His house was the first one in the place that had a papered room. The paper was fastened on by nails.

<sup>on 9, 246</sup> Dr Deane, his colleague, says, "he practised medicine gratis among his people for a number of years, in the infancy of the settlement."

<sup>misc. p. 198</sup> Mr Smith's house was voted 1726; was 40 feet by 20 & 16 feet stud. His house was burnt 1775

A large supper party noticed 1727.

<sup>misc. p. 16</sup> Samuel Proctor of F. had a daughter named Kerenhappuck in 1729. She married Jos Hicks of Kittery 1748.



Major Samuel Moody died April 5. 1729.  
in 52<sup>d</sup> year (or perhaps 62<sup>d</sup> - he graduated 1684.) He  
was son of Rev. Joshua Moody of Portsmouth.  
He preached awhile at New Castle N.H. but was  
a military commander in 1705.

First <sup>Minister before?</sup> Schoolmaster in Falmouth was in 1733 -  
at 70<sup>£</sup> a year. Minister had 160<sup>£</sup> for salary  
& firewood 1733 - equal, Mr. Willis says, to 250  
dollars in silver. [75<sup>£</sup> l.c. money]

Mr Smith's Salary 1736, 230<sup>£</sup> - 1743, 265<sup>£</sup>; 1748, 600  
1749, 650  
1750, 700  
later 750

1737. Scarcity of Breadcorn at Ft. in Boston

1740. Meeting House built. Townsquire 1764.  
Not painted till after 1783.

1741. Great Scarcity of corn. Hot Summer.

He almost always made journeys to & from  
Boston on horseback

Chaise & Pigeons - Aug. 28. 1744, he went out and  
shot 10<sup>doz</sup> of Pigeons & brought them home  
in his Chaise. He carried his wife in  
a chaise to Boston, May 1745

Scalps 1745. He says the government offer 400  
for a scalp of a man, to those who go out at  
their own expense; 300<sup>£</sup> to those who have  
provision from the province. [see msc. q. 295]

May 1746 Midoufellow, Schoolmaster, had salary 200<sup>£</sup>  
1749 He seems not to practice Physic - for some years  
before (or Mr Smith)

1749. All buildings of wood in Falmouth,  
many but one story high & generally unpainted.  
Living plain & simple. Much french flep & wine  
drunked; at many kinds of meetings  
trainings, or divinations, weddings, funerals, &c.  
Much distinction in ranks. The upper sort  
made much display in dress - had cocked  
hats, often laced, full bottomed wigs, ruffles  
at necks & wrists, embroidered vests, rich  
small clothes, with buckles at knee & shoes  
gold headed canes; some had short scarlet cloaks,  
Ladies in high life had high head dresses, rich stomachers,  
broad gowns with ample folds & ruffles at elbows & neck,  
high pointed shoes & some wore crimson cloaks.

Enoch Freeman 1755. paid for a scarlet cloak for himself  
& scarlet riding hood for wife & trimmings, all bought in  
London &c. Bathin breeches &c. red breeches appear.



Rev Thomas Smiths Journal, with Notes by <sup>Wm. Willis</sup>

1757 Great Drought. & High Prices after.

1758. His salary raised to 800<sup>th</sup> O.T.

Sleighs. "Horses & Sleighs go everywhere over the snow, which is as high as the fences". March 26

1760. Tale & Breedy's Psalm books with tunes, arrived. They raised 25<sup>th</sup> in 1756. [O.T.]

1763. Jan'y said to be 5 feet of snow on a level

1764 Rev Samuel Deane ordained colleague  
Sellingmunt 133.6.8; salary 100<sup>th</sup> [Change]

1766. Repeal of Stamp Act. Great Rejoicing, May 19.  
"People mad with drink & joy!"

Rev. Samuel Nash. B. U. 1774. Ordained & Gray 1775  
Tar Water. Mr Smith used to drink this at times.

Rev. Samuel Deane born 1733. died 1814.  
A descendant of Walter Deane of Tacunton  
who left a widow Alice, 4 sons & one daughter.  
Ordained Colleague 1764.

First Age of Massachusetts - up to New Charter 1692.  
"This was a religious age; the clergy governed the country;  
No measure of importance was adopted in which they  
were not consulted; they controlled public opinion &  
the usages of society: every thing, & outook of the religious  
feeling, every communication was expressed in scriptural  
phrases & sy. This was the genuine expression of a spirit  
deeply imbued with religious sensibility; though often  
used to cover hypocrisy & ferre." W. Willis

Under the New Charter, the paramount power was  
retained in the most country, & the authority of the  
clergy was gradually weakened. Episcopalianism  
gained ground under the patronage of government,  
& a Boleman & several clergymen became liberal, and  
were moderate Calvinists. Mr Smith was of the old school.  
Dr Deane was a moderate man - very near a Unitarian

Dr Deane kept a meagre diary from  
1761 to 1814.

1765. Dec 15. "The Board of Singers went into  
the Gallery, 16 in number". Had singing meetings.  
Before this they had seats on the first floor.

66. he gave for Paper for 2 Rooms 40<sup>th</sup>. for a  
new Chaise 180<sup>th</sup> Horse to Dedham 45<sup>th</sup>.

Wey. 16. 17. 6. 1847.  
He preached on Psalmody.

[These prices must be old tenor  
or some of them.]



2497

Rev Samuel Deane's Diary, and  
Notes by William Willis.

1771 Son of Enoch Freeman died. At the funeral  
m. 10. 25 15 pairs of gloves given; part of them women's gloves,  
2 doz Lemons, 4 bottles wine. And under bears of  
The Revolution gave a blow to these customs.

Roofs of Houses - There was a picture of  
the burning of Falmouth, which Mr Deane  
criticised - He gives the roofs of several  
houses, which were wrong in the picture: Some  
had gambrel roofs.

Farming was carried on extensively by Dr Deane  
In 1786 he had 280 bushels potatoes.

1787 First attempt to carry passengers to Boston  
m. 15. 350 & the mail, in a carriage. A two horse waggon.  
It left ~~Portland~~ on Saturday, reached Portsmouth  
on Monday, & reached Portland on Thursday.  
Price of passage 20/. called a "cheap & expeditious"  
way of travelling.

m. 16. 400 Water for Capt. <sup>times</sup> some froze over, required  
some strength to break it. No fires in church.

1787 Second Parish. Rev. Elijah Kellogg began  
to preach to ch. Had been in the army. Graduated  
at D.C. 1785, aged 25. He was very popular. Ordained  
Oct 2. 1788. Rev Edward Payson, colleague 1807. He  
was dismissed 1811. Ministered to a new society  
occasionally. Engaged in missionary exertions.  
Died March 1842 aged 81 years 8 months. A  
man of ardent temperament, & of good abilities.  
He entered into speculation & was unfortunate.

1788 May 1 Spinning Day. More than 100 ladies  
m. 15. 310 named singly, assembled at Mr Deane's house  
A majority were spinners, & gave motion to 60  
wheels. Others prepared the entertainment, &c. brought in  
by themselves. The ladies brought their own flax. The  
result was that 236 7 knotted skeins of cotton & linen  
yarn were presented to Mrs. Deane, all the work of the  
day, except a dozen skeins. Some spun 5 or 6 skeins each  
In the evening, singers attended & performed many  
pieces of Psalmody.

Lombardy Poplars. Mr Deane planted, 1803. Portland  
m. 9. 270 was soon full of them. They were very popular  
for a time.

1809 Mr Nichols ordained colleague.



# Dictionary of the Abnaki Language

by Father Sebastian Rasles or Rile

Published by John Pickering A.S. 1833 in Memoirs  
of A.S. of Art & Sciences. New Series. Vol. I.

The words are placed alphabetically - first the French,  
then the Indian. A very large share is composed  
of verbs & sentences - but few ~~verbs~~ adjectives,  
adverbs, prepositions. - In the first Part, but a little  
follow, and particular. - See Explanations 255p.

I copy a few often I translate the French. The French words  
begin with A. & proceed alphabetically.

A. I cut down or prostrate a tree - Nekashamun.

A l'abri, ambagasisi (sheltered, secure.)

I buy, nefatane

I accouche - n8nitzanni (I bring forth)

I accouche d'un garcon, n8nitzanni 83kin8ssis

I finish, nekisiten

Sour, bitter (acrid). 8ssaghif88at. - sour or, the same.

I admire, ansagherdaminangout; admirable, ansaher meg8t

It is sharp, aigu) Kesighir8.

Wing of a bird. 8rg8hianigon. (see 26)

I love him. - nem8ssantzin

see 259 Air - Sekis8k8. In the heaven, abasse, kisk8é  
In the air, kisk8k8é (see 259) - wind or beyond the sky. see 2

Ais (board) - psikisk8

seaweed, straw, &c. to kindle a fire - p8tenegain, ar.

Allume-la. Ischesé. (kindle or light it)

Amendes - p8gain, nar. (Almond, &

or cedar) - nemandang8dam

Hammer or hook - maghi'kann (or Fishhook,

Amorce or bait. a8ngan (Fish bait - see 2)

Anguille (eel) - nichavyn8 meak sing. & pl.

The gale - 8isi (see 262)

Animals - A8ras8k.

Little animal. 8anbekik8, Sk8éik8. male & female

Boeuf, k888. (from cow probably) S8k; male namb.

Horse, akas8k8, S8k pl. male, nambessem

Goat, norke, S, ak, pl. male, aia be, female ke8var

Wagtail) namb8, S8k, - male namb

Loup cervier, mamb8sem, m8k8m8ak (see 260)

" male, nambessem, m8k8if8le Sk8essem, m8k

Ferocious beast, a8chainedo, d8ak, pl.

Loup marin akik8, k8ak; male nambakik8, f. Sk8a, k8is

Woe - k8ank888, ak, sing & pl.

Kind of lion, p8teneg8, ak, male namb888, f. Sk8essem.

see 259, Hare (leop) 8888, S8ak. sing & pl.

signat - m888 (moose) m888k. male mibe, f. 8888.

Bear - a88888, S8ak. male namb888, fem. 8888

Pekane (Indian). - 888888, m888888, f. 888888

[many and in kik888 - 888888 - Skoué is female, kikou, animal; f. see 264  
Skoues888 in female 256]



243

48.

41

female ♂. male ♂.

302260

68658. - 68659. 68660.

\_\_\_\_\_

257.

subic

Smith

Two milk  
at 10 P.M.

Trishen

ProQuest  
Perkins

*Pekane* - See 9/4p  
*teche'it'ell* - *ikangko*

1863, 263, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 8

*Phetisaurus*  
*tridactylus*

to make it. S. 21

to make, yuk. 5.21  
to make, yak. 5.21

Gift 780 [same word as for widow. see. 264]

tekatewreng

same 262

*halpin*

ins etc. *Q. uabes*

Feb 8. 1894

Desb. Erig. 1. A.

8060 - 8061

metano 3 kan  
masbi 8 kan 8

Handwritten text: *Handwritten text, possibly a signature or name, partially obscured by a large, dark, irregular mark.*

*Artemes rock*

maskeke 124  
maskeke 124

$\frac{264}{\dots}$

same as check 254

new, mangle, le ruffe, 1832  
old, 1832

ssak

crane taregan / 5 April 1888

outdoors. *Santibáñez* ak

*Peucedanum sativum*

*Paridroma* *caerulea*  
*putrida*  
*A. indiana* *fabrice*

of the day. 1890.

Source, Mass.  
 ... ..

press, prensa

nd of Carved arent 98-100

Black

972

to measure the  
bearing of the

There is of birds, without

no name in French

1888, 1889, 1890, 1891, 1892, 1893, 1894, 1895, 1896, 1897, 1898, 1899, 1900, 1901, 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905, 1906, 1907, 1908, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912, 1913, 1914, 1915, 1916, 1917, 1918, 1919, 1920, 1921, 1922, 1923, 1924, 1925, 1926, 1927, 1928, 1929, 1930, 1931, 1932, 1933, 1934, 1935, 1936, 1937, 1938, 1939, 1940, 1941, 1942, 1943, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, 1955, 1956, 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1969, 1970, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991, 1992, 1993, 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997, 1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 25



# 260 Alenagui Language

Domestic animal, mine — nundassm; mitnak.

Anchor, tabapenansokangan.

One year, nektsigaden; 1 year, nissigaden.

3 years, tsigaden; 4 years, i8igaden, te

Wait for the hook, adangan, /su 248

Aposthume (swelling), pemoe or meri.

Make level the way, te, nesesnakekimen.

" " the ground, n8rkehighé.

Tree — ~~alasi~~ alasi. Dry tree in esd, ks alasi

Green tree, areksak8. Bouleau (birch) maskom8si

Cedar, manrandak8. Cedres, seditak manradak8

White birch, sighebimisi — red cedar, ksassagkes8.

Oak — pick beans, anaskamesi — cherry tree, mask8simisi8si.

Maple — ssenais, — epinette rouge, kesih8sk.

Frêne (ash), Angmak8, agadr. — epinette — men8h8k8.

Hêtre (beech) — ats8simisi — off elm, amisi

Merisier, sig8esk — off the <sup>alder</sup> aune, 8 loppi

Walnut, neier, pagannisi — nuts, gubunt, pagin

Pine, k8é, — red pine, messhak8

Apple pine, k8si, — stinking wood, samy8benak8

Pine — aksiremisi — Saperin, p8p8kan8k8

Hollow tree, 8i<sup>c</sup>neskat. — {dried <sup>fire</sup> seditak. /su 202, k8sk,

Rotten tree, a8ssaggis — Suscaux, restib

Forest, aranmakek8, or alasi8k8, kek8jek8,

or place where trees grow — or duk8ak8ikek. keghe.

Plain without trees, laban, k8aai, branches, skaantak, or.

Archer bow, tanbi, Cord of the bow, nanbetann

my bow nedatanbi, Arrow without lead, ar8, var.

Feather arrow, Kank8kar88 — Arrow with a head, pa'k8e, k8ar

Gunbow, nanagtan, var. Ring for finger, sakiv8sch8n

Money, Manni ak (for English)

Army, aig8lin /su 4

My arms, nenesank88aner.

Some by land, neba — baie

Some by water, nemesaga'rra

Enough, tebat

They assemble, naies8am

I am attentive, nekik8tan

Alttrape — kerahigan, nek8ka

Go day — ornuekizagak

I am blind, nenorm8si.

part Autumn, tag8ang8.

Around or about, se88nisi or 8a'kanisi /su 265

other, ketak, other Ketaguk.

B. Baggage — mat88am

I bathe, nedakassami

I sweep the cabin, net8ikek8amen 8i8am.

Bullet for gun, skaronsk8. /su 266 (Hest)



Whale. *Pedébé*, plural *pedebak*.

A bank (bank). *tubapsdi* or.

Bear d. (Burbé) *mitbar*

Barque (small) - *sambapessag*.

Barrier or field, fort, &c. *sakan 8 sanahigan*

On the ground (bas) *ntsisi*. [see 265]

Stocking (bas. chaussé) *kenessn. neghiknessn*.

Barstid. *nar 8 ahan*.

Bate fee - *sugahan*

Staff (baton) *anadebeksn. nar; mystaff nedanbadeksn*

Beautiful (beau). I am b. *n 8 righi. keib. 8 rig8*.

Beauty — *8 righibangan*. [same as goodness, good]

Much (beaucoup) *pesangsi*

many things, *mesaire d 8 r.*

many men, *mesaireok*. see 262

much corn, *mesaire d 8 r. skambnar*. many

Beast *abakas 8*.

either out  
or across.

Ce bias, *unssisi* [see page 260]

Shortly (bientôt) *tebne tebetsi*

It is white — *sambighen. sambiy 8* (animals)

I. Corn (bled d'Inde) *skambon, nar;*

Whole corn, not pounded (pile) *mesik 8 tar*

White corn — — — *sambighen r 8 tar 8 nar; sambemener*

Red corn — *mesik 8 bessiminar; mesik 8 bess 8 ar*

Black corn — *tseghiminar*.

Yellow corn. *8 8 8 unar; tseghiminar*. color of corn

Ear of corn. *mesak 8, k 8 r;*

Corn several colors *k 8 r 8 bininar*.

Old corn — — — *katiniminar*

Little corn. *abann, nar;* [same as head. 261. error]

Great corn — *skig 8 bininar or pik 8 bininar*.

Leaf of corn. *8 arek 8, k 8 r.*

A tuess (tresse) of corn, *neg 8 sambeghans 8 ar*

They are tressed (bessé) *aranbeghans 8 ar.*

Sack of corn — *neg 8 skenar; nis 8 skenar*

I dig the — the to plant, *n 8 aurké.*

Hoe (houe) — *anakehigan* see page 257.

A ditch (fosse) *monangan, nar.* [see page 257]

I plant it — *reda k 8 k 8 r.* [see page 257]

It is tall — *spirré*

Le rehausse — *nenikak 8 righé.*

Le rehaussement, *nechak 8 righigan.*

The stem or stalk — *sif 8 kanungan*

I take away the weeds, *nenaseskenighé.*

It is tender; it is young; it begins to be good, *an 8 r 8 rife.*

It is fit to eat. *mit 8 k 8 r.* [see page 261]



# Abenagui Language

Corn contempt

I gather it — Kasaksonichedin

I dry it in the sun, nesipimine

I roast an ear, nieclstsi apaskbasit. <sup>translating</sup>

Corn, ground, pellé, pesedamson / same 257

Pole ground abimimamar.

Cole (corn taken off) amitog8 ksem

Wood, not dry — Sta<sup>c</sup> k8r, pl. [Quantities, 250. see.]

Boards of cedar — Kankshak

Pile of wood to burn, agasson. / sing — see plural below

Forked wood, shakangan. [see Cross 257, Forks, 252]

Old dead wood negamsak8. [Naganni, old. 265]

Good wood to burn, 8m<sup>g</sup>ak <sup>wood</sup> <sup>pl</sup> / plural: sing above

Bois, forest, — abaisik<sup>g</sup>kek <sup>trees-land</sup> or kekoksik<sup>g</sup>kek. <sup>see 250, 252</sup> <sup>see 250</sup>

I drink — negadad8sseni

Crumky cup tadsseni8 si, ar. / b. 266

Strong Drink, a<sup>c</sup>k8bi. (Occupy <sup>in some dialects</sup> see 250 <sup>see also 3. 354.</sup>)

Boite (box) saubianpinigan.

I am good, wise, nekesaansi. or n8renabakesi. <sup>same 212</sup>

Bonace (alone) — adiben / <sup>or n8riteham</sup> <sup>same 265, 253.</sup>

Bonnet, ang8sk8eson. myb. nedang8sk8.

Bank of the River — the other bank, agammek / see 267  
on this bank, setemek.

Along the bank. am8t8si8i. <sup>same 265.</sup> k8ar rebegsé

on the other bank, not opposite — an88aga nuns8i8i

on the other bank opposite, tetebaga, <sup>same 254</sup> tete8i8i

154. My mouth — nedon. In the mouth 88onék.

With mouth — p8kes8né

great mouth, Kenékanrakak88né

Bouche, Kepanigan

(meat) Boue — asesk8

Couillon (both) of flesh, kesamb

" of fish, namesamb8

" of birds, sipsamb8

Ball, round (both) peteg8ighen / arm — thing, 253. 266

at end, at the end, 8amask88i8i / see 275

Bouteille. Potanie. (from French, n for l.)

Brecelet, Kiuskebi

Branch, pestshak8n. of a tree, / s. 150

The earth shakes nenemkep8de ki.

see 254 Urrin. Pedin (right arm) arenak8i8i

my arm Npedin (left arm) pants8i8i

I am brave, generous, nekiranbair

what makes a noise musck8, ked8it88am



Les fourches (about a wigwag) Skakraganah See No. 254.

Cherunney Ketsumeri, ar. (probably from English: Peatogin)



## Hem qui language

Oak white bears acorn, ~~anaskamen~~ / same 250.

Acorns — anaskamen, nar.

Doe — atie' atiak; arems, oak.

~~Swan~~ skesem | word for female, 248.

Swan. Sigverre' oak | same 249. — but first letter wrong in one.

Heaven (ciel) kezks.

| Pumpkin. Petrouille sa'sade' suk.

| The rind, The source de la citrouille, mikenak8.

They are in flower; Pesksaxadar sa'sadar. | see 258.

[They were raised by these Indians. They were sometimes cooked in the ashes.]

It is clear. (clair) Sassegan. | 256.

Cloche (bell). Sasank8ehigan

Hog. pikem, piksak (from English pigs)

My hat — nevedangan | see below

War. Fight. matank8 aisdin (fight. 259. (army) 250)

How many (combien) Tanni.

Contre (against the wall &amp;c) kikemak

Cock (poek) ehem8, m8ak (hen)

Turkey Cock — nehemé, mak

Coquille (Shell). es. enak.

| raven. Corbeau — nikazes

Horn — asir. — adasir'ra

Powder horn, ahawren.

Body.

my body nhashe; thy body khaghe; his body khaghe; our bodies nhaenani; your bodies, khaghesnam; their bodies, khaghesam.

Head, Metep — top of head, mananskouantop.

Forehead, meskategse — Eye, Pisek8. [see face 262, see eyes 259]

| Eyes. Sounch, Haumannak — nose, Kitam | 261.

See 257. Cheek, mande<sup>249</sup> — my mouth, nedon | 252

See 256. My tooth ripit — tongue, mirar8. | same 259

My chin nk8i — ear, Utasak8. | same 261

Belly, nanigan — my breast, nodd8uke.

My shoulder Nedderemangan — the back, pesksam | cuff + 256

Heart Breangan, — navel, siri

Arm Pedem<sup>see 252</sup> — my hand, neretsi | see 256

Knee, nekede8. — my foot, nesit.

Bone sigbat — my neck, nedabisk8e

I run, nemantsevrax. (same 260 &amp; below)

He is short. taadess8, or laskd88 — inanimat taada'k8ut

Knife (colan) ntse'k8ak8, 98r.

Hollow (or creel) apik8eghan

Hole Crochet — anestamann, or

iro 48, skate8a'k8, k8r. [see face 253. The hole in the ground]

It is, Count (short) taadess8, taak8ess8 | See also 260

Cupboard — meskeke' 149



# Abenaki language.

255

Castles landed at Quebec Oct 13. 1689. Took up his residence in an Abenaki village three leagues from Quebec. Here he made a dictionary of the language. the same which is now printed. In 1691, he says, "I begin to put in the form of a Dictionary the words which I hear".

The Indian sound of ou was made wholly from the throat; Castle in writing it used the figure 8. His work has numerous errors in the orthography of French words.

c. the mark h is one of aspiration - often in the middle of words.

f and v are not used.

l is wanting, r being used instead of it.

c. g. x. y are not used.

s. Vh. ks. h are used instead of the others.

Greek Q and X are used for th + ch. The latter character X is sometimes used for kh.

ri is the simple sound of r not the French nasal ou or figure 8. represents W and U. as used by Eliot and U. as used by Heckewelder. Before a vowel it has the sound of English W. before a consonant it represents a h whistled sound. Heckewelder.

The Abenaki has r where the Massachusetts has re as mirarou. the tongue A. meenan Mass.

Abenaki, I am good, nebrighi. ne is the pronoun. Delaware good wilik, using l for r.

Abenaki, beauty, Brighi & angam

Delaware, same, wilissowagan

Abenaki, five, — careyesk 8; 10, mtara

Delaware same — palenach 10, tellen

Massachusetts flesh, weyau }

Abenaki same ouios } represent the same word.

ss seems to be only as en s, in sound.

Animate plurals end in ak or k.

Inanimate plurals end in at

The French i is e in English. Other French letters sound as in the French language generally.

ne is a demonstrative in sis, as temakoué, a beaver; temakouesis, a small beaver.



# 256. Abnagui Language

- F. I dance - nepemega.** he dances, pe mega.  
**Part** — maba'ke'. — {same, respectatly woman. Sangman'ské  
**I stand up.** nesakhe — {Captain — — — Sangman.  
**Dece, endega, ndanisi** : unpeu endega & dassamék  
**Digue, steps** — arandabangan, nar. | same as 1 adit, but out. <sup>same 265</sup>  
**without (dehors).** peksatsemek.  
**Tomorrow seba.**  
**The land is inundated** — ki nekebé' tré or ketasé  
**half (demi)** ps'kksie  
**my tooth nipit.** his tooth sipit | see 254  
**Behind, (derrière)** asassisi | same 264  
**Behind the cabin (hut)** asassigamigé  
**Behind the mountain,** asassadene | same 264.  
**Below (under)** aramnek — } see 263.. 258  
**under the tree,** aramacksemek }  
**Passus, underpass, &ssktsisi**  
**above, on the top** } of the water, &sskidebé  
 of the mountain, speman'k8k. | see 263  
**Walk two by two** — misssek8  
**Devil** — matsini8esk8 (mats. bad.  
**God, or great spirit.** ketsini8esk8 (ktsi. great.  
**my finger** — neretsi. | same as hand 254. 260.  
**my little finger.** nedaskbanmiretsi  
**my middle finger.** nenangiretsi. [numwing middle 261. 265  
**my thumb** — neghitk8eretsi  
**I sleep** — nekasi  
**my back.** nepeskban | see 254  
**Proit (straight)** passagisi | same 253. see 262.  
**crook (crooked)** peganghigben  
 or crooked or hooked.  
**E Water, nebi.** clear water &assebegat | see 254  
**stinking water** — maskebegat  
**Muddy water,** pipeghebegat  
**Cold water,** tekebi. fresh water. takeli. p. 255  
**warm water,** kesnebette, kissbegat  
**Deep water,** messitemé  
**can de vie** — a'k8bi strong drink, see 252  
**In water** — nebi — {ebi is used in the comp. 27. or it  
 gat. seems sup. or it  
**I cross the river,** nebi kaganan8ghe  
 [I find the river, 259 is same  
**Fish scale** barahoghe  
**Ladder** — arandabangan | see step. above.  
**It lightens** — sa'sanbigbak  
**ccho** — pagadank8e8ecorré  
 p. 250. **Birch bark** mask8é : Thick bark. pk8ahan  
**Bark for canoe** masig8é | see birch 250.  
**I hear nekitam.** he hear, kiktam



Writing — adichigan.

Foam of a river, of a pot, of the mouth, pitté  
That foam pittetté.

Squirrel — mi'kse'ak. | same 249.

Equally. — titebisi | see square 262. | a level 253.

p. 188

Mouth going out of a river } sanke de ttagé } see  
Source or beginning of a river } sangk, pitéttagé } p. 266

I am pregnant, nedaren8kké

Again (encore). mina, amptsi

Where? — tanri? tande kka?

Child (enfant) abansis, sisak. s. & p

Thick (épais) board, kpaghé: anim. kpagheg8

Sword, semangan: Indian sword, esk8gan

Thorn (epine). kandsis, kansiak,

His thorny, sharp — kangeio,

Pins (pin) pins (from the English).

Maple — ssenan8. | p. 250.

maple water (saps) mak8amr

same 257 Pond, lake (étang, lac) pek8asebem, pl. bemar.

Present summer ripen; past summer, ripe né

next summer, nipeghe: during summer, ripen8i

Spark (offic) sissesk8tagérré.

Star (étoile) 8a'tio8ess8.

Hemp (chanvre) se'ttag8. | not same as 262.

Stranger, birbiarenanbé (man, ie, not man)

Co birbiaphainem (woman, not man)

Strait or narrow, tsitsig8ess8. | see 266

narrow path or way tsitsig8andtsessen

Sturgeon kabasse' | same 262

Fr Fan (countail) anbasse8n.

my face — nesiseg8k. | see 264

Hunger — man8ssangan

Family — neg8dang8dbak.

Flour of Indian corn. Skam8nip8khamin

Flour — n8khamen. [see above word.

Flour of corn goulé pesedam8n | same 252

Woman or wife, Phainem, nsk

" or " manondag8ess8. ss8k

midwife — n8tsiket

Window. — tab8angan, nar.

Iron — avenarag8

Fire — sk8tai, sk8tar

Bean (fève, feseole) a'taba'k8é, k8ar.

Gall sisi

Thread, nerve, kik8andi

my daughter, ned8s.

my son, nnemann



# 258 Abnagui language

Flame, it flames, *hesk8ré; sasak8ré*

Flower - *pepsk8asak8ek, ghir* / see 254.

The trees are in blossom, *hanghik*

River - *sip8.* / same 266. *tegoue'* is river in composition. see 268

Wave - *teg8, ak:* great wave *kesanteg8, ak*

below or under At the bottom of the water - *aranmbeg8k* / see 263, 256

" " of the earth, *aranmbek* / see 263, 256

" " of the bag, *aranmb8tek* see "

Fountain, cold water - *tekepighé* / see cold below " water 256

sup 159 252 Forest or place of trees, *aranmake'k8; ábasik8,*

Fort *8a'kanrouzen* / see stakes, next. *kekak8ik8*

The stakes, *puisade, 8a'kanr8zenak8emmar* / see fort

Ditch (fosse) *pskenigan*

Thunder - *pedanghiag8.* / p. 263

a whip - *sasambigan*

It is forked - *niketabak8at* / see forked river 258

Ant - *erig8s. sak.*

Strawberries *meskik8minisak.* / see below.

(A Frenchman, a Benno) *8a'enn8ts* / see 260.

Hay - *8ats8iminar.*

Cold (froid) *pek8amejen*

It is cold there, *tekigamigat* / see 256.

The earth is cold *tekighen* / see cold water.

Cheese - *atsis, sak* (from Eng. cheese. Pickering)

Treehead *meskatég8é* / same 257

## Fruit of Trees

Strawberries, or big as strawberries, *meskik8iminise* / see above

grapes - *8ssaghir8menesak.*

Apples. *8ighen.* singular. / see 262

Plums - *kan8ak8imin*

cherries - *8a'abinin, nar* / white.

gooseberries, *Asebanmsk8eminar*

unclear black fruits, *Pes8rimin, nar*

red fruits - *masimin, nar*

Poirs de terre (Fruits in the ground)

*pen, nak.* white ones. *sipen, nak*

It smokes, *pekedag8.*

Gun (fusil) - *perkbanceli, ar* / see flame above. See 261

Gale (itch) - *meghé*

Boy, (garçon) *8skin8s.*

Ice - *pek8am;* upon the ice *pk8amik*

Whetstone, *kitallangan* / same 261. (large) see 259.

one is large I am tall (young) *mesmeseghir.* he is tall, *messegghir*

I am tall (old) *nak8nak8si.* *Koué* is long. see 261



- graines (seeds) - skaniminar  
 graisse (fat) - perri  
 moon fat or grease, mbspermi  
 Bears grease - abessossipemi  
 grass (fat) Jamfat, nbi'kai ikai'et sikas.  
 It hails - si'kdrai. hailstones, pegban, amak.  
 (big) gros (great) - mesak8at - animato mesak888  
 petit (small) piseg8 (pisegou - gadatin) [see 258.  
 grue (crane). taregan [same 248  
 a ford (great) - to pass a river by fording nebi'kag-  
 or kisipukagan88ghé [see 256  
 War - mattambek8 [see 254.  
 H. Cesse or Hatchet, temahigan  
 Hye. (kaut) Spemek [see Para inc 261. about 265 - 263  
 is a high cabin or hut, spigann8.  
 Herbs - meskik8ar (grass also; + 5th and 261.  
 Place of herbs - meskik8  
 Winter present, pebowoi; past winter pebowé  
 next winter pe'ghé  
 Mann, arenanbé. (Tenape, Delaware  
 man (vir). Seenanbé  
 young man, kiganbé  
 I am ashamed, nedegatsi  
 (shovel & hoe) Hove; beche (shovel). arakehigan [see 258 p. 257  
 Oil, Fat - perri. (see above.  
 Oysters - des coquillages - essak. (shells.  
 my leg ~~mekant~~; hi leg, skant [mekant, hi leg, skant.  
 Garden - kikann, [same as field] bda'ki'kann  
 Eyes - tsiseg8r. singular tsiseg8. [see 258 p. 257  
 I Island - menahar; in the isle menahar-  
 Peninsula (presqu'île) k88an8aann8. [see 265  
 at the end of the presqu'île. Anask8ananonisi.  
 I Rushes (junc) ananonask8, k8r [see 265  
 su 257 Cheek - mansé; my c. nansé; thy c. kansé  
 one day - nek8tkisk8emigat [see 258  
 two days. nissikisk8emigat  
 Day (four) kez8k8. A fine day 8r88a'kame  
 L Lake - peg8aseben. [see 258  
 I am ugly - nematzighi. Ugliness, m888angan  
 Wool - asibipies8r. [same as 8888  
 The air - kez8k8. In the air. pis88kisk8é.  
 Fear. mesebig8an. Tongue (language) mirar8. [see 258  
 (Hare) Sievre, ~~matteges88~~, 88ak. [same 248  
 Fr. large, it is keske. Keskek; broad covering - keskechen. [see 266.  
 wide



260 . Alenatqui Language

Kind of lion - pitaw<sup>8</sup>, r<sup>8</sup>ak. | same 248

Bed - k<sup>8</sup>adi

It is distant, far off. nan<sup>8</sup>ad<sup>8</sup>g<sup>8</sup>hé or nan<sup>8</sup>at

It is long, k<sup>8</sup>onag<sup>8</sup>at. k<sup>8</sup>anis<sup>8</sup>. k<sup>8</sup>oné. | sec 258, 267. <sup>see below.</sup>

It is too long, <sup>too</sup>ssan<sup>8</sup>ni k<sup>8</sup>oné. | same as <sup>too</sup>ssan<sup>8</sup>ni

It is too short, <sup>too</sup>ssan<sup>8</sup>ni <sup>short</sup>taak<sup>8</sup>é, or taak<sup>8</sup>ess<sup>8</sup>. | same 254

(Other) <sup>loup</sup>loutre - k<sup>8</sup>i<sup>8</sup>nig<sup>8</sup>hé. | sec 249. <sup>loup</sup>loup. marin a pit. | same 248.

<sup>loup</sup>loup. cervier - man<sup>8</sup>rsem, m<sup>8</sup>ak. | same 248

Moon. k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. niban<sup>8</sup>k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s.

January, mek<sup>8</sup>a<sup>8</sup>ig<sup>8</sup>é. when it is very cold

February, names - k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when fish are taken

March, nemattan<sup>8</sup>si, k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when much fish is taken

April, ann<sup>8</sup>s<sup>8</sup>k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when fish called harang by F. <sup>(harrings)</sup> ann<sup>8</sup>s<sup>8</sup>ak<sup>8</sup> by Indians are taken

May. n<sup>8</sup>keke<sup>8</sup>igai - k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when corn is planted  
Inens<sup>8</sup>ke<sup>8</sup>ig<sup>8</sup>hé. I cover it

June. nekak<sup>8</sup>igai, k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when corn is hoed

July. Sattai k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when blueberries are ripe <sup>rechaussé</sup>

August, mantse<sup>8</sup>adok<sup>8</sup>k<sup>8</sup>é, k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. | grands jours.

September, m<sup>8</sup>adinai, k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when they get the acorns <sup>grand soleil</sup>

October - asseba<sup>8</sup>ak<sup>8</sup>al<sup>8</sup>s. when "bordages" are "glaces"

November, pek<sup>8</sup>am<sup>8</sup>hani - k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. when holes are made in the ice to kill beavers.

December k<sup>8</sup>oné - k<sup>8</sup>iz<sup>8</sup>s. <sup>long</sup>the moon is long. <sup>season.</sup>

Hand. meret<sup>8</sup>si | see 254, 256

I am the master. neteb<sup>8</sup>ad<sup>8</sup>am.

Disease - ssagan<sup>8</sup>ares<sup>8</sup>angan;

Deat - nemitsesi - tuats n<sup>8</sup>it<sup>8</sup>esi.

merchant, n<sup>8</sup>daup<sup>8</sup>k<sup>8</sup>ramt. { mal, bad, it is: matsighenis,

I walk, nepemoussi. { not well - manda<sup>8</sup>rigien<sup>8</sup>si

marceage (marsh) meg<sup>8</sup>ak<sup>8</sup>r. nek<sup>8</sup>ones<sup>8</sup>kik<sup>8</sup>é

High tide - psan<sup>8</sup>essen; low tide k<sup>8</sup>isekat

marte - pepan<sup>8</sup>ak<sup>8</sup>ess<sup>8</sup> | same 249. <sup>see below.</sup>

robe de martre, panakes<sup>8</sup>esak.

morning, tse<sup>8</sup>k<sup>8</sup>é.

negro - perakamen

I am wicked, nematsen<sup>8</sup>adakesi: he is. mat<sup>8</sup>te

medicine, nebiz<sup>8</sup>r

Water Melon. Eskitam<sup>8</sup>ek: p<sup>8</sup>eskitam<sup>8</sup>ighir

chin. my. thy. his - nk<sup>8</sup>si, kek<sup>8</sup>si, &k<sup>8</sup>si

Sea. Salt Water. S<sup>8</sup>bek<sup>8</sup>: p<sup>8</sup>l<sup>8</sup>S<sup>8</sup>beg<sup>8</sup>k

à la mer - S<sup>8</sup>beg<sup>8</sup>k.

my mother. nig<sup>8</sup>as.



The corn is ripe - kisi nitsigset see 251

The Corns ripen. Skam 8nar nitsigset 8r.

In middle, (milieu) nan 8isi same 265

It is mid-day - pas 8e same 263

In the middle of the river, tsas 8teg 8e. teyout is river see 262

I am in the middle - nele idop itang 8k.

Narrow, 8in i morue, ng 8kamek 8 (cod fish see 262)

mill tag 8ahangan same as mortar & low

(moss) mousse - assakamik 8

N. Vessel (navire) ket 8rak 8.

My nose, nek itan; his nose kitan see 254

Snow - 8asanri : It snows, psan.

Bird's nest, 8asese same as nest see 253

Black. mkaze 8ighen

nuts - pagann, nar. see 1, walnut 250.

name - n 8is 8angan

1. pe 8ek 8. 2 niss. 3 nass. 4 ies. 5 barenesk 8

7 Tambagan, 8 ntsausek, 9 n 8 n 8ri. 10 mtara.

11 ne 8dankao.

New. pirié. 257 de nouveau. 8ski, piri see 259.

Good news. 8ritang 8at.

Cloud - ass 8k 8.

It is night. pise 8e. The night, titebsk 8ikeban.

O. Good odor - 8riman 8at

Bad odor - mat 8inang 8at

Egg - 8angan. nar.

same as night. 252

Bird, sip 8si; sip 8sio. His bill, 8d 8e.

see 248 His wing, 8rg 8ana. His tail 8arani;

His feathers adip 8nak

Nail (ongle) of the hand. mekas.

Ear - met 8ak 8 see 254

Moose. (orignal) m 8s. see 248. Does any of the li...

Bone. Sig 8at. same 252

Bear - a 8ess 8s. same 252

Bread. a 8ann. nak. same as little corn. 251. Query?

Straw - me 8kik 8ar same as straw. 253

Paradise, 8peruki see 259

(Tobacco) 263. Pctun. 8adaman is small petit pi 8sesen

Little (peu). tagassi 8ssi. mesi 8sis, paghi 8sis

Stone - pnapesk 8. kor. whetstone kidadangan see 250

Flint - pesk 8andiapesk 8. see 250

(mortar) La pile - tag 8ahangan; lepilon konasenek 8

Plain without trees, babarsk 8d 8e see 250

(flat) Plat 8aurade. see 250  
Desant (heavy) it is - tekig 8an



262. Alonaqui Language.

Strains — Sgheram

Lead. Skaronesk8

many (pluriers) mesairok. | See 251

Trypan. Apank8esigan

Fish. Names. sak. [Herrings, anms8ak. 260. <sup>P</sup>

Salmon mesk8ameg8; g8ak. | Same below

Trout — Sk8tam. nsk. kamme88.

Sturgeon. Kalassé — Barlue. 8anses8

(Ed) Anguille. Naham8 — Bar. magahaghi

Godfish. Skameg8 — [See 261] Harans. Anms8, ak.

Oyster — Poksé: pl. peksahac.

Pommes de terre. penak. Pommes. tsighenak

Portage — Snigan

Door — Kangan

Powder. Pesai

Lice — kem. kemak. pl.

Prairie, campagne, babarsk8dai <sup>same as prairie 251</sup>

Near — Pesdt. pesdt8i

Print Spring. Sig8an. part Spring sig8ané

Bug — labik8

His square. tetebikeskē. { equal sides or width  
See equally. 257.

Sas (sieve) siadinmangan

Sable — negak8

Sac (bag) men8tē

Sac de chanvre — taghenaiim n8dē

Chanvre (hemp) Taghenank. <sup>See 257 & 258</sup>

Petun — 8damam. (toacco See 251 & 252)

Je peture. n8damo. (I smoke See 253, different)

Sac à petun. pitsip8andi <sup>toacco bag</sup>

Sagamité ntsanbann

I am wise. n8renabakesi <sup>same 257</sup>

Blood --- ba8gakkam

Bloodsucker (sang8ue) pabesk8

Sapin — ps88kanhik8 <sup>See 250</sup>

Salmon. mesk8am ek8, k8ak <sup>No fish</sup>

Grasshopper. Tzanves. sak. <sup>Same 249</sup>

I leap — n8derik dai. leaps arikdas

Saw... psipodangan

It is dry. kespatē. animate kespass8

Salt -- sauran8éic

Serpent. sk8k. pl. sk8gak.

Rattle snake sisik8é

in a winding course. panbebitghisi (a way that is crooked. <sup>p. 26</sup>

a straight way. sasaghisi <sup>See B. 257</sup>



I separate - netzatsibereman

my sister - nitse<sup>c</sup>kesss

I am thirsty - nekadadssemi

Evening, night. <sup>p. 261</sup>hesedé: it is night, pesed<sup>a</sup>bio.

Soldier - - - sssemanganer. <sup>Land 8rang8io.</sup>

Sun - - - kiz8s.

midday - pask8é | <sup>same 261.</sup>

Shoe, French, asenn8ts8akessen | <sup>see Frenchman p. 258.</sup>

Indian shoe, mkessen, nar

<sup>eyebrow</sup> sourceil - - - manmann | <sup>Singular. See 254</sup>

She is barren - - - pt888

Sugar - - - - - s8gar. (from the English.)

(soul-) The "soul" of the chimney. pirata8

Suisse (ecureux). anik8ses | <sup>same 249.</sup>

T Tobacco or Petun - 8damen | <sup>same 261, 262, 253.</sup>

Ternpest - - - - kesant8i

The great land <sup>perhaps Kamuck of Mass. Great land. See 253; great lake? see 256</sup> upon the bank of the sea. <sup>in the sea</sup> ketakam8g8. <sup>See 267</sup>

Earth, land. ki: on land, by land, kik

Upon this land - is<sup>c</sup>kkik

on the ground. meto8i8i | <sup>same 257, 265</sup>

The land upon a river, shore, bank, nesanki<sup>c</sup>ré

Land burnt over - ts8gataik<sup>c</sup> or peneganki<sup>c</sup>ré

Under the earth or land - aranmkik. <sup>See 256</sup>

<sup>p. 25</sup> Head. met8p: do8a man, arenant8ant8p

Head of a moose - m88ant8p.

Head of a stag - - - mar88ant8p |

I shoot with a gun. nepes<sup>c</sup>am | <sup>See 258.</sup>

Thunder. pedang8, ki | <sup>sup. 258</sup>

<sup>Tortoise</sup> Tortue - - - ts8re8e | <sup>(more, terrapin? - same 249.)</sup>

soon - - - - - ts8ne.

<sup>(Semi) lower</sup> Tourne-sol. kis8skammak

<sup>(Semi) lower</sup> Tourte - - - pres: pl. pressak. | <sup>See 249</sup>

all (tout) messisi: nep<sup>c</sup>kanisi

part tout (every when). kisi. papannisi

Transparently - Basisi.

Which is transparent, esanbameg8ek.

Earthquake - k8ig8an.

Trumpet - - - - - bibi8an

Too much. 8sanmi | <sup>same, too, 260.</sup>

Hole - - - - - ts8an8aragat

Hole in the ice to fish. ts8aigan

Trout - sk8tam. pl. sk8tam8k | <sup>See 261</sup>

I kill - nequirke. than k. kequirke.

Englishman. Agri8mannak. (imitation of Englishman <sup>sup. pl.</sup>)

Valley - - - - - memekiné or memekkan8i | <sup>See 265</sup>

The mountain. Spemank8k, or pema<sup>c</sup>den<sup>c</sup> | <sup>high-see 257. - see 256. or 8ssank8k. See 267</sup>

[Arammak. is under. see 256. + above.]



## 264 Abnagui Language.

It blows — keserannusen

It is a good wind — 8repannusen | i.e. it blows good

It is a bad wind matserrannusen  
on that side. 8dekka

Worm. 8eddi. 8ediak. — sk8sis. psk8e <sup>See 249</sup>

Widow widow — sig8it-sig8sk8e | skoué female, see 248. 250

old man — mer8soo.

old (I am old) nemir8seps8e

Vierge — k8ssih8sk8e. | see above. See 256.

Village ... 8daine

Villages of the abnagui — Narankamig8k epitsik

I go to the village neder8se 8denek. | arnanbak <sup>means men. 255</sup>  
(or 8daine)

Nanrant8ak.

Annes8k kantt

Panna8amb8shek

Chessa8akamighé

} at St Francois de Sales  
one or all these.

The men who dwell in these

villages — 8nessasakamigh8ik

dr P. says the first is the name of Worridgewock, & that  
the latter is taken from the Indian name.

On against (vis à vis) tete88i. | same 252

face | Visage — tsisek8. [See Eye. 254, see 255]

Provisions, victuals — mit88angan

Universe — pepam kamighék

Canoe sail — tsibeghigigan

Mast ... tsibeghigikanaksem

Addenda.

Gela (that) — nenante8ait8n

upright (debout). sakt8isi

White — bassighen, or 8anbighen

Particulae.

On the other bank of the river. Aganmi8e. <sup>see 250</sup>  
more & more — ahant8i

beyond } en dè-la — ang8annet <sup>Further bank, (a) annet. p. 252</sup>

on this side } au de-la — ang8annet

mais — ainkki

across (de travers) ans8i8i | See page 237

On one side — An8ai8i

from on the other bank of the river — Arag8ag8ann8ai8i

From the other bank, Aganmi8e | same as above

from On that side, on the other side, arag8i8i

To the right — Arenakai8i: to the left, pantsi8i.

Those who live at the end of the island a8anenaghé

Behind. a8assi8i | same 256

Behind or beyond the mountain a8assadene. | same 256

Behind the island ... a8ainenaghisi



*a little baraghiessi - pakaisi'*

Here i'dari; then e'dari.

By turns — chesokki

tail in length mangasgi - (See middle, below.)

Half in breadth,  $js'k8c'8c'$

along the bank of the river. Kikatsxi:songtsisi

all straight - maansi

not-(negative) mand.":

together — man & c

(Deloia (from/ar). maseci.

In the valley - below - mamekai si / see 263

always — metzinisc

Coolate — metsi8i [error perhaps]

on the ground (en bas) metseri [same 25. 263.]

Quick (vite) — napisi

Down the river, by water or land, Ma'isi | See 266.

Is it not? - nauka?

In a little time - nankaisi

In the middle — nanš'iš'i' / same 261. 256. *see above*

en haut de la rivière, n'a rien. (L'année 26)

The elder, unceants - neganni arenantak

universally — neither

Easily  $\frac{1}{2}$  — not even  
Milan & C.

by night - - Nibane 86

beyond the rapid or fall. panxitsi'si. and  
in 4th instance

us. Pakantsisi

Purely, without mixture - Pang 818c

Purely, without mixture - 1/100  
au dessus de la montagne, par conséquent si

Parke miliceu - pekaganisi

Beaucoup. — *persan* 82 (same p. 25)

across, crosswise - petaghi's

Placcaken a river enters another, sanktai is

Along the bank of the river - *Sax. & tsic'i* <sup>same as 252.</sup> <sub>same as 252.</sub> <sup>same as 252.</sup>

one on one side of the other. — siḥsai 8i

The last - sk Panik

and - tai.

The last = shounen  
and - tai. gakanisi or 8888nisi  
around (around). <sup>(below + 50)</sup>  
1250

around (around) <sup>1250</sup> at the end - Ganask 8 10 of a tree. In <sup>monk</sup>

at the end of a peninsula - Banask, anamni<sup>8</sup> c' - see 259

The earth of the peninsula - K8 san 8, aann 8.

Empity — Sasagai

on this side gedagsi  
gedagsnek | Same 256

en de-a. *Edassamek* | Same 256  
above, (en haut). *Gegebigi* — *Spensada* | See *high* 257  
*Edagegimbi* | See above + 257

above, (on hand) - 80808n + 81' } see above + 257  
all around - 80808n + 81' } see above + 257

all around - 8e8e8n808  
Strait or narrow place of a river - 8e8isa8aghe, 766

a narrow place - 808inazisi

[The end - see above sum, wanaskou..... Anaskou. p. 259.  
su p. 252



266. Abnagui Language.

Outside, exterior — Oskitsisi

Alenakis is from Mapanaehki. that  
 is, Men of the East.  
 Call's into the word Abnaki — it is sometimes  
 written, or perhaps generally Alenagui.  
 more selections

Give to drink, tasssem8di, ar. 1p252

New moon, nang888.

It (the moon) rises — nehis8

It ( " " ) sets — nekis8

Branch of a tree, sedi, sediak

Rapid, or fall of water, pamte'8.

[See 261; tikou, is it same? tagoué below?]

Raguette (snowshoe), angnem, ak.

Raguette de femme, sarnnes, ak.

Rat musqué, ussk8ess8

Rat (grande souris) membranaskanase'888.

[See Mole 24]

Net for fish — rhape

Basket net — aumeketse

Nothing (rien), munda keg8i

Liège en terre, pesanbandé

[I didn't, perhaps, take]

River, sip8, ar. [at end of road, tagoué, see below.]

Le bas de la rivière, na'isi [See 265.]

Le haut de la rivière, naremek [See 264]

Little river — tsitsik8to8ess8 [That is, narrow 1p257]

great river — kesski'teg8 [That is, wide. see 259]

[Tegou, wave 258]

River which enters another — erni'teg8ek.

See 262 River which goes straight, sa'saghi'teg8é

See 262 River which turns — panbebetketeg8é. [Cracks. 253]

Union which forks — niketasteg8é [See forked, 253]

It is deep — tennai

It is rapid — kesits8ann

It is low (basse) — pang8ess8

The water is clear — sanbebegat [See same, 250]

The "étroit" or straight of the river, 8e8isadaghe [Same 265]

The entrance of the river — pitileg8é [See 257]

mouth or going out of a river — sanghedé'teg8é [See 257]

mouth of the river, sortie

Little water in the river — metkat, pank8kat

The river is full — sangabessen

Clobe — mclasse

Round — sangianghen, [See circle 250]

Round (boule) pete8ighen [See 257]

Rose (flower) asckk8hes'8.

Morning Dew, 28ann,

Red (rouge), ink8ighen

Ribbon — sirke (from English silk perhaps.)



5 Nov 263

insured / or MTA 253

[Serout... is alone. - p. 52.265]

Five out. ... is around. see below

Q [again on the other side, 252

besessen

22.

[illegible]

*Chamaetlequa* same p 25

Wh. T. C. on begins same.

or is amblichus (Barbier) - same as Wompi. Mass.

I was likewise present at the ...

mesku. I see red corn

dialect begin misk.. Mosk.. MesC.. Mesh..

*S. agens* w. (p. 262. Maskrat, bagus mask 258)

*Lactaria* 11. *Methylobacterium* 11. *Spirillum* 11.

Excerpted as both sides to leaf in *Prinsep's*, p. 253, 266.

Straight as " " to " Sasaghi... (p. " " )

same as Wunnequo / Mohegans

Great. digging Keski (river) also mesakou.... also keloc. (p. 253. 254)

Sett. (begin tselsi river) also pisegou or piwe gou, or piwe gou - 26. Youke 232.

Bad begin mat... matsichen. 253.

*Shrub 6 ft. tall, white with warts & warts - see 239, 250, 260.*

Dear/wards  
M. T. 257.266

Wiele " Kestke (..p. 1259, 266:

*L. th.* *calit* *legis* *polygonig.*... 253. 261. *altro* *winwe*. circle 253.  
Egg. 261.

... about - ~~was~~ - we we un... 265, 250; - "Wanwan"

middle mi. nanwi... 256. 266. 265

Old = "near 252.265"

$\text{C}_6\text{H}_5$  +  $\text{K}^+\text{O}^- \rightarrow \text{C}_6\text{H}_5\text{O}^- + \text{K}^+$

2124622. \* At village on Ketak river comes from this. - Kesa. 258.

Some "Koun o" see 260. Kennepet maybe Kounabeg.

548. is Tia Koue, 260.254. also laad-shou.



268  
ms. 10  
134  
m. 22-10  
ms. 8  
116  
123

Temperature - from the Meteorological Journal  
of Dr. Holyoke - prepared by Dr. Enoch Hale  
published in the Memoirs of the A. A. S. 1833.  
He lived at Salem.

Mean Temperature of the 43 years - 1786-1828.

1st 7 years, 1786-1792	47.93	1819	50.75
2d 7 years 1793-1799	49.49	1820	48.70
3d 7 years 1800-1806	49.79	1821	48.15
4th 7 years 1807-1813	48.23	1822	49.81
5th 5 years 1814-1818	47.66	1823	47.58
6th 5 years 1819-1823	48.92	1824	49.25
7th 5 years 1824-1828	50.01	1825	50.99
43 "		1826	50.28
		1827	48.46
		1828	51.35

His mean temperature is too high; as he made his first observation at 8 o'clock in the morning, & not in the coldest part of the day. His hours of observation were 8, 12, sunset, 10. The temperature at sunset is very near the same as the average of all.

This Journal does not support the opinion that our climate has gradually become milder. Nor does it appear that the spring months or the spring advances more rapidly than formerly.

The mean Temp. for 6 years 1786-1821 is 49.14, according to the four observations. But this, corrected to the true mean, will be only 47.29. & still farther corrected will be reduced to 46.62. and still more abatements make it 45.5. In the 36 years, 1793 was the warmest, 1812 the coldest. The three warmest successive years were 1793, 94, 95. & the three coldest successive years were 1811, 12, 13. The mean of the former 52.69; of the latter 46.88.

Dr. Holyoke says June 18, 1749, had the greatest heat of any day for 40 years succeeding, or more. Yet the heat of that day seems to have been only 98 of our present thermometers. Dr. Holyoke in 1749 had access to Hauksbee's thermometer. The only one, Dr. Hale says, then known in this part of America. It differed much from Fahrenheit's. It was zero at the temperature of a hot day in London. Its temperature was marked 34, & freezing point 65, but therefore the climates were marked differently.

Average of Winter for 43 years	27.88	Average of 43 years	48.86
do of Spring	46.06	but corrected	is only 47.09
do of Summer	70.06		
do of autumn	57.43		

Hottest days were 99°, 100° and 101° at about noon  
Coldest days were 7°, 10°, 11° & 13° deg. below 0. at 8 P.M.







"The Peril of the Times Displayed," &c

The substance of several sermons preached by  
Rev. Samuel Willard, of Boston. 168 small pages  
Boston, 1700. Text 2 Tim. 4:5.

He says there are godmen among the Episcopal, Presbyterian, Congregational, and Antisacelobaptist denominations in ~~England~~; and some of all of these who have only the form of godliness.

The old puritan nonconformists of New England were famous for religion in its purity & power. Yet, he says, "in our first and best times, there were tares and chaff mixed with the wheat."

There is now, he says, a great decay amongst professors of religion in this land. "Many of the rising generation have a fondness for new things, & are disputants for those things which their fathers left England to avoid. Many stand off from communion because they would not be under discipline. Some church members are intemperate; frequent public houses and keep loose company. Professors are ready to comply with the vain customs of the times."

Increase Mathew wrote a preface to the book dated Nov. 1699. He notices some societies of pious young men in London.

Mr Willard treats of those who have the power of godliness, but deny the power: -

1. Those who reject some of the main articles of religion.
2. Those whose religion consists in mere forms, & they look no further. The object of the Gospel is to promote a religious life.
3. Some are careful in matters of worship, and at the same time lie, steal, oppress, use deceit. "If a man say he loveth God, & hateth his brother he is a liar." 1 John. 4: 20
4. Some pretend to godliness, for a cloak to cover their iniquity.
5. Some defend & encourage the abuse of the things of this life; & use meat, drink, apparel and recreation to excess.
6. Some professors accommodate themselves to men in all their humors.
7. Are easily alienated from the strict serving of God.

Godliness summarily comprehends the aim of the Gospel.

A nonconformist to the licentiousness of the times he lives in, will be reviled.



He alludes to "great Professors, who turn aside to damnable heresies, or immerse themselves in the grossest immoralities."

He says that sins which prove God must be found out, & repented of, in order to avert his judgments. He thinks they can be found out. [Sins & Evils, mess. 4 233.]

Gods Sabbaths are woefully neglected by some professors

Dishonesty in Dealings is much complained of.

Many fallacious tricks are used in commerce.

Many are false to their words & promises.

Many intemperate Church members, who keep loose & bad company.

Much animosity, contention, & bitterness of spirit.

Much slandering & defaming one another

Thorough conversions are scarce & seldom.

Much contempt is thrown upon the gospel ministry.

The loose conversation of professors.

The grievous neglect of family worship, or reading the scriptures, and prayer.

Useful Ignorance prevails - that is, ignorance of God, &c.

It is almost a general complaint of family governors, that their children & servants are not willing to be under their command, or observe good order in the family - that they debauch themselves by night revels & meetings in bad houses, to drink & game.

"These declining times," & similar expressions are used.

"The Well ordered Family, or Relative Duties."

The substance of several Sermons by Benj. Wadsworth A.M. of Boston. 1712 - Duties of Husbands, Wives, Parents, Children, Masters, Servants. very good work for the day, & well adapted to the people. 121 pages.

He gives nearly the same directions to all servants and all masters - hardly uses the word slave. He would have all servants treated alike, & all well treated.



m. 2. 299 "Meditations on the Sanctification of the Lords Day, and on the Judgments which attend the profanation of it." with meditations for Summer and Winter By Increase Mather D.D. 1712 Pages 71 and 57 - 122, besides prefaces. Jer. 17. 27. Psal. 147. 17.

There was then a diversity of opinion as to the commencement of the Sabbath. He was for Saturday evening, yet he says the generality of reformed churches begin their Sabbath in the morning. He says the Sabbath was better observed in Britain than any other nation; and in New England with greater strictness than in most parts of England, though not in so holy a manner as it should be.

C. 9. 376 The Synod of Dort would not permit marriages on the Sabbath.

Some Popish Writers & Luthuans allow of Sabbath Breaking and of other immoralities.

Mather says there are some plantations where there is no public worship, <sup>no part</sup> no observance of the Sabbath; and there are some "among ourselves" who do not attend public worship. Some professors profane the Sabbath by unsuitable discourse. Some people attend meeting in the morning only and not P. 221.

When people in the country are together between the public meetings, is not their discourse about their farms, crops, horses, cows, & the prices of things? In Boston there is much transgression.

"Oh degenerating New England! what wilt thou come to ere long?" He attributes the fire in Boston to God's judgment, to punish Sabbath profanation.

Children should not play in the house, nor in the streets. yet he says there is the flaming wickedness of children playing in the streets on the Sabbath. And there is much rudeness & profaneness among the children of the North Congregation in the meeting house.

About 40 years ago two wicked youths in this Congregation began to strike one another in sermon time. They confessed their sin before the congregation, and a sermon was preached.

He says, there are wicked men in Boston, who would be glad to have the town on fire, that they might pilfer and steal.

Some young men in Boston meet on Sabbath evenings & repeat the sermons of the day, & to pray and sing psalms. Others meet to be vain & merry. Professors often go abroad on Sunday evening, or many do.



It seems that the winter of 1711-12 was very severe. He says, the Celestial Constellations have great influence in the seasons. "The Pleiades or Seven Stars have a sweet influence on the earth," he refers to Job 38. 31. Orion with its 39 stars causes storms and frosts.

South Winds commonly bring heat or warmth.  
North Winds bring Cold.

He says they had wood or coal or other materials for fuel. He calls this (1711.12) an exceedingly cold winter.

New England was called a cold country. He thought Charity was cold among many.

The Summer. Text: Sol. Song. 2. 11. Preached April 6. 1712

In 1682, this church set apart a Day to pray for the poor Protestants in France, who were persecuted, or "30 years since, this very year."

Ms. 2. 248 "There is nothing constant in this world but inconstancy" — there is a perpetual changing and vicissitude.

Election Sermon. "The Divine Original and Dignity of Government Asserted".

Preached before Governor, &c. May 31. 1716 by Eleazer Pemberton, pastor of a church in Boston.

Very long — 106 pages. Text Psalms 82, 6. 7.

"There is nothing more unequal than equality." "Levelism is an open defiance of God" — (He considers levelists as no government men.)

Rulers are God's vicegerents, & stand in God's place. Their power is derived from God, but not immediately. It is derived mediately according to various constitutions of states. The design of rulers, in the or of the institution of government, is the Public Good.

Rulers should be just, wise, compassionate, diligent, &c. Rulers are best with stronger temptations than others.

The Queen, he says, is a refuge to the distressed at home and abroad; the powerful assertor of the civil and sacred liberties of her own people, & the common rights of mankind. Our nations at home rest securely under the shadow, and in these provinces we are cherished with the benign influences of her light, favor & conduct. He wishes she may long reign, &c.

Referring to our own rulers, he says, "to speak evil of Dignities and to murmur are evils of a black character" in the bible. yet these evils are very common. We should be obedient.



He says "this is the most stormy & dark day that ever passed over this province". owing to the perplexities of a long and bloody war. The land is languishing under sin and judgment. [Lk. 11. 4. 233.]

There are many gross sins among us; not only pride, malice, hatred, unbelief, &c. but open abominations, & gross immoralities.

The land is deluged with intemperance & drunkenness. This sin has spread far and wide. There are complaints through our towns, that the assemblies of the people, for civil transactions, military exercises, nay for religion on lecture days, end in intemperate drinking and debauchery.

There are cries of injustice & dishonesty in our dealings. There are flesh-eating evils.

The province is in danger by frauds and forgeries upon our Bills of Public Credit. He suggests the expediency of "some more terrible punishment," than those now provided by law. He says "Conscience & Religion will not forbid the last and heaviest punishment" (that is, death.)

Schools & the ministry should be supported. He says ministers are forced to spend too much time in the field, to get their bread, & to neglect their studies.

He wishes to have "a due trial of the candidates for the ministry established by your authority." He wants the pulpits more guarded. He wants Church Government strengthened; a more close union between churches. Indeed he calls openly for a Consociation of Churches, as proposed by a venerable synod. Thinks it would be well to convene a Synod, to remedy the evils our churches labor under.



Our Saviour's Legacy of Peace. John 14. 27.

A Discourse on the Two Witnesses. Rev. 11. 3.

by Rev. John Higginson, Salem. 185 pages. 1686.

Also Helps to Self Examination. 20 pages in same volume

He addresses his Preface to the church & people of God at Salem, Guilford & Saybrook. — His father, he says, came over in 1629, when he was a child of 13 years. His father died the next year, & left his mother with 8 children he being the eldest, in a wilderness, with a very small estate. Yet many were liberal to them, & they were as well provided for as if he had died in England — He mentions that Mr. Wintthrop, Mr. Nowel, Mr. Drummer, Magistrates and the ministers, Mr. Cotton, Mr. Wilson & Mr. Hooker took special care of him, that he might be continued in his learning & bred up unto the ministry. Some of them were at considerable charge for his education, long before there was any college.

Others took the like care of his brothers, who was bred up unto the ministry in the same way.

In 1636, in the time of the Pequot war, he was sent by these gentlemen ministers, & employed in the work of the ministry at Saybrook fort, where he continued "above four years". And after he had been sometime a schoolmaster at Hartford, where he enjoyed the ministry of Mr. Hooker and Mr. Stone, & their private helpfulness, he was settled in the ministry at Guilford as an assistant to Mr. Whitfield where he continued 16 years, after which, in 1669, he was settled at Salem, and "here I have now continued almost 27 years". This Preface is dated Aug. 6. 1686. Says he is 70 years of age.

He notices several false Opinions, false Peaces.

- As 1. Those that pretend to immediate revelations.
2. 3. Peace without faith & repentance, Christ having done all for us.
4. The way of Quakerism, or the inner light. "This is the sink or bottom of all other errors of the times".

The witnesses. He speaks of the 1260 years, but does not undertake to tell when they begin or end. Does not know. Says we have had liberty & peace of the Gospel in N.E. for above 50 years. — "have had liberty to be as good as we would be". He evidently has some fear that this liberty may not continue. (Mass. was then under the King's Gov.?) Warns against popish notions — warns all to bear witness to the truth. He says that the government would be unfavorable to the church here — yet exhorted all to pray for the new rulers, to obey their commands, in things not contrary to the word of God. In matters of religion we must obey God rather than man. Refers to Daniel & others. Not the Prophecies but the Precepts of Scripture are our rule of action.

"Self Examination", written, he says, in 1652. for himself.



2-6  
M. 2. 255  
" 2. 257  
" 2. 249.

"Debt's Discharge" or consideration  
on the Text, "Owe no man anything, but to love  
one another." Designed to persuade all men  
to get and keep out of debt. Rom. 13. 8.

By C. Morton - in England. London 1684.

He says debts are lawful; and even expedient  
or necessary in some cases: -

As 1. in Merchandizing.

2. Necessaries of life, when absolutely needed.

3. In small bargains, when we cannot change money.

4. In great bargains & settling estates.

Borrowing & lending are lawful - common interest.

He refers in above to allowable or good owing.

Evil Owing, he goes against - when the  
debtors are careless, or treacherous, or  
proud, or presumptuous.

He goes against Suretyship, but not all.

It was not then unusual for men in England  
to lose their estates, by being surety for others. He  
says they often become society when they were creditors.

Lenders, he says, are often accessory to the  
mischiefs that follow - much lending is only  
villainy covered over with courtesy.

Some contract debts with design to break  
and contround, or run away.

He condemns those who have entered estates,  
and on this ground refuse to pay their father's debts.  
They ought to pay their debts in many cases, though  
not obliged to by law. He talks about the "Court  
of Conscience", very properly.

M. 2. 249. Corporations, he says, have no souls.

Things which waste Estates -

Pride, expensiveness in habits, houses, entertainments, coaches,  
wagering and gaming.

Idleness, oft the effect of pride

Gleeting, Drunkenness, Lechery

"Abstain from Tipling and Idle company keeping".

Running hazards; Over-trading.

60 pages. Written by one who belonged to the established  
Church. (The name of the author is Charles Morton also)

Warner alludes to debtors, who "when they never mean to pay,  
to avoid the law."

To some friends make all away.

At Rome the insolvent debtor was put to death or sold in foreign slavery.  
Creditors might dissect his body, & thus satiate their rage. Gibbon.

Simpson tells 1. 123. says the law seems to suppose that deficiency  
of payment is the crime of a debtor, but the truth is that the creditor  
always shares the act & often more than shares the guilt & is improper  
to punish.

[Cont. 2. 16. 372]



4 The Gaming Humor, considered and reprov'd.  
by the same Charles Morton - so said with a pen, not in print,  
London. 1684. 52 pages. In same book with preceding.  
[Com. q. 286. vol. 2. 270. vol. 11. 195]

This pernicious vice, the Gaming Humor, he  
defines - "An inordinate affection after gain or sport  
by play, lot, or wager." Other passions are concerned  
as hatred, grief, fear, anger, envy, indignation  
triumph, shame, revenge, discontent, vexation, &c.

Sport & gain are the ends of gaming.  
When sport alone is sought, it is play.  
When gain is sought, it is gaming.

1 Play is exercising the body or mind or both - the  
mind in chess, draughts, &c; the body in leaping,  
running, &c. the mixture in shooting, bowls,  
nine pins, &c.

Bull-baiting, Bear baiting, Cock-matches, &c.  
he calls unchristian and unnatural cruelty.  
Also sword playing, racing, &c with hazard of life or health.

2 The Lot - The sacred lot as in the choice of all affairs, &c. These  
are not to be meddled with but by special warrant.  
[Com. q. 286. vol. 11. 195  
vol. 14. 23]

The civil lot may be allowed in some cases, but not in  
trivial matters - must be accompanied by invocation  
of God.

The lusus lot, for sport or gain in play is simple  
or mixed. It is simple in dice, cross & pile,  
drawing cuts, knuckle bone, &c. Mixed when  
some art is added to chance, as in cards & tables.

The simple lot requires almost no exercise of body or  
mind - & is accounted the vilest and most  
pernicious gaming.

The mixed lot is not so much blamed as the other but is  
rejected by most sober people, who will not allow  
a lusus lot, & that so sacred a thing should be  
sporting with.

Some say there is no such sacredness in a lot, and  
that no special providence is appealed to.  
The opposers say that sacredness cannot be  
separated from the lot - that it is an oath, a kind  
of prayer. The writer says, the nature of the lot  
respects the special presence of God, whether the  
men are thinking of him or not. The lusus lot is  
evil in itself.

He says, those that fear God do not use lot-sports.  
He refers to laws canonical, civil & municipal.  
these lot sports. Mr Gataker advocated the lawfulness  
of the lusus lot, but the writer quotes many others who  
wrote ~~some~~ against the pure lot & some against the mixed  
lot. [Sandwichians went against Lot Sports. vol. 14. 23.]

[Man is a gambling animal. Each a poor, civilized, & savage, it is its disposition  
to aim at the craving necessity. This nature is special, upon chance. 3.  
L. in a. review 1807, p. 353. on man, 15. 360]



## The Gaming Humor - continued

McGatater says some men spend night & day in ~~pleasuring~~ "especially at the usual solemnity of our Saviour's nativity, carrying themselves (p. 238) in a lewd and dissolute manner," so that they seem to be worshippers of Bacchus.

They would not play at these ~~lot~~ plays himself

- 3 Wager. Bets annexed to gaming commonly, are to be altogether avoided. - Common wagers may not be absolutely unlawful, provided they are not about a sinful matter. - Most all become sinful.

Lotteries. are little better than unlawful Games. They are used says Mr. C. mostly to help ease spendthrifts or beggarly bankrupts. They are composed of fallacy & deceit for private gain.

It seems that Magistrates sometimes granted licenses for Lotteries (1684 & before) and they were abused to the people's damage. Silly people are dazzled and cheated. He that keeps the lottery is the gainer.

Cifline (Raffling?) is another lot & wager game. It is when a thing is bought with a common stock and then exposed for the lot to decide who shall have it.

Playing for money is never lawful.

God every where in scripture assigns profit as the product & fruit of labor.

No man can play for gain without sin.

"Whosoever is void of faith is sin"

Gaming makes a man hard hearted. . . he cares not for the poor - he cares not for our own "country laborers, their great pains for a poor maintenance, their sorry cottages, mean habits, penuriless purses, and hard fare."

Gamblers commonly have other expensive vices.

Gaming swallows all & is never satisfied.

Whoring & drunkenness may have their fill, but Gaming never.

Charles & Queen, gamblers. Misc. g. 60.

Used Playing

"With snott quadrangular & round form,

Ensuing mind repeats clubs typical of strife.

And grader, the emblem of continually graver." Cowper's Task. 3. 10.

The indolent (those who are above useful employment in civilized life) res. it as gaming as a relief from indolence. Moved by the same cause & motive, the savage falls to gaming as a favorite amusement. He is less in ventions & labor, he becomes indolent & noisy in play. He takes more time at his excursions. But savages differ from civilized men, and these amusements in peace, not in war. (p. 238)



Election Sermon by Rev John Rogers  
of Ipswich, May 29. 1706. + Knight May 29. 1706.

He insists much on Obedience to rulers - and  
quotes Paul's words; - "submit to every ordinance  
of man," &c. "Whosoever resisteth the Authority," &c.

He praises the Queen, as in duty bound.

Refers to Reforming Societies in England.

He thinks the people of New England have too generally  
left the First Love of their fathers, yet God is among them  
in mercy as well as judgment. There is "a Religious  
Magistracy, a zealous Ministry, and the body of the  
people may in the judgment of charity be reckoned  
True Christians."

God's Mercies - "the health, plenty & quiet  
of this last year" (1705); "freedom from epidemical  
diseases, pinching necessities and outrage of  
barbarous enemies" - "continuance of civil  
and religious liberties," &c. "Our church state is  
the same as at first."

Yet he complains of the ~~weakness~~ of government  
being loosened & men being left to their own counsels  
and ways; men are inclined to vanity & wickedness.  
He calls upon Magistrates to restrain, suppress  
and punish transgressors.

Education of youth, he sothers much Desire,  
but is generally liberal on college education that  
they more particularly refer to.

He exhorts them to choose Councillors who  
"fear God and honor the Queen," & will be true  
to the best interests of the people - exhorts the represen-  
tatives not to lay unnecessary burdens on the people.

He praises the Governor (it was Jos. Dudley)  
and speaks of the successful management of public  
affairs, particularly respecting the war.

Election Sermon by Rev. Saml Cheever.  
of Marblehead. May 28. 1712. Psalm 22, 27, 28.  
God's Sovereign Government among the Nations.

He mentions "all that pride in the Land; so many  
oaths & imprecations; British Drunkenness;  
breaches of the 7th Commandment; Profanity and  
neglect of the worship of God; sensuality, worldliness;  
the rules of sobriety, temperance & justice violated.  
The Judgments of last year by sea & land, & by fire  
Boston. The continuance of the rage of the enemies."



Rev. Solomon Stoddards Sermon on  
"the Inexcusableness of neglecting the worship  
of God under a pretence of being in an  
unconverted Condition".

Preached at Northampton Dec. 17. 1707.

Imprimatur. J. Dudley.

Preface. Reformations are generally imperfect.  
Luther did immense good, yet fell into the corrupt  
opinion of consubstantiation

The Reformers of England went beyond Luther  
yet left many things undone

Those who planted New England carried the work  
of reformation still further, yet failed in several  
things, especially, in two points; in not accepting  
non-scantolous persons into their communion;  
in not acknowledging a public government  
in the Church.

He thinks we ought to depart from the ways of our  
fathers in these things. "We may see cause  
to alter some practices of our fathers, without des-  
pising them, without apostacy".

The design of his Discourse is altho one practice  
of our fathers.

Sermon. Unsanctified men should attend  
the duties of Prayer, hearing the Word; it is  
lawful for them to Preach; they may be  
baptised, and may be admitted to the  
Lords Supper. He dwells at length upon  
their admission to the Lords Supper.

Ordination Sermon Ep. 283. 290.

Sermon of Solomon Stoddard A.M.

Preached at Swampfield (Sanduland)

January 1. 1717-18, being the day of gathering  
the Church, & of the ordination of the Rev.  
Joseph Willard, as pastor.

Title - "The presence of Christ with the  
ministers of the Gospel."

Text - "I am with you alway, even to  
the end of the world." Mat. 28. 20. [Same Text, p. 290

Sermon of Solomon Stoddard, A.M. at Ordination  
of Mr. Thomas Greney at Brookfield (Gatherings of Smiths Church,  
Oct. 16. 1717. Matthew 13. "Ye are the Salt of the earth." He professes to  
be a ~~disciplined~~ or minister not for common Christians - that  
ministers are to preserve the people from corruption. People are  
prone to grow corrupt in doctrine and practice - by formality & vice.  
ministers are to preserve them by instructing them in principles, by solemn  
warnings, by suitable care & discipline, by good Government by good example.  
"God is a severe punisher of sinners." "They that eat salt will be salted." He  
also says, "I am with you alway, even to the end of the world." "I am with you alway, even to the end of the world."



MS. 4. 402

"An Examination of the Power of the Fraternity" — by Solomon Stoddard. Bound in the same book with the last Sermon on preceding page.

He begins by noticing the imperfect reforms in religion, the attachment to old ways, &c. as on preceding page. He dislikes the strong attachment to the old platform of 1648, and endeavors to show that some of its positions are not founded in scripture.

The platform says:—"The Brethren have power of judgment in matters of censure and power for admitting members."

This principle, he says, is popular, but he endeavors to show "that the government of the Church is given unto the elders & that the Fraternity have no power of binding or loosing."

Mr Stoddard says, the brethren have power to choose their own officers, to appoint where their meeting house shall be set; but spiritual power of governing the church, by admitting members, censuring offenders, & taking off censures, belong entirely to the elders.

His reasoning is rather popish.

The Elders are the rulers in the church and they must be obeyed & submitted to; every member of the church must be subject to their government. He argues from the Jewish church, from the priests and Levites, who were judges in spiritual cases.

He says — "The Community are not fit to judge and rule in the Church." "The Community are not men of understanding." "A crafty man may lead a score of them by the nose; they are incapable to see into an abstruse thing." He mentions the "ungovernable spirit of the multitude" and says they cried crucify him, crucify him. He draws arguments from Ezekiel C. He endeavors to explain away Matthew 18. 17. "Tell it to the church," &c. and other texts of the New Testament.

He says there is no occasion for that controversy, whether the votes of the fraternity in a council are of equal authority with the votes of the elders.

[Rev Increase Mather had similar notions. MS. 4. 96]



"The Defects of Preachers reproved,"  
in a Sermon preached at Northampton  
May 19. 1723, by Solomon Stoddard.

Printed at Newhondon, by T. Green. 1724

The Preface, is by Salmon Treat  
and dated at Preston, Jan. 28. 1723-4.

Sermon - Mat. 23. 2. 3.

"Errors in religion have been generally  
the offspring of great scholars."

There is in this land a great deal of good  
preaching, and a great want of good  
preaching.

- 1 It is not good preaching, to teach that men  
are frequently ignorant of the time of their conversion.
- 2 It is not good preaching, to teach that hum-  
iliation is not necessary before faith.
- 3 It is not good preaching when men do not  
preach much about the danger of damnation.
- 4 It is not good preaching to give a wrong  
account of justifying faith.
- 5 It is not good preaching to give false signs  
of Godliness.
- 6 It is not good preaching to teach men to  
build their faith about the divine authority  
of the scriptures upon probable signs.
- 7 It is not good preaching, to preach for such  
liberties as God does not allow.
- 8 It is not good preaching, to preach for such  
ceremonies in worship as God does not allow.  
Those who multiply ceremonies commonly  
content themselves with the form.

15. 247. Question. "Is the late practice of some  
ministers in reading their sermons, com-  
mendable?"

Answer. It may be tolerable when men's  
memories become imperfect by age, but ordinarily  
is not to be allowed.

- 1 It was not the manner of prophets or apostles.  
It was ordered in England in days of Edward VI that  
ministers should read printed homilies in public  
but then not one in ten was able to make sermons.  
But it has been the manner of worthy men both  
here & elsewhere to deliver their sermons without  
their notes. [They had notes, it seems]



# Reading Sermons - continued.

- 2 The reading of sermons is a dull weed of Preaching. When delivered without notes, the looks and gesture of the minister is a great means to command attention. Sermons read are not so profitable as others.

Sermon at the Ordination of Rev. Stephen Williams, as pastor of a church in Springfield Oct 17. 1716 - by William Williams, A.M. of Hatfield - Mat. 9. 38.

Funeral Sermon, from Psalms 103. 15. 16 occasioned by the death of Isaac Addington, Esq. who died March 19. 1714-15. by Benj. Wadsworth, A.M.

Funeral Sermon from 11 Cor. 4. 7 occasioned by the death of Rev. Ebenezer Pemberton, who died Feb. 13. 1716-17. By Joseph Sewall, A.M.

Election Sermon at Hartford May 9. 1723. by Rev Eleazar Williams of Mansfield Micah VI. 2.

He notices some provoking sins  
Increase of profaneness; in oppression, Injustice, Uncleanness, Chambering, Wantonness; woful Intemperance a great & general sin; Sabbath breaking, neglect of public worship, and great irreverence in the house of God.

Ingratitude, Carelessness, Worldliness, Weariness of the Gospel Institutions, Disregard of the Judgments of God, a levelling spirit and despisers of Government, spirit of contention, murmuring & complaining against civil rulers

These things bring Judgments - of late, Frosts, Mildews, Droughts, Floods, Great Rains; Death of Wm Pitkin & others - Confusions and Disorders.

He pleads for the School of the prophets & for inferior Schools.



Election Sermon at Hartford  
May 14, 1741 - by Solomon Williams  
A.M. of Lebanon.

Extravagance & Intemperance  
are the great & growing vices of the Colony.

Election Sermon at Boston May 27,  
1719, by Wm Williams, A.M. of Hatfield.

Judges 2. 2. About Declining in Religion.

man. 4. 235] "Our Declensions are too visible to be  
denied".

- 1 Men seek to be rich - are worldly minded.
- 2 Intemperance. Some have sunk their  
health, credit & estate, brought their families to want.  
Much strong drink imported; much made here.  
There is a great resort to public houses.  
The Innkeeper is thronged with company,  
by day & by night; men come from work and  
go to the tavern; dismissed from trainings they  
go to the tavern; coming from lectures, they  
often go to the tavern.
- 3 Wrong, injustice & oppression are common.  
There is injustice in Bills of Credit - they depre-  
ciate, and men prey upon one another.
- 4 Disrespect to rulers & superiors, and  
murmuring against them. He uses the  
old arguments for obedience.
- 5 Quarrelling & unquietness.
- 6 Secret & family prayer neglected; and  
public worship neglected. Great number,  
unbaptised.  
Idleness, Pride, Luxury, &c.

Election Sermon at Hartford by Rev. Sam<sup>d</sup>. Whitman 1714.  
See Miscel. No 1. 5. 84.

Election Sermon at Hartford by Rev. G. Salterstall 1617.  
See Miscel No 1. 8. 2 & 83.

Election Sermon at Hartford by Rev. Edward Dorr. 1765  
on Church & State. See Miscel No 5. 47.



Thanksgiving Sermon, at Brookline  
Mass. Nov. 8. 1722 from Psalm 116. 12.  
by James Allin, Pastor there.

Mercies of the year.

- 1 Continuance of the Gospel.
- 2 Sickness raged last year - is at an end, Smallpox.
- 3 Summer past not so fruitful as some, owing to drought. Some fruits shortened. There is no lack of bread. Too much rain in 1721, by which latter harvest was diminished. Too much dry weather this year, but latter harvest pretty good.
- 4 Successes against Eastern enemies. War is one of the greatest calamities. Seacoast has been guarded from pirates in a great measure. Merchandize, Husbandry & Fishery have been blessed.
- 5 Continuance of Civil privileges. We have a King of uncommon prudence, lenity & goodness a nursing father to Gods Israel. A wise and pious prince. We are to praise God for him, for our Governor &c.
- 6 Our personal blessings.

Sermon to the Pirates, July 10. 1726.

by Benjamin Coleman. Heb. I. 31.

The Pirates were Wm Fly, Capt. Samuel Cole, Henry Greenwill, George Condict. Fly not present at the Sermon. Condict was reprieved.

Execution, July 12. 1726. Fly remained obdurate - jumped into the Cart with a rosegay in his hand, and bowed to the spectators - Ministers of Boston visited them, discoursed & prayed with them, and preached to them. Cole & Greenwill were penitent - Cole in his confession mentioned Drinking, & Swearing as his early sins - Sabbath breaking not noticed.

The 3 dead bodies were carried to a small island about 2 leagues from town, where the body of Fly was hung up in Irons, as a spectacle and the other two were buried there.

3 Sermons "On the Government and Improvement of Mirth" by Benjamin Coleman, Boston, 1707. - See Cou. 9. 295

Sermon after the death of Capt Thomas Hart of Farmington, by Rev S Whitman, New London 1727. Miscel. 2. 39.

Sermon against Enthusiasm by Rev. Benj. Doolittle of Northfield; printed 1743 - Mass 3. p. 3.



286 Earthquake - Night of Oct. 29-30. 1729.

Dr. Mather's remarks on it. [Mass. No. 3. p. 3. all sec. ch. 2. 43]

The air was calm, and sky fair. About 1/4 hour before 11 at night, there was in Boston a horrid rumbling, passing from one end of the town to the other, like the noise of many coaches together, driving rapidly on the paved stones. It was attended by an awful Trembling of the earth, which did heave & shake so as to rock houses, and cause small things to fall here & there, within and without doors. This first shock which was the most violent was followed by others - at least four or five, the last between 5 & 6 in the morning. It extended scores of miles into the country. It was accompanied by flames & lights in the atmosphere. Vessels on the coast shivered.

It produced much concern & some consternation. In the morning, the pastors of the Old North Church directed the bells to be rung, that such of the people as might assemble as chose. The pastors of the New [North] assembled with them, & those from other parts of the town. The spacious house was crowded with people. Prayers & supplications were made. About 4 P.M. People assembled in meeting houses in the other part of the town, & pastors & people continued until 8. The Gov. directed the keeping of Thursday Nov. 2, the day of the usual Lecture, as a day of supplications in the churches of Boston.

One minister (Dr. Mather) made a speech or sermon in the morning meeting (which continued until 2 P.M.) thinking that was a time to make good impression. This speech was deemed for the press and is published, with the Remarks on the Earthquake.

Dr M. says there was an Earthquake in England in 1580, which awakened the government to call upon all subjects in the kingdom to be fervent in prayer that the wrath of God, betokened by the earthquake might be averted.

His Text was Micah VI. 9.

The voice of the Lord in the Earthquake was heard upon the voice of the Lord in the heavens "a few he refers to coruscations in the heavens" a few months ago - to Thunder storms & Thunder claps - to a hurricane that tore up trees & killed some. (This was Sept 16. See Prince. Mass. No. 3. p. 3. 4. 5.)

He called for Reformation, Repentance.

He remarked that none were asleep. He thought sleeping was common at other times. He says sleeping in the assembly of Zion is "a very Ecclesiastical Miscearrage in the country."

He calls up their sins - Intemperance & growing upon us; Use hastily much increased; Dishonesty Excesses and Vanities in Apparel; Debauched Laborers, Sabbath Profanation, Sabbath Evening prostituted to bad purposes.



Dr. Mather's Speech continued.

Sabbath Evening, he did not consider holy time, but it should not be used for ungodly vanities and lewdnesses. The complaint was that more sin was committed on Sabbath evening among us, than in any other evening of the week. He asks the young people where they were a last night, and how the earthquake found them. (The earthquake was Sabbath evening.)

Family Religion - it is abating among our brethren beyond sea [Dissenters of England]. Is it not abating in New England? 12 sermons had been lately preached in Boston at lectures on Family Religion - many prayerless householders in Boston, he supposed. He would have them call their "domesticks" together and pray with them.

He refers to their "foolish Factions".

The Rulers of Boston, he thinks, have been remiss in suppressing disorders & punishing wickedness.

Blasphemous language, or as he calls it, the "language of fiends" is often heard in our streets.

He refers to Wicked Houses, meaning Brothels.

"The epidemical decay of real & vital piety" he mentions.

It was an awakening, a rousing speech.

Appendix, written Saturday Nov. 4.

The Earthquake reached as far N. & S. as we have heard, and in other directions. Rather more formidable northward - the roar louder & longer. Stone walls are thrown down, mighty rocks upset or sunk some way into the earth. Houses & chimneys injured. We have slight shocks almost every night.

He notices the preceding Earthquakes in N.E. viz

1. June 2. 1638 - (see Prince's account. Mass. No 3. p. 3.
2. Oct 29. 1653. Mr Peter Bulkley, pastor of Concord, wrote an account of it in Latin poetry, which Mather gives with a translation. Probably a small shock.
3. 1658, a considerable shock. Nothing remarkable recorded of it.
4. Jan. 26 & 28. 1662-3. Some houses rocked like a cradle. 6 or 7 shocks in 2 or 3 days.
5. June 16. 1705. Small one in Mass; and in Conn. June 22 Dr. Increase Mather preached a sermon.

[This Dr. Mather also preached & wrote in 1727, was Rev. Cotton M.]

[Account of Earthquakes, by Paul Dudley. Miscellaneous No. 2. 50  
 Notices of Earthquakes 1638, 1658, 1662-3 by M. Cotton. Miscel No 3. 242  
 Rev. Mr. Prince's sermons on this Earthquake & two Mass. 3: 3. 4. 5  
 Rev. John Barnard's sermon published on do. " 3: 3.  
 As to that of 1638, see Cotton's Newbury. p. 26.]



288. The Earthquake. 1727. Thunder &  
Sermon by Rev James Allin of Brooklyn at  
a special Fast Nov 1 1727. 2<sup>d</sup> Edition 1727.  
Text Isaiah 29. 6.

He embraces with the Earthquake the Dreadful  
Thunders of the last summer, of which the effects  
were sorrowful; and alludes to the Stormy Wind.

He says Thunder & Earthquake are the dreadful  
visitations of God: he admits that "there are very  
probably natural causes of Thunder & Lightning"  
yet he thinks the great Design of God in them is to  
make us fear Him. He shows the natural  
causes of Thunder & Lightning, in some degree, but  
says "God is the cause of this cause", and directs  
the lightning where to strike.

The Great Wind of Sept. 16 threw down trees, over-  
turned buildings, blasted fruits, & brought down tempests.

The Summer of 1727 was very hot, and  
and the destructive effects of Thunder were  
more than ever known before in one or many years.  
Some hurt was done by almost every thunder  
storm; trees were rent & split in pieces,  
sometimes houses were struck, several barns  
were burnt, some full of grain; sometimes cattle  
were killed: yet only one person was killed  
though some were wounded.

He calls them "days & nights of terror"  
which they experienced in the Thunder storms. He  
refers to a terrible Thunder storm in July  
when there was a roaring over head for an hour  
& flashes of blue lightning. Struck a house in Brookline.

He mentions the Amazing Lightnings of the  
night of Aug. 1, when there was hardly an intermission  
for several hours of dismal flashes of lightning,  
and the smallest objects were visible as at noon day.  
It was attended with "some thunder" - not much.

April 10. A dwelling house struck at Hampton, N.H.

May 12. A man killed in the street at Wallingford, Conn.

June 13. House at Ipswich struck: child hurt, 3 cows killed.  
Cow killed at Newtown. Tree shivered.

July 2. Reading meeting house much injured. A man in it wounded.

July 5. At Brooklyn, house struck; ox killed, several trees split.

July 5. Several trees split at Newtown.

July 5. At Roxbury, well pole shivered; bucket hoop partly melted.

July 5. At Dorchester, several creatures killed.

July 12. In Boston, North Windmill struck; Miller's son struck down.

July at Deerfield - Ox & 2 Cows killed; many trees split.

August. Middlebury. Several trees split.

Durham - a barn burnt

Springfield; several houses & persons struck; creatures  
killed, he thinks, and trees split.

Andover - barn burnt - barn fired at Woburn

Providence & other places, hurt done.

Earthquakes are produced by agency of 2<sup>d</sup> cause, but  
they are all in the hand of God.



# Earthquake of 1727

289

Mr Allen's Sermon - continued.

He notices some of the Earthquakes in Europe, West Indies, China, &c

The Earthquake of Oct 29, was more severe than any preceding one in New England yet it did but little harm. It happened about 10½ O'clock

Our houses shook as if they were falling to pieces, attended with a great noise which lasted about a minute & took its course northward. There were slighter shocks that night & some afterwards. It has been heard at Newbury every day since, over 3 weeks

Some thought their houses were all on fire, and hastid to escape; some had terrors of the last day and thought of the last Trumpet, & of the appearance of Christ. Others expected to be crushed by their falling houses, or to be swallowed up by the earth. Our souls were in agony; our faces pale; our lips quivered; our speech faltered, and our knees smote together.

God's visits by Thunder & Earthquake are evidences of his anger. His anger is out against us. — We are all faulty; all have done wickedly. — no rank or degree can be acquitted. Ministers & rulers are faulty.

*Mass. 4. 233.* Sabbath is much neglected, & many are out late Saturday evening. Public worship is neglected on Lord's days and Lecture days through the land. Sabbath Evenings are spent in visits, vain company, &c. by many. Lord's Supper neglected. Pride, Oppression, Profane Swearing, Drunkenness, Adultery, &c. are crying sins.

Thunder & Earthquake are loud calls to Repentance.

Fast on account of the earthquake, Dec. 21. Misc. 1. 117

## Measels.

Rev. John Barnard, two Sermons "in the time of the Measels" in Rev. C. Mather's Church, Nov. 29. 1713.

[Mass. 4. 3. p. 2. Misc. 10. 13~



Ordination of Mr John Owen,  
at Groton, Conn Nov. 22 1727 -  
Sermon by Eliphalet Williams, M.A.  
Mat. 28 20 So I am with you always, &c.

He admits that God is with all good christians;  
but with faithful ministers, he thinks, in an especial  
manner, because they need his presence most.  
[Same text, 280p.]

Funeral Sermon preached at the  
Lecture in Boston, after the funeral of  
Gov. Joseph Dudley, who died April 2. 1720  
in 78 years - by Benj. Coleman M.A.  
Text. Heb. Et. 22.

He praises Gov. Dudley very much - his integrity,  
his goodness, his piety, &c. He had read &  
studied the bible, & could teach the most  
knowing among us in it. "He was always  
a father to us ministers," honoured us, defended  
us, entertained us with religious & learned discourse,  
&c. "He merited our reverence, and we sat at his feet,  
and hung upon his lips." "These walls are  
witnesses, and this assembly affords abundant  
witnesses, of the visible humility & devotion  
with which he worshipped among us."

He was in principle a Calvinist. He preferred  
the way of worship in our churches. He said  
he loved ceremony in the government but not  
in the church. I think he esteemed from his heart  
the religion & manners, education & literature, of his  
country, and its modesty, sobriety & virtue.

He had strong faith & trust in God in the afflictions  
of his life. He worshipped God solemnly in his house;  
carefully instructed his servants, and prayed  
over his children with fervency (He had three  
children from his son Paul Dudley.) He loved  
the college. He was honored by Dissenters and  
Churchmen in England. He was temperate,  
diligent, frugal, & disdained the finery of the  
town. He died gradually, broken by chronic  
and acute distempers.

His wife survived - had lived with him over 50 years.

He left 5 sons - no allusion to daughters.

Boston Newsletter says he was born Sept 23. 1647  
after his father was 70 years old. He died April 2. 1720.  
and was buried April 8



Funeral Sermon. Oct 31. 1725.  
after the death of Mr. Thomas Symmes,  
Pastor of the Church at Bradford.

By John Brown, A. M. of Haverhill.  
With a long account of him; Extracts from his  
Diary & writings, &c. Sermon 31 pages. Post 70p.

He had not the means to educate any son.  
No minister on 100<sup>l</sup> salary could educate a son  
and support his family, without other income, as  
Province bills are, (in 1725.)

He prayed and fasted much - in private.  
He mentions confessing his "Original sins"  
and his "actual sins," to God.

In public feasts, he abstained from food entirely  
"from evening to evening."

In his secret fasting, he worshipped in the lowest  
postures, oftentimes with prostration of the knee. In  
family prayer he sometimes knelt.

Psalm Singing, he delighted in - sang psalms  
in his family morning & evening. He did much  
for Psalmody among his people; introduced new  
tunes, preached & printed in the cause of singing -  
caused the rules of singing to be taught among his people.

Reading the line, in singing, he thought ought -  
to be laid aside; as it interrupted the melody & sense;  
and the original reason for it, which was for the  
help of those who could not read, or for want of  
plenty of Psalm books, had now ceased. He  
sang in his family without reading the line, &  
was about to set up a lecture to sing in public  
in this manner.

He knew how to converse with the sick, both  
saints & sinners.

He loved the Pulpit. His exercises in the  
Pulpit, were Prayer: Reciting a chapter  
in the Bible, Singing three times every  
Sabbath & Fast day, (and three times each day of the week)  
Preaching in which he had bright thoughts and  
an extraordinary delivery.

Catechism. He catechized the children all over  
town, and the young men in the summer season  
in the congregation; and explained the answers.

His sermons, he suited to the various turns of  
Providence; adapting them to sickness, drought  
scarcity, remarkable occurrences in the war,  
as the overthrow of Norridgewock, the fight at Pig-  
wacket; the death of good men. Several of his discourses  
were printed. In the death of the French King, he preached  
from Prov. 11. 10. "When the wicked perish there is shouting?"



# Funeral Sermon - after Death of Rev. Thomas Symmes, 1725 - continued

He valued the Platform of 1648, but wished to amend it. He did not suspend, restore, or dismiss without a vote of the church, though an assertor of the power of the Elders.

Sleeping at Meeting especially laying down the head to sleep, in time of worship, was noted by the church to be offensive, and in communion it was to be reproofed.

He tried to discipline the children of the church according to the synod of 1662. He was striving to form a (or) association of the neighboring churches, but the project failed.

Once a fortnight he attended a private meeting of sober Christians where he used to pray, read or preach.

Once a month he preached a public lecture for some time. Gave it up. Once a month after this, he carried on a church fast in preparation for the sacrament. Had occasional Fasts in public, & assisted in other towns.

Preached at a young men's meeting once a quarter or oftener.

was careful to visit the sick at all times.

Used to go to each house in the town to visit them and to know their state & instruct them.

His church consisted at his decease of about 250, and the town contained only about 120 families. He admitted 89 to the sacrament in 1720.

He died Oct. 6, 1725, and was buried Oct. 8. in 48th year. He was born Feb. 1, 1677.

£ 50 Funeral Charges paid by the people, & engaged by them (before the funeral apparently) - and the people "made plentiful & very handsome provision for the refreshment of the mourners and other friends and strangers, the evening after his funeral, by their funeral presents?"

They continued his salary 3 months after his death, & had raised it a year or two before to 140 £, on Province Bills.

He was born 1678, son of Rev. Zechariah S. of same place, He. 1700, minister at Dorchester 1702-1708. At Bradford 1708 to 1725.

Funeral Sermon after Death of Caleb Symmes, Esq. 1742 by Rev. Wm. Williams of Weston. - See class. No 3, p. 2.



Sermon at the Funeral of  
 Mr. John Williams, of Dearfield  
 who died June 12. 1729, in his 65th year.  
 By Isaac Chauncy, M.A. Pastor of Hadley.  
 Text Ezekiel 3. 26. Sermon 32 pages.

He loved the house of God. He frequented those lectures  
 that were 7, 13, and 18 miles from him. He made  
 religion his business, & was frequent at his devotions.

He visited the Sick, when sent for, & when not sent for,  
 and would "walk the circuit" almost every day  
 when others were sick.

He read much - thirsted after knowledge - espec-  
 ally knowledge of the Scriptures.

He had the spirit & gifts of prayer, & could accom-  
 modate his expressions to any emergent occasion.  
 Prayer seemed to be his element.

He preached on the Lord's Day, & on week days.  
 His custom was to preach a lecture once a month  
 and a sermon Friday before the sacrament -  
 and frequently a sermon to elderly, or to young people.  
 He did not encumber himself with secular cares.

- 1 He was public spirited
- 2 He was valiant & courageous
- 3 He was patient under affliction. He was heard  
 to murmur or repine
- 4 He was grateful to benefactors - those who had  
 been liberal to his wants. There was a public  
 collection at Hartford for him.
- 5 He was hospitable - entertained many; invited  
 persons of other towns to refresh & repose them-  
 selves under his roof.
- 6 He was Charitable to the poor himself and stirred  
 up others to make contributions
- 7 His carriage was obliging, affable to all
- 8 He had a modest opinion of himself.
- 9 He was temperate in eating & drinking. He  
 often left entertainments before others had  
 done; and sometimes denied himself that  
 "lawful liberty of refreshing himself [with drink]  
 after preaching." He would not countenance  
 the love of strong drink.
- 10 He was just in his dealings.
- 11 He was careful to perform relative duties
- 12 He was much weaned from the world. He might  
 have bettered his interest by leaving D. but would not.  
 He left it with his people to give what salary they  
 pleased.

[Obituary Notice of Rev W. in News Letter. Mass. No 3. page 1.  
 Sermon by Thos. Foxcroft on same occasion. - 3. p. 1



# Herbert's Poems, and his "The Country Parson". London 1824

George Herbert was born April 3. 1593 - was  
educated at Cambridge: Bachelors Arts 1611.  
He loved God - loved music. Master of Arts 1615  
For a time he liked court life; but changed, and  
resolved to be a clergyman. He was made  
prebend of Layton Church, July 15. 1626, or rather  
of Layton Ecclesia. - called Divine Herbert by some.

sup. 299. 309. In a letter, a year or two before 1626, he says  
"the iniquity of the late times has made clergymen  
nearly valued, and the sacred name of priest  
contemptible." [What does he mean?

p. 309  
see below He says "The blessings in the scriptures are  
never given to the rich, but to the poor. I never  
find, blessed be the rich, blessed be the noble"

He married & became pastor of Bemerton near  
Salisbury, 1630. He wore a sword & silk clothes  
until this time - now put on canonicals.

He appeared at prayers at his chapel twice every  
day, at 10 and 4 - besides his prayers at home.  
Composed hymns & anthems, which he set and sung  
to his lute & viol.

p. 309 He said men need not expect a reform in  
the manners of the laity, until the clergy would  
live unblameably; he referred to the surfeiting of the  
higher clergy, and other faults.

In his Church Militant he has:-  
"Religion stands on tiptoe in our land,  
Ready to pass to the American strand."

The Vice Chancellor at first refused to have these  
lines printed, but afterwards consented.

He died about 1634 or 1635. one account says  
Edition of 1844 says he died buried March 3. 1632. [1632-33.]

see above "For gold & grace did never yet agree,  
Refigion always sides with poverty."

His Church Militant.

From Herbert's Country Parson. 1632

"Country people live sadly, & therefore are  
offended with any one who by hard usage increases  
their labor." f. 148

"Country people do much esteem their word."

C. 261 "Drinking is the most popular vice." f. 149

"Sins make all men equal, (high & low)  
Whom they find together."

"Luxury is a very visible sin & the parson avoids all kinds thereof, especially  
that of drinking, because it is the most popular vice."  
The people will not receive him in the pulpit whom they cannot trust in conver-  
sation.



Herbert's County Parson (1632.)

295

When Praying, he cannot endure, talking sleeping, gazing, leaning, half-kneeling. E. 156

The Gentry & nobility sometimes make it a piece of state to come in at mid-prayers. E. 157

m. 18  
240 The county parson preaches earnestly, and with his eye marks the auditors. He makes use of the judgments of God, especially late ones, and those near his parish. Sometimes he tells them stories, and sayings of others, for men remember them. E. 158

"County people are thick & heavy, & hard to raise to a point of zeal & fervency, & need a mountain of fire to kindle them." E. 159

p. 338  
u. 2207  
15310 "The parson exceeds not an hour in preaching, because all ages have thought that a competency." E. 162

[He but does not allude to any notes in preaching.]

His parson reads "divine service" twice on the Sabbath, & preaches in the morning and catechises in the afternoon. E. 163

p. 306  
m. 16  
153 The unmarried parson that keeps house hath no woman in his house; cooking is done by men servants, & his linen is washed abroad. If he "sojourns" [boards out] he never talks with any woman alone, but in the audience of others, & that seldom. His peculiar temptations, are spiritual pride & impurity of heart. He has other temptations E. 165. 166

If married his temptations are covetousness, love of pleasure, or ease, &c.

p. 298. 296.  
299.  
2973 The parson's wife, if he has one, "cures and heals all wounds & sores with her own hands; which skill she brought with her, or he takes care she shall learn of some religious neighbor." E. 168

[Nothing said of his using medicines.] E. 168

His servants are all religious. He teaches those to read that cannot read. They are questioned about sermons, &c. Requires & warns them to pray. E. 169

His furniture is plain; his fare is plain. He has mutton, beef and veal, the rest comes from his garden or orchard or barn, or backside. E. 170

He sometimes takes the poor to his table & carves for them. He gives much in charity. E. 175

He teaches his servants religion, truth, diligence & neatness.

Pious thoughts... written or painted on the wall of the room, especially the Bible. He teaches the ignorant to "quote" at meals. He refers to religion. E. 176



## Herberts County Parson - 1632

Church - is well plastered; windows glazed; floor paved; seats whole, firm & uniform; the pulpit, desk, communion table and font all in order. The church is swept clean, and at great festivals strewed and stuck with boughs and perfumed. Proper texts of scripture are every where painted [on the walls]. A communion cloth of fine linen, and a seemly carpet of costly stuff or cloth - a chalice and cover, and a stoop or flagon, and a bason for alms or offerings. Books that are prescribed. The poor man's box, to receive the charity of well minded people. He wishes to keep the middle way between superstition & slovenliness. F. 180.

His communion cloth & carpet were kept in a strong & decent chest, [with the books, &c. perhaps.]

The churchwardens were sometimes frightened with the greatness of nobility & gentry who come to church but the parson instructs them not to be so. F. 157

[Singing is not noticed in the performances of the Sabbath. Reading, preaching & catechising only are noticed. No allusion to singing or any music in church or out. No reference to any singing with his prayers at home. [yes see below.]

The pastor - "shows more to his children" but "more terror than love to his servants." F. 171

He visits persons or families - sometimes on Sundays: and upon afternoons in the week-days. Adapts his discourse to the persons. "He first blesses the house" he enters. F. 181

45. 298. If he finds some trying "to cure poor people," he supplies them with receipts, & instructs them farther in that skill, shewing them how acceptable such works are to God, & wishing them ever to do the same with their own hands, and not to put them over to servants." F. 182.

[Physicians, it is evident, were not known in country parishes. The parson, his wife, and others were physicians of the poor.

He exhorts people "not to do unnecessary servile work on Sundays" or in time of divine service, on other holy days, except in seasons of seedtime & harvest. He reproves those ill employed or idle, both plain countrymen & those of high quality. F. 182. 183

4. 294 He questions people about morning & evening prayers on their knees, reading scripture, catechising, I. 184 "singing of psalms at their work & on holidays"

[This is Psalm singing but not in the church (not metrical Psalms)

by a table set out, & used as medical skill in curing the sick. 1785. 1787



Herleuths County Parson. 1632.

Visits.

The Parson in his visits sometimes, hears the children read, & encourages the servants to learn to read; He enters the poorest cottages, though small & loathsome, "His access to the poor is more comfortable than to the rich." He urges people to make Confession; an ancient and pious ordinance, he says. F. 184.

He is a comforter to the sick, the distressed, the afflicted. He calls the holy sacrament "a sovereign medicine to all sin sick souls" "what strength and joy & peace it administers against all temptations?" F. 185. 186.

He blesses those he meets on a journey, and talks with those he overtakes, to edification. At the inn, he says grace at meat, and at going to bed gives the host notice that he will have prayers in the hall; and the same in the morning. F. 187. 188.

When he comes to a house of kindred, & remains for a time, he examines their disorders in apparel, Diet, too open a lechery, reading vain books, swearing, idleness, &c; whether daily prayers, grace, reading of scriptures & other good books, are practiced; how holidays & fasting days are kept. He exhorts the lord, lady, mistress & maids privately in regard to their deficiencies. F. 188.

He procures an armor or horse, good, when the country requires it. F. 190.

He is respectful to his bishop & to the fathers of the church; keeps good correspondence with the neighboring pastors, aiding them when he can. Welcomes ministers to his house, however poor. When calamities happen in a neighboring parish, he gives liberally and incites his people to give. F. 191. 192.

He punishes sin & vice by reproof, or by withdrawing his courtesy; and in some cases, he is careful to see condign punishment inflicted. F. 193.

"Country people are drawn or led by sense more than by faith; by present rewards and punishments more than by future." F. 194.

He Catechises much - prefers the ordinary Church Catechism. He exacts of all the doctrine of the catechism; of the younger, the very words, of the older the substance. The former he catechises publicly, the latter privately. He requires all to be present at catechising, parents & children. - men may sleep or wander in sermons & prayers, but cannot when questions are asked. F. 195. 196.

Baptism. He baptizes in white & requires the presence of all; and does this on Sundays or great days usually. He admits no vain or idler names, but such as are usual or accustomed. Crosseth the child; instructeth the godfathers & godmothers. He but says "Baptism is a blessing, that the world hath not the like." (Gives no account of the manner of baptism). F. 199.

p 340  
M. 2. 232  
Com. 9. 306.



Communion. He has the best elements, not cheap or coarse or ill-tasted. He catechizes and exhorts preparatory to the Communion; on the Sunday of the Communion, & on the Sunday or Sundays previous. He would have children & youth partake "as soon as they can distinguish sacramental from common bread, knowing the institution & the difference". F. 200

He administers the communion reverently to those who are reverent. "At Communion, the parson is not only to receive God, but to break and administer him".

The feast indeed requires sitting, because it is a feast; but man's unpreparedness asks kneeling. "He that kneels confesseth himself an unworthy guest, and differs from other feasters; but he that sits or lies puts up to an apostle". F. 201

The parson celebrates the communion, if not once a month, at least 5 or 6 times in a year - as at Easter, Christmas, Whitsuntide, afore & after Harvest, and the beginning of Lent. The Church wardens are to present all who do not receive thrice a year. F. 202

The Country Parson is a Pastor, a Lawyer and a Physician. He endures not to have any of his flock go to law; wishes them to resort to him as judge. He has read some Law Treatises, (Dalton's Justice of the Peace & the Abridgements of the Statutes, & has conversed with legal men; when a controversy is brought before him, he sends for three or four of the ablest of the parish to hear the cause with him; & makes them first give their opinion. F. 202, 203

Some obscure cases, & some of great consequence he refuses to decide; lets them go to law & lawyers. F. 203

p. 195  
96.  
Con. g.  
p. 204  
"He is the Physician to any of his flock that are sick, or at least his wife." If neither he nor wife have skill to cure, he resorts to some neighbor physician, and entertains him for the cure of his parish" F. 204

"Any scholar may attain such a measure of Physic, as may be of much use." "This is done by seeing one anatomy, reading one book of Physic, having one herbal by him". And let Fernelius be the physic author, especially his "Method of Physic" F. 204

"The parson should know what herbs may be used instead of drugs of the same nature, and to make the garden the shop. Homebred medicines are more easy for the parson's purse & more familiar for all men's bodies". When the apothecary uses Rhubarb for loosing, and bole armena for binding, the parson with Camack or white roses for the first; and plantain, Shepherd's Purse & Knot grass, & with better success, for the other. F. 205  
"for the other" should follow & at an ass.



Herberts Country Parson.

As a Physician - continued.

Spices, he condemns for Vanities; esteeming no spice com-able to the herbs, rosemary, thyme, savory, mint, & to the seeds, fennel & caraway. F. 206

p. 295 For Salves, his wife seeks not the city but the garden & fields, before all outlandish gums. F. 206

Surely Hyssop, valerian, cherry (a plant) addis tongue, yarrow melilot & St Johns wort, made into a salve; and elder, camomile, mallows comfrey and smallegg, made into a poultice, have done great and rare cures. In curing, the parson & his family "use to premise prayer" for this is to cure like a parson. I. 206

He does not go beyond his own parish usually; Does not encroach on the professions of others.

[It is evident, that Country parishes had no physicians, when Herbert wrote. 1632.]

The parson argues with papists and schismatics, in a kind and courteous manner. F. 207

p. 308 Servants. "Men usually think that servants for their money are as other things they buy; even as a piece of wood, which they may cut hack or throw into the fire, and, so they pay them their wages all is well". They give them unwholesome provisions, or too little, sometimes are covetous. F. 212

"Country people are full of these petty injustices [as wearing a neighbors shade instead of buying one] being cunning to make use of another, & spare themselves". F. 212

Conq. 429 Eating. "He that eats more than his health will bear is a glutton; he that eats more than his estate will bear is a prodigal; he that eats offensively to the company is scandalous & uncharitable". The same may be said of drinks - he that is not fit to pray or work after dinner is a glutton. F. 213

The country parson is generally sick; he meets continually with sin and misery - God dishonored & man afflicted. But he sometimes is pleasant, and mingles mirth in his conversation. I. 210

sub. 294, m. 2, 244 "General Ignorance is cast upon the profession" the parson knows. & much more will he be despised if he observes their rules; but not perhaps in his own parish. His holy & unblameable life carries no reversion with it there, & his courteous behavior. F. 217

"He that will be respected must respect." } F. 217  
He that is despised does no good by instruction.

The Church wardens take care of the order and discipline of the parish, or it is their duty to do this. The Canons are their rule. F. 219

see above "He that will be respected, must respect" (this said of the parson men will not be instructed by one whom they despise, Country people are full of petty injustices, being cunning to make use of another, & spare themselves.)



## Herbert's Country Parson.

m. 18  
236. Idleness. He esteems the great & national sin  
of this land to be Idleness. When men have nothing to do  
they fall to drink, steal, whore, scoff, revile, gamble.  
Man in Paradise had a calling; and every man now  
should have. <sup>in his poetry, he has</sup> "O England! full of sin but most  
full of sloth!"

All gentlemen are to know the use of arms;  
"as the husbandman labors for them, they must fight for  
and defend him".

They may go to court "as the eminent place of  
good and ill." — all should have a calling; none should  
be idle, but all busied. Herbert points out duties & then, men for all.  
F. 238. &c

"Old Customs, the parson loves, if they be good  
and harmless; and the rather because country  
people are addicted to them!" F. 242

These 4. 238. "He loves procession", because bounds are preserved,  
and the blessing of God is asked for the fruits of the field. He  
requires all to be present at the perambulation. F. 242

"Blessing the people", he thinks belongs to the  
priest, and should be used more than it is. F. 244

[George Herbert was a very amiable, devoted  
man. Though adhering to some fooleries in the  
church, he was a sincere christian, and a friend  
of man. He was not a puritan, but he wrote  
much as some of them did, and had similar views  
of many parts of religion. — He adhered to things  
as they were in church & state, though he was conscious  
of the worthlessness of many who ruled in church  
and state. He was pure minded — "divine" as  
some call him, but he would not have made a  
great reformer. He reformed many things in his  
little parish, notably, and had a desire to do much  
more. He belonged to the gentry, and was born  
in the castle of Montgomery in Wales.

His Poems are called "The Temple".

His "Country Parson" is an ideal one such  
as he wished they might be. No such existed.

[Cont. m. 18. 236

Swift's Parson. <sup>when he was changed from a yeoman to a parson</sup> in Baucis & Philemon, 1708

"talks & tilts & lues" — "smoked his pipe & read the news"

"knew how to preach a lot of sermons"; "damped in pufance & text."

u. 2. 242. "At christenings well could act his part"

m. 18. "and had the service all by heart."

"Wished women might have children fast"

And thought who sow had furrowed last."

Repined against dissenters, and stood up for right-divine.

See for instance, parable of the fig tree. She was ill at ease after he was parson.

Swift was dean of St. Patrick's, Dublin 1713, & for life. Blyden had a living in Meath diocese.







On the 7th Commandment - he thinks it not convenient to be too circumstantial; he says some, especially popish casuists, speak of these things so minutely, and with such a fitting accuracy, that they stuprate the eyes and fancies of their readers; rather teach vice than condemn it, and instruct the ignorant to sin, rather than lead others to repentance. So some wickednesses it is better not to reprove them to name.

Mus. 2. 245. The Torments of Hell, he dwells upon; and he says to the sinner; "When thou shalt have been in hell under most acute & insufferable <sup>torments</sup> millions of years, thy account will be as great as ever, and an eternity of torments remains to be paid by thee".

"The damned in hell shall forever find themselves burnt with a double fire, viz. a material fire, and an intellectual fire". "And when they have lain burning in this fire all ages that are to come can sum up, millions of thousands and thousands of millions, yet still it is but the beginning of their sorrows." (He is equal to Jonathan Edwards on this subject.)

He says - "you may call it (hell) a sea of molten brimstone set all on fire, continually spewing out sooty dark flames, wherein endless multitudes of sinful wretches must lie tumbling to all eternity".

Salvation: "There must be great struggling and labor, with earnest contendings, if ever you intend to be saved." Sermon 24

More of England. Protestant, says the devil: -

M. 2. 254. "I suppose the bodies of devils may be not only warm but singeingly hot, as it was in him that took one of the lambeth's red hairs by the hand, and so scorched her that she bore the mark to her dying day."

M. 2. 245. Hell. Bp. Taylor: "a flood of brimstone to eternal ages" to his hell.

Hell. Bp. Hall mentions "a scorching trial in flames little inferior to those of hell". - viz. "Bath of yclead".

Hell. Henry p. 6. says the wicked are "plunged into all the agonies of irreparable fire, and everlasting despair. Their misery is as to be borne without intermission or mitigation the yet hopeless & eternal ages."

Hell. Milton seems to have believed in the material fire of hell where stilling; torturing, without end. (Hope never comes, but, with ever burning sulphur, and ever fed.)

Things in England. See next page. My impression

The poverty, vice & profligacy of London exceed beliefs male & female, young & old. Such filthiness and such a plenty of vermin! And all sorts of crimes & all sorts of cruelty and brutality are exulted there. Abundance of suffering from poverty & vice. Punishments not capital? are transportation for a number of years, or for life - and imprisonment for days, months, or years. People have no voice in choosing ministers, &c. in established church. Dissenters are excluded from the Universities. Shooting Game is not allowed to any person on Sunday or Christmas day.



Things in England -  
from the Weekly Dispatch, an independent London  
newspaper - Nov. & Dec. 1850. published since 1801. each  
number has 16 pages. The editor is a free thinker.  
Price 6d each. Stamp is 1 penny. Deaths and  
marriages not in

The Vices & Crimes of England, especially of  
London, are astounding

The Freedom of London costs 5£. This freedom  
seems necessary in order to keep a shop

Nothing is obtained without large sums of money.

Names are changed by applying to the Queen; and  
this costs 50 or 60£.

Carpets & Doormats may not be shaken in the  
streets after 8 o'clock in the morning.

A license to marry must be obtained from  
the bishop, and costs from 2 to 3 guineas.

Omnibusses in London carry a person for 3d.  
It used to be 6d.

The average Rent of land in England, Scotland & Ireland  
is about ~~15~~ per acre, including grass & arable land.  
- or a little short of 15. (15.)

The average produce of land, excluding market  
gardens, but including poor arable & grass land,  
is not quite 4£ per acre.

356 Members in the House of Commons are officers  
in the army or navy, or their connexions

63 Lords and 103 Honorables, &c. are sent into  
the house of commons, - all brothers, sons or  
near relations of Peers.

313,000 electors choose 42 members

687,000 electors choose 614 members

1,000,000

656.

Great Britain & Ireland have about 30 million  
inhabitants, of whom about 1 million  
are voters.

Two millions of money are spent at every  
general election.

Dissenters. The Dispatch says they are <sup>not</sup> up to the in-  
principles - have not independence & consistency,  
- will part with their principles or opinions, to gain  
the good will of the government or established church.  
It includes all, but may aim more especially at  
the Methodists. He says the state religion has nothing  
to fear from them, and spiritual independence  
nothing to hope. They join the church of E. in the outcry  
against Popery.

The editor says the queen is "at the head of a  
established church, to which three fourths of her people  
do not belong". In these <sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub>ths, he of course includes  
the Presbyterians of Scotland & elsewhere, Catholics of Ireland  
and elsewhere, Independents, Baptists, &c. - all nonconformists.



Weekly Sales in the London Markets  
of Homegrown produce. - in Dispatch Dec. 8. 1850.

1 Vor. in Covent Garden, Borough, Spitalfields, Farringdon  
and Portman markets.

	Covent G.	Borough.	Spitalfields.	Farringdon.	Portman.
Apples	360,000:	25,000:	250,000:	35,000:	16,000.
Pears	230,000:	10,000:	83,000:	20,000:	10,000.
Cherries	90,000:	45,000:	45,000:	12,000:	15,000 sieves
Gooseberries	140,000:	35,000 sieves;	91,500:	12,000:	
Strawberries	29,000 sieves;	10,100:	12,000:	450:	6,000 sieves
Currants red	70,000 sieves;		45,000:	5,000:	20,000 sieves
do white	3,800 "				
do black	45,000 "				
Plums	93,000:	--	45,000:	3,000:	
Raspberries	22,500:	...	2,500:	...	4,000 sieves
Filberts	1,000 tons	...	...	...	...
Walnuts	25,000:				
Potatoes	83,000 tons;	36,000 tons;	55,000 tons;	14,000 tons;	6,602 tons
Turnips	10,000 loads;	2,000 loads;	2,000 loads;	704 loads;	1040 loads
Carrots	5,000 loads;	442 loads;	1,000 loads;		780 loads
Onions	500,000:	--			
Cabbages	16,000 loads;	8,000 loads;	5,000 loads;	3,500 loads;	7,280 loads
Broccoli and Cauliflowers	1,000 loads;	15-6 loads;	1,200 loads;	1,300 loads;	1,820 loads
Peas	135,000 sacks;	25,000 sacks;	50,000 sacks;	7,000 s:	
Beans	50,000 sacks;	10,000 sacks;	50,000 sacks;	12,000 s:	
French Beans & Scarlet Runners	140,000 bushels;			3,000 bushels;	
Celery	18,000 heads or 1,500,000 rolls of 12 each - all at C. Garden				
Asparagus	400,000 bundles of 150 each, or 60 million of 60 - all at C. Garden				
Endive	150,000 scores all at C. G.				
Watercress	21,060 hampers of 1 1/4 cwt each or 26,325 cwt. all at C. G.				
Oranges	place not stated, 12,000 bushels.				

Remarks. All the above figures mean 20 & narrow bushels, except where tons, sacks, loads, &c. are annexed.

Sieves. 3 half sieves make a bushel; or a sieve is 2/3 of a bushel  
Yet the 178,800 sieves of Currants are called 178,200 half  
sieves; and the 22,500 bushels of Raspberries are called  
30,000 sieves. Yet he says expressly that 3 half sieves of plums  
go to a bushel. I cannot explain it.

Loaded Cabbage are called 200 dozen to a load, 2400 heads.  
but some only 150 doz. to a load. All the cabbage  
at the 5 markets amount to 89,672,000, heads.

Loaded Broccoli & Cauliflowers are 200 doz. each, or more are.

Sacks of Peas and Beans are 2 bushels each

Loaded Turnips are called 150 and 200 doz. each load

" of Carrots are called 200 and 300 doz. each "

Ton of Potatoes - bushels in a ton not given.

The returns are evidently loose & imperfect, but will give  
some idea of vegetables, fruits, &c. sold in London markets.  
Currants are said to grow on 1 doz. 250 bushes. 6 bushes fill a sieve.



# Things in England. (from Weekly Dispatch

Sieves & Bushels - on opposite page.

He says the currants grew on 1.069.200 bushes, "as six bushes on an average fill a sieve", and his 178,200 is  $\frac{1}{6}$  of 1.069.200. He must therefore need 118,800 bushels of Currants instead of so many sieves and 178.200 sieves instead of half sieves. The former number is  $\frac{2}{3}$  as much as the last.

Marriages & Deaths not published in the Dispatch

Tithes, he says, do not now amount to 4 millions £.  
p. 331. The repeal of the corn laws has reduced them.

Christening. Some christen free of expense, but others charge 1/6. It is customary to pay the clerk 1/6 and sometimes the pew opener 1/6.

Funerals seem to be very expensive, or burials merely.

Speculating of all kinds done in England; much deception practiced on ignorant persons coming to America.

A Will may be inspected at the prerogative office for a shilling.

150 £ is requisite to obtain a patent - at least some patents. This seems to include the expense of specification.

A person in London, or Bricklayer, gets 5/ a day. Whether this is a common price, is not said.

In the reign of George III. 21 persons were executed at one time

Fish sold annually, at Billingsgate Market.

Salmon, 203.000. .... Dr ea.	Eels 672 tons from Holland
Live cod 400.000, 10d each	" 57 tons from Eng. & Ireland
Cod in bbls. 15.000. bbls. 50 to 60 lb	(all to a lb)
Salt cod 8 million lbs. (av. 5 lb ea)	Whiting 3000 tons, 6/ ea
Fresh Haddocks 2.470.000, each 2 lbs?	Plaice 15000 tons, av. 1 lb.
Smoked do. 65.000 bbls, (300 in bbl?)	Purbot 2500 tons, av. 7 lb
Soles - 12.000 tons - $\frac{1}{4}$ d each	Brill & mullet 1500 tons, av. 3 lb
Mackrel 10.500 tons - 1d each	Oysters 310.000, double bushels
Fresh Herrings 250.000 bbls. 135 to bbl	Lobsters 1.200.000
Red Herrings 100.100 bbls. 500 to bbl	Crabs 600.000
Bloaters - 265.000 baskets, 150 to 3.	Prawns 12 tons, 120 to lb
	Shrimps 102.000 gallons
	(32 1/2 to a pint)

## Wholesale Prices, in Nov. 1850.

Wheat 40/ gr. Barley 24/ Oats 17/ Rye 25/ Beans & Peas 29/  
Beef 4d to 6d by creature; Mutton 3d to 6d. Pork 5d to 6d  
Lard 4d to 6d. Wool most kinds about 1/ per lb  
Butter 7d. 8d. 9d 10d per lb average not over 9d.  
Dye 1850. since, calves, butters, &c. from Holland & Germany  
Jan. 1851. Wheat average of 6 weeks, 39/4. Barley 24/10. Oats 17/1. Rye 24/ Beans 28/2. Peas 28/10  
Dec. 1850. Beef 8d to 10d. Mutton 2/8 to 4/4. Veal 2/8 to 4/6. Pork 2/8 to 4/2



# Old Notions about women in reference

to their frailty and vices: and in regard to other things.

- King James I. common — *Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2. 346. 347. P. 103 of this.
- Quoted in this No. p. 26. 27. 25. Women extravagant. *See M. 9. 57*
- See *Pict. Hist.* p. 118. 146. *Supposed & mistaken dress much alike. M. 9. 66*
- Women in England, modern times, *Miscel. 6.* Female Ornaments. p. 394. *See M. 9. 32*
- Women in ancient times. *See 6. 407. & do. do. M. 9. 59*
- Women in France this No. page 328. *M. 8. 396.*
- Parsons & women. *See in this No. p. 295. Ecclesiastical M. 9. 35*
- Clergy women. See "Pastoral de Limoges" p. 195—220. *Same - M. 9. 32*
- Women p. 183 of this No. *See vol. 2. 297. 298. 206. 215. Augustus & women. M. 9. 301*
- Rights & duties of women. See to 5. p. 124. *See also p. 195*
- Notions of Latins & Oldal. *Miscel. 2. 206. Women, see Spence. M. 9. 301*
- Montaigne's opinion of women. *Miscel. 2. 200*
- Bad women in England. p. 183. *Women p. 177. Old note*
- Hooker's notions of women. p. 340. *Women in England M. 6. 432*
- Women in Greece & Rome. *Miscel. 6. 407. Handicraft women M. 9. 60*
- Chaucer account of women. *Con. 9. 331. Women gained by Prostitution. p. 334*
- Scolding women. *Con. 9. Miscel. 1. 342. Women in Scotland M. 11. 41*
- Shakespeare. *Miscel. 5. 145. Jangling of women. Chaucer. M. 9. 331. Chaucer*
- Reckit of women. *Miscel. 2. 289. Deceit & curdiness. Con. 9. 331. Chaucer*
- Women's confessions to priests. Page 177 of this No. *Notions of women by James. M. 11. 404*
- Swift's Tea Table Scandal & lewd meanings. *See in his Modern Lady.*
- Dignity of woman. *Nat. Hist. 2. 87. Meaning of W. M. 2. 277. See Con. 9. 346*
- Women in France (E. Lagouze 1849) *Con. 9. 393. French Women. P. Haydon. 11626*
- Women remarks regarding them by P. *9. 327. M. 1. 115.*
- Their marriage promise. *M. 3. 116. Women in Scotland. M. 11. 41*
- "Silly Women" a frequent expression, especially with religious disputants
- Burton's notions of women in this No. p. 25. 26. 27. *See M. 9. 301*
- "Pygmalion rattlepated, lascivious females" *Misc. 2. 297.*
- Indian women. *Conteller. 2. 307. Misc. 6. 249. Misc. 8. 336*
- "Womankindly benignity" & "womanly pity" *Chaucer, "Soft heart of woman". anon.*
- Notice of women who have preached. *M. 2. 105. May admin. Sec. &c. M. 9. 35*
- Women in the Feudal System. *Guizot. of this p. 353.*
- Gospel for man & woman. *of the same M. 5. 148.*
- Milliner "who deals in a mixed variety of articles" (R. D.) was a  
man formerly. *see Miscel. 5. 157.*
- Tailor & mantua maker, was also a man, men  
made ladies gowns, &c. formerly. *See Miscel. 5. 156. 145.*
- Query. What were the causes of this? Why did not females  
make garments, & sell small articles? Were they too ignorant  
or too proud? *Waiter on Smithy. of Women, wished to have*
- Pope "of the Characters of Women". To a Lady. says two passions  
divide women "The love of pleasure & the love of a way."
- He makes women very inconsistent. — "at best a contradiction".
- Very changeable — frail — heartless, &c. *See Pope. Misc. 7. 394*
- Alternately — heathen & christian; some "ever in a passion or a prayer".
- Young has a satire "On a man", & one "on Women" inscribed  
to Lady Germain, Right Hon.
- One is polite & goes to church & does things in form & prays well
- One receives visitants in bed, & begs them "to turn while she shifts".
- One is prodigally expensive; one has bastards; one not "over-good".
- One weds an idiot in order to live in state; one always in the wrong.
- Some proud, deceitful, always uneasy, inconstant, on  
extremes, sluttish, "a female storm is an odious sight".
- Vain, self-conceited, railing, aversion, affected, wine-drinking,  
unfaithful to husbands, gamblers, liars, slanderers, &c.
- "There is no woman where there is no reserve."
- See also Prior, Dryden, Swift & others. Swift has much to say of female  
gaming, scandal, scolding,
- "A shameless woman is the worst of men." Young.







# 308 Oppression of the Poor by the Rich. Miseries of the Poor.

Blithe, Miscel. 1. 46 DeTouqueville, *Rom.* 9. 227  
 Stolinshed. do. 1. 59. 69  
 Hughson *Con. & Miscel.* 1. 224.  
 Herberts Rich & Poor see page 294. of this.  
 In this No. - page 299. page 19. 346. 316. 328. 332.  
*Con.* cto 9. p. 420. 421. 414. 409/404. 396.  
 Howett. The enclosure system. *Miscel.* 1. 357. *Nat. Hist.* 2. 307.  
 Lord Keeper 1638 - *Con. & Miscel.* 1. 344. *Con.* 9. 404. 405.  
 From Hole iff. p. 394.  
 Arrogance of the high: severity of the law. *Miscel.* 6. 384.  
 Nobility & gentry conspire to oppress the people p. 346  
 Cheapness of men. *Con.* 4. 35.  
 Sympathy with poor. *Nat. Hist.* 2. 86.  
 Poverty not favorable to economy. *Misc.* 5. 133.  
 Cottage life by Howett. *Miscel.* 1. 368.  
 Dr. Snaper's Sermon about the Poor. *Misc.* 2. 186.  
 Dr. Bushnell attributes slavery & degradation to the selfishness of men *Con. & Misc.* 1. 361.  
 Domestic Servants, a species of white slaves. *Con.* 9. 394.  
 Oppression of the poor under the law of 1662. p. 133 of *Con.*  
 American & their laborers, servants, &c. p. 332  
 English peasantry - their brutality, &c. *Con.* 2. 125.  
 Scotch laborers. *Misc.* 8. 341  
 Wretchedness of the poor in S. M. 8. 341. in E. M. 8. 342. In J. M. 8. 344.  
 Dissoluteness of clo. in E. S. M. 8. 344. Ignorance & stupidity M. 8. 342.  
 Poverty of France & peasantry by Howett. *Misc.* 3. 118  
 Feeling for the Poor. See Howett. *Misc.* 8. 350 351. 353. 355  
 Great men oppress & devour the poor. Thos. Adams. *Misc.* 9. 32

Class Legislation or laws favoring the Rich. see opposite.  
 See *Con.* 9. 420. *Miscel.* 6. 388. *Miscel.* 6. 333. and 6. 434.  
 See *Nat. Hist.* 2. p. 22

## Working classes or Working men in England. *Con.* 9. 421.

*Misc.* 2. 215. - Their poverty. *Misc.* 5. 3.  
 Workingman & Physician. *Misc.* 8. 360  
 Workingmen not to legislate *Con.* 9. 400.  
 London Workingmen on Sunday. *Misc.* 11. 307.

## Labor & Laborers. *Con.* 9. 409. *Miscel.* 6. 391. *Con.* 9. 423.

*Nat. Hist.* 2. 16. 17. *Misc.* 6. 412. M. Roussel *Misc.* 6. 434  
 do. do. 2. 21. 22 & 23. La Mennais " 6. 433  
 Labor the source of all wealth, & the price of their maintenance"  
 "The wages of the laborers are the price of their maintenance"  
 Labor & capital. *Nat. Hist.* 2. 17. Ed. Enc. on Corn Laws. Vol. 65  
 Labor & living in France & England compared 1<sup>st</sup>. 3. p. 141 & 2<sup>nd</sup>. 3. p. 142  
 p. 299. Ignorance & stupidity of many laborers. *Misc.* 8. 88 Intelligence of Ploughmen. M. 8. 89.

## Poverty. *Misc.* 8. 363. *Miscel.* 6. 335. 333. 384. of this page 99.

Thos. Parker's Sermon. *Miscel.* 6. 336-337 Poverty & happiness. this No. p. 394  
 Poverty connected with vice. M. 6. 399. with crime. Burton. *Thinks* p. 89  
 Poverty & economy. See above. Causes of poverty. *Con.* 9. 394.  
 Poverty connected with intemperance. p. 319  
 Workingmen's condition improved in some respects - *Con.* 9. 413.  
*Misc.* 2. 153. *Miscel.* 8. 364.

"Where rich men join to rob the shiftless wretch." Gascoigne



Rich & Poor. High & Low. Great & Small. 309.  
Ignorant & Learned. The multitude, &c

Miscel 2. 208 (Knosc.) - 2. 152. 2. Review - 2. 158. (Ed. Review) - 2. 166. 2. Review.  
R. Hooker's notions of this. p. 341. Chamberlayne de miscel 3. 63. - Misc 2. 207  
Montaigne's notions. Miscel 2. 196. 198. 193. 194. 201. 202.  
Servants. pages 332. 333. - Gospel to poor. p. 178.  
Servants. (Cont. miscel. No 2. 213. 214. Servants M. 7. (this) 299  
Servants. Kalin. Miscel 3. 86. Servants Kidnapped M. 2. 125  
Servants of the Nobility & others. Miscel 8. 382. 383. - from vol. .... 340. 342. 344.  
Masters & Servants. (Chambers). Con. 9. 423. Laborer & Employer. (Con. 9. 423  
Domestic Servants. (see oppos.) Con. 9. 394. 41. Arm Servants (see ... 1. 358  
Locke's idea of Servants. p. 415. 414. From Servants in Saxony & H. 2. 99  
(Days work & wages. M. 2. 474)  
English Nobility & people Miscel 3. 55. 62. Misc. laws about Servants M. 4. 55  
Houghton, about poor. Miscellaneous 1. 50. Household Serv. 4. 120. 1. 53  
The poor being Garbier. - Tens p. 177. of this.  
Reasons why the rich should promote piety. p. 178.  
Laws favor rich. bear hard on poor. Con. 9. 402. Misc 6. 333  
Crimes of the wealthy. Con. 9. 402.  
Rich & Poor, sympathy & relieving. Con. 9. 414  
Laws by the rich for the rich. M. 6. 434  
Little & great villains M. 7. 395.  
Democracy in England its rise p. 122.  
Burton's acct. of rich & poor p. 18. 19. 114.  
Rich & Poor by Countess of Halim-Halim. Nat. Hist. 2. 80.  
Wealth & poverty, high & low. Arnold. p. 174.  
John Smith's account of wealthy man (con. & Misc. 2. 191.  
Scripture blessings are for the poor, not the rich. p. 294. Herbert.  
Christ & Poverty Con. 9. 427  
Both high & low reason but little. M. 11. 309.

p. 316. Wealth, its effect & influence. Con. 9. 402. - M. 6. 387. Vol. 1. p. 2  
do. 9th distribution; the laborer. Con. 9. 414. 415.  
do. 9th gradual acquisition. Misc. 2. 166. Money getting p. 395 of this  
do. 9th concomitants, looseness & debauchery. Miscel 2. 247

Poor in England, 3 sorts. Holinshed. Misc. 1. 64.  
Paupers & beggars - @ & others. 2. 148

Wealth & poverty. Carlyle. Misc. 5. 38

p. 30. Misery & stupidity of common people - mere beasts - Godman M. 6. 3  
Profligacy & vice of the lower class in E. Hodgskin, a late writer. M. 9. 35.  
Laborers ruined by public houses. M. 9. 43.  
The poor indeed & the idle, wandering poor. Misc. 6. 3  
The discussion, general, in England, on this & on what causes poverty. Misc. 9. 3  
M. 11. 318. sensible men may in time yield to poverty & misery & we are never to cease

11. 2. 249 The Clergy despised, or abused; other things about them.

See pages 294. 299. 341. 342. 18. 19. 20.

See Arnold page 168 and on. The Doctor p. 181.

See Chamberlayne. Miscel. 3. p. 61. Miscel. 9. p. 43. Henry Smith

This. To. page 345. 346. 347. see M. 18. p. 250. 241

Chamberlayne's account of the Clergy - Chap. III. Despised because the  
plebeians & not rich. Eachard public. "Causes of the Contempt  
of the Clergy." There were distinguished clergymen but not among the  
rural population. Town Clergy & Country Clergy were very distinct.  
The country clergy were more bigoted & intolerant than the other 3; -  
zealous & fervent.

The Clergy & their conduct

See Cardinal Wolsey. Miscel. 6. 430. Clergy of all ages. Misc. 2. 137

Clergy in Henry. Misc. 1. 32. 33. Their want of wisdom (Clare. Don) Con. 9. 402

Education by clergy (Kemerton) Con. 9. 417. Eng. Clergy dislike lawyers M. 3. 117

English Clergy, their bad conduct in 16th century. p. 346. 347. 345

Cruelty of clergy under Mary. Misc. 2. 287

Their preaching in Ch. of E. Misc. 8. 337. A course to Ireland. M. 8. 344

Irish Bishops M. 8. 344.

Rich priests. M. 6. 402

Accounts of them in 1611 - Misc. 8. 185

Clergy cannot be reformed as long as clergy are paid p. 294

Clergy no better than others. Misc. 5. 149 (all corn.)



"An Essay on the Influence of Authority  
in Matters of Opinion" — by George Cornwall Lewis, Esq.  
London 1850. Reviewed in the Edinburgh Review,  
April 1850.

A. Matter of Fact is an event or phenomenon which we know from consciousness of sensation. A matter of fact is decided by an appeal to our own consciousness, or sensation, or to the testimony, direct or indirect of the original and percipient witnesses. When a ~~fact~~ fact is doubted on reasonable grounds, its existence becomes a matter of opinion.

A Matter of Opinion is a general proposition relating to laws of nature or mind, principles & rules of human conduct, future probabilities, deductions from hypotheses, and the like, about which a doubt may reasonably exist. All doubtful questions are matters of opinion.

+ Matter of Perception is generally a matter of certainty. [Similar to a matter of fact.]

2. A matter of inference varies from perfect certainty to the slightest suspicion. It is generally a matter of doubt (similar to a matter of opinion). The inference from all past experience, that the sun will rise tomorrow, is a matter of certainty. The inference, from the apparent want of water & atmosphere, that the moon is uninhabited, is a matter of great doubt.

The Principle of Authority is the principle of adopting the belief of others, on matters of opinion, without reference to the grounds of that belief. Lewis.

all the opinions of Children are founded on authority.

Nearly all the Opinions of the Laboring Classes in Europe, I  
 use founded on authority, being derived from their parents,  
 their clergy, and some desultory information from  
 a few books and newspapers, which they read.

Many of the Middle and Higher Orders will not spare from business and pleasure, time enough to form independent opinions. Others act and think under the dominion of fashion, and fear singularity more than error. The difficulty and labor of original thought are great, and the number of subjects is enormous.

One Witness, judicious & honest, is in most cases, as fully believed in a matter of fact as ten. What is called the concurrent testimony of hundreds, is often only the testimony of one or two, who are believed by the others.

[Opinions. see p. 398. Con. 9. 30.]

Opinions. See p. 398. con. g. 30.



Agreement in matters of inference, men of Science, by the gradual diminution of points of difference, and gradual increase of points of agreement, acquire the Authority which accredits their opinions, and propagates scientific truths.

Mock Sciences are rejected after a patient examination and study of facts, and not by a hasty first impression, by the general agreement of competent judges. Such are Astrology, Magic, Divination, the Influence of the Heavenly Bodies upon diseases &c.

Lewis thinks Mesmerism, Homoeopathy & Phrenology have not stood the test of scientific investigation, and are to be set down as Mock Sciences.

The Reviewer thinks that it cannot be asserted of either of these, Mesmerism, Homoeopathy and Phrenology, that it has failed under the test of impartial scientific investigation.

Conf. 406/244 Of Homoeopathy, he says, it is plausible and supported by analogy; and many hundred educated men are professedly practitioners of it, a majority of whom were trained to believe in allopathy. Among them then are many competent judges. He believes that in many cases the inferences of homoeopathic reasoning are true.

Phrenology is also plausible & supported by analogy. It has a respectable library, containing elaborate treatises by men of scientific habits. The truth of the theory may not be established, but it has not been proved false. It is probable there are errors in the details of the science; and possibly in the outline.

M. 2. 292. 2. 11. Mesmerism is not plausible. The phenomena do not resemble anything previously known to us. We ought not to admit them, except on proof more than sufficient to support propositions which are supported by analogy. But the proofs have appeared sufficient to many men of high moral and scientific character, and their number is increasing. He gives many instances of its curative effects, and of operations, performed in mesmeric sleep, at Calcutta, the witnesses of which are unexceptionable.

Evidence & opinions are not to be rejected because they relate to phenomena which are not supported by analogical facts; or are contrary to the ordinary course of nature, where the testimony is ample & good, and the witnesses free from sinister or misleading interest, where there is talent, learning, experience, integrity, is it allowable to reject.



# Influence of Authority.

## Authority in Religion.

All civilized nations agree in believing in some form of Christianity, — or at least, all modern civilized nations, whose opinions are of any weight or authority. Nor is there much dispute among them as to the moral doctrines of Christianity. — The necessity of some ~~persecution~~ <sup>persecution</sup> opinions for salvation, and the lawfulness of persecution, may be exceptions. But enlightened Catholics repudiate these doctrines.

The metaphysical dogmata, (doctrines) and the forms by which ministers ought to be chosen and appointed, or Church discipline, in these there is no tendency to concurrence.

Questions about dogmata, as the Trinity, &c. affect the imagination, but do not influence the action of men. — Questions about the appointment of ministers and the government of the church, are too practical to be disregarded, and involve political institutions. — Neither class of questions is susceptible of a perfect solution. Different forms of church government may be useful in different periods, and in different societies at the same period — as the government is monarchical, aristocratical or democratic; as the people are more or less educated; much depends on their moral habits & religious knowledge. The Free Church of Scotland and the United States would not work well in Sicily and Poland. — Every arrangement may have some evils as well as advantages.

Doctrinal Questions are mainly supported by texts of Scripture, which are susceptible of various interpretations, and there cannot be a general agreement. The authority of no church or sect can command assent to its peculiar tenets.

## English Law & Opinion

Lawyers say that Christianity is parcel of the law of England; and therefore "to write against Christianity in general" is "to impugn the Christian religion generally" — "to endeavor to ~~impugn~~ <sup>to deny</sup> the belief of others" — "to impeach the established faith" is a misdemeanor at common law, subjects the offender to fine, imprisonment, and infamous corporal punishment. By the statute, Law. 9. & 10. Wm. & Mary. to <sup>to deny</sup> any one of the persons in the Trinity to be God, to assert that there are more Gods than one, to deny the Christian religion to be true, or the Holy Scriptures of the Old & New Testament to be of divine authority



English Law continued.

subjects the Clergy to the following punishments, for first offence, he is rendered incapable of holding any office; for the second, to be imprisoned 3 years and be incapable of suing in any court, or of accepting any legacy. — The punishment for denying the doctrine of the Trinity has been repeated in our times; the remainder of the Statute is now in force.

But the law does less than public opinion to repress infidelity. The author of a professed infidel work would become a pariah in England. He would be shunned & scorned in society; all avenues to public service would be closed to him. Every prudent man carefully avoids the imputation of holding infidel opinions. It is dangerous to assert new views on religious matters. — Under such circumstances, what reliance can Englishmen place on the authority of writers on religion?

There is much scepticism among educated Englishmen — not incredulity, but doubt.

A Roman Catholic seldom believes that his creed is only partially erroneous; when he gives up one article he commonly gives up the whole and becomes an infidel. If he is a man of strong religious emotions, he may become a Protestant, but such instances are rare in this sceptical century.

Governments. In every great country in Europe, its foreign policy for 200 years past, the most enlightened period the world has ever seen, has produced, even to those who were more harm than good. In every country, the principal obstacles to improvement are existing laws. Legislation has often aggravated evils it was intended to remedy.

Killing kings and great men by assassination or by a judicial sentence, seldom if ever produces the results intended.

From the present state of any country, it is difficult to predict what it will do or be hereafter. Some sagacious predictions, noticed.

Predictions in regard to an individual.

- 1 So far as he is good & wise, he will be governed
- 2 1st by his duty, & next by his interest. If he be
- 3 intelligent & immoral, he will pursue only his
- 4 interest. If he be stupid & moral, he will try to do right, but may mistake. If he be neither intelligent nor moral, he will be governed by the passion or caprice of the moment.



### 314. Influence of Authority.

#### Predictions as to a nation.

The same may be said of a nation as of an individual - the same predictions made, (as on preceding page)

An individual who should commit half the follies which have been committed during the last two years, by either France, Prussia, Schleswig, Holstein, Baden, Austria, Lombardy, Venice, Rome, Tuscany, Naples, would be placed by his friends under restraint, as incapable of managing his own affairs. Any man who should be guilty of one half of the crimes which every one of these civilized nations has been guilty in two years, would be hunted out of society. He includes Piedmont in the list. Probably includes people as well as governments - perhaps not.

The Wickedness of nations may be explained by the weakness of a diffused responsibility; by the absence of a superior capable of punishing a wrong doer; by the frequent success of fraud and violence.

The Folly of nations principally arises from their comparative inability to profit from experience. To learn from the experience of others requires a rare degree of intelligence.

Few Persons are competent to guide opinion on any subject, compared with the whole. The statesman must harmonize the feelings, prejudices and follies of the people.

Henry VIII. Edward VI., Mary, & Elizabeth changed the Religion of England from Catholic to semi-Catholic; from semi-Catholic to Protestant; from Protestant to Catholic; from Catholic to Protestant, and this was allowed by the nation, who in the next century passed the Test Act.

Gothic architecture was the object of universal veneration or about 600 years. Then it was despised about two centuries. Now public favor has returned to it.

Lord Eldon, in the cabinet, was generally opposed to action, and always to improvement or reform. He was the tribune of the narrow minded oligarchy.

The collective or general ticket system of voting is the disfranchisement of all but a single party.



Religious Truth & Error. Mr Lewis says it is the duty of a state to encourage truth and discourage error, if the attempt is likely to be attended with success and to be, on the whole, advantageous to the community. If the attempt is likely to fail, & the cause of truth not likely to be promoted, the state should not interfere.

Christianity admits of unlimited improvement. and the forms least infected with error are the most favorable to civilization. The Roman Catholic portion of France, the peasantry, are far less civilized than the protestant peasantry of Germany, Holland and England. Reviewer.

Can. 9. 427 Religious persecution has been to a great extent successful. — Lewis says. Protestantism was checked, & expelled from Italy, Spain, Southern Germany & France, and Flanders. The Jews and their creed were extirpated from Spain, and the Christians & their creed from Japan. But he decides against the expediency of persecution. False opinions in religion can be propagated by force, as well as true ones.

Religious truth & religious error can both be propagated by argument and authority, and can both be suppressed by force. Reviewer.

Can. 9. 427. Christ renounced all secular authority; "My Kingdom is not of this world" — ~~it is~~ would be false, had he permitted force to be used. The Jewish Kingdom of the old Testament was of this world, and force was then allowed.

It is impossible generally, to demonstrate that the persecuted doctrine is false.

Many of the errors of Romanism are opinions natural to the human mind. Whately.

Abuse of the principle of authority. — The English laborers especially the most intelligent, the manufacturers, adopt the views of their leaders with slavishness. So do the Irish people. So do many in other countries.

Well placed confidence is one of the main instruments of civilization.

See Bp. Hall, about an universal belief or practice. Misc. 2. 230  
See Bp. Taylor about universal consent. p 178 of this.

"The middling class do not think for themselves in a new country, & Europe, as they do with us. They take their opinions from their 'betters', and are thankful for the privilege." Letter from London 1849.  
Freedom of opinion is less in higher classes than in those below them.  
Columbian. H. 8. 343.



# Prisons in England.

Water in London. & Edinburgh Review, April 1850  
Want of Cleanliness gives a horrible account of the detritation of water, and the filthy water of London. It almost exceeds belief. Water is a matter of trade. It is sold by companies, filthy & corrupt as it is. The ~~large~~ part of London is supplied with water from the Thames, within the tideway; where it receives the dirt refuse & filth of millions, and a thousand harmless pollutions. The tide washes it backwards and forwards and stirs it up thoroughly, viz. the mixture.

The river Lea supplies the eastern half of the city & this receives the drainage of one of the most populous districts in England. For 20 miles on its banks the chain of towns & villages is almost unbroken.

Physical Uncleanliness & Moral Pollution  
Con. 9. 424 have a most certain and fatal connexion. The condition of a population becomes invariably assimilated to that of their habitations.

Districts of filth are districts of disease & death,  
Con. 9. 424. and also of crime.

Doctors' bills are a great expense to the poor. There are "innumerable cases" of families brought on the parish by sickness. In London

confinement costs a poor family 4 or 5 £, and they are not so numerous as miscarriages.

The sickness of a scrupulous child costs from 4 to 10 £ and its burial from 2 £ to 4 £.

These workmen's wages are only 20/- a week or from 20 to 25/- many become utter paupers, from sickness expenses, confinements, miscarriages & burials.

309 Wealth. "Our natural selfishness is hardened by the self-indulgence of wealth."

High & Low in Shakespeares time. Rank was then looked up to with reverence. The relations between different classes were very different from what it is now. The great distinctions in society were well defined and acknowledged; and one did not encroach on the other. The low revered the high & were submissive, & the high regarded the low with more kindly feelings than they now do. Now different classes regard each other with contempt, and there is a constant rivalry. Mutual respect & kindly feelings are not found. Punch holds up royal & noble persons to the laughter of the land; and the opinion is expressed that royalty is a mere pageant, kept up for sake of appearance, &c.

N. British Review 1848



# Marriage in Scotland.

con. g. 376  
m. 3. 70.

Marriage - is a religious natural & civil contract, and "requires, in its own nature, nothing for its completion but the free & deliberate consent of parties". This is truly the law in all protestant Europe. Yet it has been uniformly the practice to regulate for the public benefit and the preservation & integrity of the institution itself, the mode in which such consent shall be evinced and proved. Civil government has a right thus to protect one of its sacred defences. Nations differ as to what evidence of consent shall be sufficient to legalize marriage.

Marriage law of Scotland - as it was 1843.

Consent of Parties is proved or inferred as follows:

- 1st. By public celebration by a clergyman.
- 2d. By a declaration before witnesses.
- 3d. By a verbal promise of marriage followed by intercourse.
- 4th. By mere cohabitation as man & wife, coupled with the general & true belief of the public that the parties were married.

These matters may be established by parole testimony or by the most informal writing. The male must be 14 & the girl 12.

The facility of marriage was considered too great, because the proof in many cases was uncertain and this uncertainty led to injury, fraud, divorce voluntary, & some other evils.

A new Marriage Bill for Scotland was proposed in Parliament, 1847. By its provisions every marriage <sup>contract</sup> was to be solemnized in presence of a clergyman, or "by Registration in the presence of the Registrar." Those married by Registration were to sign before witnesses the entry of their marriage in the Register. - All marriages to be registered. Quakers & Jews to marry according to their customs, but to be registered. "Clergymen" to include ministers of other churches besides the established church.

Clergymen in Scotland were prohibited to marry in 1661 and in 1695. In 1833 or 1834, an act allowed all clergymen to marry. Episcopal clergy could marry before. - Yes and it seems the regular Scotch clergy could marry, by law of 1661 & that of 1695, notwithstanding the assertion above. The act of 1661 was levelled against irregular clergymen - those not of the Scotch Church.

The facility of marriage in Scotland has produced less evil than the restrictions of England - and has caused, or <sup>rather</sup> co-existed with a higher standard of purity. [I know not whether the Bill became a law.] N.B. Review Feb. 1848.

Ed. Enc. II. 799. Law of Scotland. It is not necessary that marriage should be celebrated by a clergyman. The consented parties may be declared before any magistrates, or simply before witnesses.

Ed. Enc. 109. In Denmark simple consent in the presence of witnesses constitutes marriage among nobles & persons of rank; the inferior orders must be married by a clergyman.



The Church of England, in her doctrine, is a widely constructed on a comprehensive, latitudinarian plan. With Calvinistic Articles, & a Service Book gives no certain sound, she was made purposely to embrace all shades of opinion short of open popery or ultra puritanism. Popish priests conformed without changing their religious views much. The evangelical party might teach what spiritual faith they chose, if they would only submit to the ceremonies. It was upon questions of outward order & ritual uniformity that the Puritans in the 17th and Wesleyans in the 18th centuries separated from the church. The church embraces high low church, Calvinism, Arminianism, rigid orthodoxy, laxity almost Socinian, sacramentarian superstition, & indifference that is near Deism. But all must submit to the same externals; put on the right clothing, make the right obeisances, and submit to all usages.

Con. g. 407. 399.

N.B. Review Feb. 1848

Report of a Constabulary Commission in England March 1839. N.B. Review, May 1850.

p. 332

Annual committals for criminal offences in England & Wales averaging 100,000. Criminals constantly in gaols, vary from 11,000 to 20,000, and move out of prison.

Forgery. From 1805 to 1837, 274,967 forged notes were presented at the Bank of England. In the same time only 1677 persons were convicted of forging or uttering such notes.

Criminals universally got more money and lived more sumptuously than industrious men of the same class or rank, to which the criminals had belonged.

Liverpool loses £30,000 yearly by criminals.

p. 364

Prostitutes. The report says the actual number of known prostitutes, ascertained by enumeration, in London, 1839, ~~was~~ 1½ millions of people, does not exceed 7000. They have no belief in Colquhoun's 50,000, nor in other large statements. They say there is about the same proportion in Paris or 3558 in 1832. (7000 in 1½ millions, is 1 to 214 persons

p. 332

Cheshire Wreckers. Are blunders & robbers and commit all sorts of evil deeds.

Highway Robbery is much more rare on the Continent than in England. England stands next to Italy and Spain, as to highway robbery. The security of the roads in France, Belgium, Germany, Prussia, &c. is much greater than in England.

Most crimes against property are not caused by poverty or destitution - not one eighth. Such is the report.



# Things in England.

p. 308. **Pauperism.** The A.B. Review says one great cause of pauperism is Intemperance. upwards of 24 millions sterling (about 115 millions of dollars) are spent on spirits alone in the 3 Kingdoms. Military & naval pensioners by their debaucheries are often in the pauper list, though they are provided for by the country. By present arrangements, the soldier becomes unfit to enter society as a productive workman.

**Railway Laborers**, when discharged, become paupers or criminals, or many of them. They drink & fight while employed, & are literally a mass of heathens. Gross debauchery prevails. E. Chadwick, in Reprint.

**Deaths from Accidents in England.** Edwin Chadwick estimates the death from accidents at 11,000 annually. These are the cause of much pauperism. Many are main also. many accidents occur in excavating railways, as well as afterwards.

## Mortality in England - by E. Chadwick, 1842.

of Europe & Nat. Hist. } The registered deaths in England & Wales in 1838 was 2 p. 18 } 342,529; in 1839, 338,079. Deaths from violence of London } (accidents & murders) in 1838, 12,055; in 1839, 11,480. From } 10. 71 } old age in 1838, 35,564; in 1839, 35,063. Proportion } see below. } of deaths to the whole people, 1 to 1000, or a trifle more than one in 50. He thinks the causes of many diseases are preventible - as the open decomposition of animal & vegetable matter; damp; filth; overcrowding in dwellings; defective drainage & ventilation; imperfect supplies of water, &c. Intermment in towns Mr. C. also reports on 1843. He proposed the total abolition of cesspools in towns. A.B. Review May 1850

## Geneva Morals before the Reformation or before Calvin.

"Gaming, drunkenness, adultery, blasphemy and all sorts of vice & wickedness abounded. Prostitution was sanctioned by the authority of the State, and the public stews were placed under the superintendence of a woman elected by the council & called 'La Reine du Bordel'. The registers of Geneva abound with entries respecting the regulations of these pandemoniums. If the manners of the laity were corrupt those of the clergy were as bad or worse."

[Dyer is not friendly to Calvin & Calvinism.] (Dyer, Life of Calvin, p. 77.)

Mortality at Geneva - At Reformation half of children died under 6 years of age; in 17th century, 1/2 died under 12th year; in 18th century half died under 27th year & not until 27th, Great change. Mortality in London. The conditions of the people are improved. In 1606, one in 14th died under 6 years of age; in 17th, one in 14th. now 1 in 35th. 1730 to 1750, 7/8 children out of 100 died before 6; more recent times 31 out of 100. In all England & Wales, 5 1/2 out of 100 die under 6 years, now die every year. In all E & W. 443 in 1000 die under 10. Chubb. Inf.



misc. 2. 95  
 " 11. 400.  
 401.

Newspapers. "The fourth estate". N.B. Review, May 1850  
 Cont. p. 412.

The Pope was the censor of the press, or those under him, until the Reformation. For more than a century almost all book published were Theological. The liberty gained by the Reformation was soon curbed. Queen Elizabeth forbade the printing of any thing not allowed, & no printing was to be done except at London, Oxford or Cambridge. Not a few were fined, imprisoned, pilloried or branded, for printing works unlicensed. By a Proclamation 25<sup>th</sup> Eliz. "all Brownist books & other seditious books" were to be suppressed and burned. The Star Chamber continued its tyranny over the press until 1644, when it was abolished. From 1640 to the Restoration published. All these publications were collected and are said to be in the British Museum.

During the Civil wars, newspapers under various names were published, generally Mercuries. The Long Parliament made strong efforts to check the power of the press, and John Milton took up the defence of the liberty of the press. After the war began and until the Restoration the press enjoyed practical freedom. Soon after the Restoration the liberty of the press was again thrown back; and all publications were under licensers, and printing was to be done only at London, York, Oxford & Cambridge. Instead of political writings, licentious poetry was published.

"The Weekly News" was first published in London in 1622, & was the first English Newspaper. Nathaniel Butter was the principal author. Began May 23. 1622. He was connected with the press until 1640. His paper was to most a matter of indifference, & some he was ridiculed & railed at (by Ben. Jonson for one.) He published regularly; previous to him there had been pamphlets and sheets headed "News", giving an account of some great event, but issued irregularly. Butter published only news not discussions. "The English Mercurie" attributed to Elizabeth in 1588, proves to be a forgery, and is given up, after being believed in 50 years. The first French newspaper, "La Gazette de France" was commenced in 1632. The English & French newspapers are the two first in the world. "The Weekly News" was under strict censorship; gave foreign intelligence but dared not meddle with domestic affairs.

In 1663, John Twyn was convicted of publishing a book unlicensed, and that base sycophant, Chief Justice Hyde, sentenced him to be drawn upon a hurdle to the place of execution, be hanged by the neck, be cut down alive, his body be mutilated in a way which decency forbids the mention of; his entrails be taken out "and your still living, the same to be burnt before your eyes, your head to be cut off, and your head and quarters to be disposed of at the pleasure of the king's majesty." The sentence was executed, & his head & quarters were set up to rot on the gates of the city. His crime was called treason.



Things in England  
Newspapers continued.

Charles II & James II. were both strongly opposed to a free press. The Revolution of 1688 set the press free. The licensing act was renewed, but was little regarded. From 1667 to 1668, 70 different journals appeared, and 27 newspapers were added before 1672 — some of long, some of short duration.

*See below* Newsletters. Before newspapers were printed, some wealthy men in the country employed persons in London to write & send to them the news, or intelligence. Butters had been once these news-writers. Their letters were called News-Letters. Such letters were used long after newspapers were printed; a man in London advertised his written News letters in 1695.

\* The London Gazette began Jan. 9. 1665, and is still continued; it contains lists of official reports.

The Daily Courant, the first daily paper appeared 1709. There were then 18 other papers in London, and at least 400 £ a year paid for written newsletters.

Under Queen Anne, the journals for the first time combined discussion with news — about 1709. The earlier papers contained news only.

In 11th of Anne, a duty was imposed on newspapers and pamphlets, 1/2d. on every half sheet; 1d. on a whole sheet and 12d. on each advertisement. This was the first imposition of stamps. Many papers stopped, and the Spectator of Addison among the best. One object of the tax was to stop papers — or to stop what were called "libels." — John Matthews, a boy of 19, was tried for publishing a Whig paper on hereditary right, condemned, and hanged at Tyburn, about this time — Many prosecutions of printers.

It was an offence to print any of the debates in Parliament, yet reports of the proceedings were published after the accession of George I. and continued to be. In 1771, the House of Commons attempted to put a stop to the printing of parliamentary debates, but met with so many difficulties that they were obliged to drop the matter. The debates have been printed ever since. Prosecutions for libel have been numerous.

Newspapers. *Ms. 2. 265. Page 391 of this No. Use 8. 389*  
" 2. 295. " 412 of 179. Use 11. 400

New Haven News paper (on 9. 294 Hampshire clo. 12. 314  
1715. Poetry deemed out of place in a newspaper in Boston 1734.

\* Macaulay says Charles II allowed no paper to appear at the close of his reign but the London Gazette, printed Mondays & Thursdays. It contained generally a royal proclamation, or 3 long addresses, notices of two or three promotions, a skinning of a thief, a description of a highway man, a cock fight, a reward for a stray dog. The whole made up 7 moderate pages. No political intelligence was published except what the Court pleased. Important debates in parliament & important state trials were passed over in silence.

The Coffee Houses were places for news — substitutes for a Journal.

People at a distance were informed by News Letters. To pick up news and prepare the letters was a regular calling. They were sent to provincial cities, and to the gentry & clergy. Contained more news than London Gazette.

L'Estrange published the Observer to counteract the Times & Mercury.



The old hypothesis that Mahomet's system was the result of deceit & imposture has no longer a professed existence among us, though lingering in some corners. It is incontrovertible that no really superior man has ever been able to exercise any powerful influence over his fellows without being first intimately convinced himself. This principle is now universally received. Mahomet was an earnest sincere man, preaching a sort of Theism or natural religion. He believed that he was a prophet, an apostle of God. He had, as he supposed, prophetic dreams and angelic visitations. Those extravagant stories that have been published did not come from him, but his followers, though he did affirm that he had supernatural signs and angelic agencies. He, like Swedenborg, was doubtless sincere, & did actually think he saw visions and signs. Like Swedenborg, he was subject to extraordinary physical excitements, trances & derangements. Science now surmises the existence of certain occult but appreciable connections between irregular mental experiences and unusual states of body.

Irving's Life of Mahomet, [our Washington Irving] "is an elegant & jejune compilation of legends" - not such as the English public need, says the North British Review.

Mahomet believed in his revelations; but they show his character. His sensuality in Paradise (greatly improved by his followers, but still in the Koran) betrays his weakness in that respect, & that of the Arabs.

The Theism of Mahomet was a real step in advance of the religion that prevailed in the East, which it displaced. [The Reviewer is not very explicit - does not say whether he means Christianity, so called, as well as Paganism, seems to include all - perhaps not.]

Mahometanism is, however, narrow, poor & erroneous, unsatisfying, and of little value compared with real Christianity.

The old writers of Chivalry & Romance appear strangely unacquainted with the customs, manners & religion of the Mahometans. They represent them as worshipping idols, or confound them with Pagans. See Sismondi's account of Mahomet - pp. XIII, XIV &c. Percy's Religion.

## Wales.

The London Quarterly Review says the Commissioners (see page 323) gave too easy credence to misrepresentations and lies. They were deceived from not being able to converse in Welsh. Their pictures are too highly colored. There is less perjury, less dishonesty and less of some other evils than they supposed, though many things are bad enough.

L.R. Oct. 1849.

The L.R. says, Methodism & Dissent in Wales, have given the middle & lower classes a democratic & litigious tone - a marked energy & perseverance. "Strength of purpose is the usual inheritance of Puritanism" Ibid.



## Reports of Commissioners of Inquiry into the State of Education in Wales. 1847.

Population 1846 - about 1,060,000.

Only 78,000 children or less than one in 8 of the population attend the schools at all; and a large portion of these attend but a short time - the average does not exceed one year, and that is done irregularly, by fits & starts. - The males who attend are much more numerous than the females.

Females receive less attention than males at school, and the female peasantry are grossly ignorant.

The language of most of the people is Welsh, but the school books are in English, and the children are taught English, for the most part. English is the language of business, & children are sent to school to learn English, money being the sole motive; the parents suppose that English will be more advantageous for their children.

Teachers. Many more masters than mistresses. Their income from 21. 14. 9 to 26. 4. 0. a year - [from about 100 to 125 dollars a year - they board themselves] Their qualifications are low. They are taken from various trades - have some knowledge of English, and are supposed to know how to read, write & cipher. Many know little of English, and not much of other things pretended to be taught.

The scholars use the English Bible & Catechism and Hymn books, and commit to memory; but understand very little. They repeat lessons parrot-like. The Church Catechism is put into the mouths but not into the minds of children. The Catechism is a mere chaos of words to them. Some can repeat the whole or part of the 39 articles, but have no conception of their meaning. They are ignorant about Christ and other persons & things in scripture; they are ignorant on common subjects of secular information.

School Houses. These are wretched in Middle & South Wales - cold, comfortless places, often built for other purposes, without proper desks or other apparatus - some are mere hovels. The houses are better in N. Wales. The schools are Private Adventure Schools, not of a sect and Church of England schools. Some belong to other denominations & to B. & F. School Society. The children generally learn their lessons aloud and altogether, creating a Babel of tongues.

The greater part of the expense of the schools comes from the poor - a fact discreditable to the wealthy. The poor pay 100£ to 43£ paid by the wealthy. In private adventure schools, the common charge for reading writing & arithmetic is 3d or 4d a week; less in some.

Sunday Schools. These are an oasis in the desert. These are democratic - employ 61,000 voluntary teachers, with about 7 scholars each. The language used is Welsh; the subjects religious, and children and older persons are interested, except in the Church schools which are spiritless, monotonous & repulsive. - The Dissenting Schools are much more spirited and effective.



# 324. Wales.

## Schools - continued.

Sunday Schools -	No. of Scholars of all ages	many adults, among Dissenters,
In Church of England Schools -	35,858	
" Baptists	28,734	These numbers measure the relative forces of different sects in Wales? & do it accurately.
" Calvinistic Methodists.	103,495	
" Independents -	59,573	
" Wesleyan Methodists -	25,263	
" Others	3,407	
	256,270	in 2664 schools.

## Want of Privies. [Musc. 10. 162. Musc. 1. 166. Musc. 11. 300.]

"The almost total absence of necessary outbuildings to the schools, and the dirty habits in consequence appear to have astonished the commissioners.

The church yards in some places supply the deficiency."

In a town in Cardiganshire, "The churchyard, in a conspicuous place, gives evidence of the absence of necessary outbuildings in the town" This does not refer to schools.

In Mounmouthshire mining district, "the necessary outbuildings in most cases do not exist at all."

Dirt & uncleanliness of the inhabitants is common.

## Condition of the People of Wales.

Morals are low.

Chastity among females is much disregarded. This is almost universally admitted, as to the young.

Cause 1. The imperfect arrangements of houses. Both sexes often sleep in the same room, from necessity.

2. Nightly prayer meetings are places where lovers meet, and bad conduct takes place in returning home.

3. "Bunclling or courtship on beds during the night, a practice still widely prevailing," Cause a want of chastity. Another says, "the system of bunclling, or something analogous to it prevails extensively & leads to bad results."

This prevalent want of chastity in Welsh girls arises from the absence of checks, rather than from the indulgence of them, & betokens much less depravity than in persons more favorably situated. "The first breach of chastity in the lower classes is almost always under a promise of marriage. Few will listen to proposals from a man of superior rank, whose marriage would be out of the question."

"Prostitution and conjugal infidelity are nearly unknown in Wales."

Want of veracity, want of honesty, want of temperance are quite common, but their immoralities do not grow into crimes. Great crimes are very rare in Wales - few districts in Europe are so free. But the standard of minor morals is low. Acts of malice are rare. The people have much natural benevolence.



Wales

Monmouthshire contains the Mining District. Evil in every shape is rampant here. Drunkenness, Profanity, Lewdness, Disregard to truth, dirt & filth are rife in this iron district. The ignorance is astonishing. The Masters or Employers of the people are unfeeling and look only to their profit. They encourage the spirit shops, and their policy is to have the people spend their earnings, so that they cannot have the means of striking for wages. "The degraded condition of the people is entirely the fault their employers". Yet these workmen are kind-hearted.

The poorer classes in N. Wales are far superior to the same class of Englishmen, in being able to read the bible in their own language, and have a variety of religious & poetical literature. They are skilled in discussing religious topics. For secular subjects they have neither literature nor a language. P.S. It appears from this that poorer classes in England cannot read the bible.

The Welsh seem to have no school books in the Welsh language. They have Bibles, Testaments and Primers in both Welsh and English, but not other books in Welsh. [There are 405 books in Welsh, of which 309 relate to religion or poetry; 50 to science, 46 to general subjects.]

*MS. 11.304.* Cottages are wretchedly bad, and akin to Irish hovels. Brick chimneys are rare; those which exist are in the shape of large cones, the top of basket work. Most Cottages have but one room which serves for living & sleeping. A large dresser & shelves usually form the partition between the two. Where there are separate beds for the family, a curtain or low board is the only division, with no regular partition. In some cottages pigs & poultry form part of the family, & they are very dirty. Clothes are hung to dry on tombstones in some places.

Tram-roads are mentioned - not described. Perjury in courts of justice is not uncommon.

The Welsh language commonly maintains its ground. The English is not liked; but it is deemed the road to gain & advancement. Nearly half the inhabitants of Montgomeryshire speak English.

"An old & cherished language cannot be taught down in schools. The language of lessons cannot make head against the language of life."

Those who profit by the labor of the poor too often have not the slightest regard to their welfare. They neglect their mental & moral necessities & in many cases give no heed to their physical destitution.

Farm laborers in some places get only 7/6 a week for wages.

[Blackwood estimates the average of wages in Wales for Agricultural laborers @ 1/6 a day or 7/6 per week - thinks this is the minimum. Democracy, Blackwood says, is widely diffused in Wales among farmers & laborers. The jails in Wales are empty. Foreigners reside in Wales.]



## Things in England &amp; elsewhere.

British Ministers of State. The Westminster Review describes Pitt, Fox and others who were, & the head in England in the days of Bonaparte, as inexperienced, inefficient men, "mere parliamentary declaimers," who knew little else of man's life, but understood "the pleasing mysteries of the gaming table and other English aristocratic occupations." He calls Pitt "a big drum, a thing of sound & fury signifying nothing."

The Duke of Alhol has 100,000 acres of land shut up for red deer. W. Rev. - 1848.

Equal Leirs of inheritance. These existed in the greater part of Holland & Switzerland, before they were introduced into France by the revolution. They have been beneficial in all these countries; and they do not in France lead to those small subdivisions which were predicted. The number of proprietors in France has not increased as fast as the population; & much of the increase has been in towns. In 1815, there were 10,083,757 properties in France, and in 1842 11,571,844. The number of proprietors is much less, as many proprietors own several properties, so called. Properties are registered for taxation. W. R.

The Mexicans rank low in the scale of humanity. They are deficient in moral and physical organization. They are treacherous, cunning, indolent. They are incapable of self government. There are two classes, high and low - no middle class. The peasantry are little better than serfs. Law or justice hardly exists, even in name. W. R. 1848.

Householdings in France, deposited in boxes provided for them, were 40,500 in 1784. In 1820 102,103; in 1831, 122,981; in 1845, 130,000. Many infanticides. — Drunkenness is another vice of operatives in France, resorted to to make him forget his hard life.

Conscripts. In the agricultural districts, 4,029 out of every 10,000 men in France are rejected as unfit for the conscription or for soldiers. In the manufacturing districts almost 9 in 10 are rejected. These men are rejected on account of infirmity or size; they do not come up to the requirements of the law of conscription. The French race appears to be degenerating physically. Westminster Review 11 p. 1848.

Education has been a popular interest in Scotland for near two centuries back. Blackwood May 48







m. 2. 292  
m. 7. 317

The Lottery is a passion with the Italian and Lottery offices are allowed to be open on Sundays and Saint days. This is a most efficient cause of demoralization, encouraged by the government. The papal government licenses a stretched Dream Book, a volume of 300 pages, to encourage lotteries. The Dream book pretends to inform you what numbers in the lottery are signified by the objects seen in dreams.

Books to enlighten the people are carefully excluded but those which encourage folly & superstition are licensed. We must not indulge in too sanguine anticipations of the future prospect of Italy.

[These things were written before the late revolution at Rome.

A letter from Florence 1856, says there is scarcely a family in the country below the Pope's obedi-<sup>W. Review.</sup>ence, without a copy of the Lottery Guide Book, published at Rome in great quantities by the press of St. Michael & licensed by the Holy See, whose Lottery Office has branches in all towns of the Peninsula entitled "The surest means of becoming rich in the Lottery or general list of Dreams with the corresponding numbers &c."

Women in Florence under Louis XV. & XVI. They had received from their male relatives a shameless example of profligacy, which they were not slow to follow. When women fall, they fall deeper than men! The abandoned conduct of ladies of rank threw a great reproach on their order, & threw doubt on the legitimacy of the most noble families. The corrupting tendency of a despotic government had reached the women. They ruled by indirect power. Indirect power is necessarily immoral. Westminster Review. Apr. 1850.

Paris University, in Petrarch's Day 1. (1304 to 1374.) The students led dissolute lives. They were prone to intoxication & fond of cudgelling. Yet they were seeking to become doctors in Theology! Paris was very dirty. [English the same.]

Naples. Petrarch says "Human blood was shed at N. with as little remorse as that of brute animals." There were games similar to the old gladiators.

Corruption of manners, in Petrarch's time; all seen vicarious. Petrarch, though of the clergy, had a mistress and children; to say nothing of Laura. Boccaccio had a mistress a married woman. The clergy were dissolute, & the nobles and others. Wantonness & rebellion prevailed at Avignon among priests & others. Petrarch & Boccaccio wrote against the priests & their vices.

Hewers of Wood, &c. Blackwood says, May 1848, "The great body of men will remain hewers of wood and drawers of water, because nature never intended them for any other destination, and she has rendered them incapable of discharging the duties of any other station."

[This is the Tory doctrine every where. It is not nature but men that have rendered other men thus incapable.]



<sup>4.3.17</sup>  
<sup>2.12.4</sup> **Quakers.** At the Restoration in 1660, there were 700 Quakers in English prisons for contempt. Charles II had the credit of setting them free, but within two years of the Restoration "more than 4200 Quakers, men & women were reported to be in English prisons". They were persecuted under the Commonwealth & under Charles II. They sometimes conducted strangely.

P. 389  
George Fox says:—"Some [friends] have been moved to go naked in their streets [London, &c.] in the other bowels days and since as signs of their [the people's] nakedness, and have declared among them that God would strip them of their hypocritical professions and make them as bare naked as they were." This written 1666. Mentioned by others.

The abrogation of the penal laws against them repressed their wild enthusiasm, 1695.

Fox did not require of his followers a particular dress. The Lord, he supposed, had forbid him to put off his hat, or scrape with his leg or bow to any one, or to bid people Good Evening or Good Morrow, & had required him to "thow and thee every man without distinction."

There were fierce written assaults upon the Quakers and fierce defence & attacks from them, before and after the Toleration Act. Bennet in 1705 declared that all sober persons thought that many Quakers "ought to be rather burnt than comforted".

The Independent Whig for 1720 says it would be difficult to find a Quaker who cannot read, "whereas half the common people of the church of England, especially in the country, cannot read a word".

Among Quakers, the ministry has principally fallen into the hands of women—this is an evident token of a decaying sect. This practice gives the women pre-eminence of mind and self-correction, & calls out pathetic eloquence. Mrs. Fry had this gift.

The Society of Friends is gradually disappearing in Europe and America.

See Quakers - Miscel. 5. p. 100. Misc. 2. 206, 297. Misc. 8. 332.  
See do. Don. 9. p. 228. - 3173 in English prisons 1662. Con. 9. 157.  
Many, as related to Penn. Misc. 3. 234-237. Misc. 9. 34, 44, 338.

James II, according to Macaulay, found or put in prison a great number of Quakers, & by orders of April 18. 1685, James, influenced by Penn, released from prison about 1500 Quakers. (one says 1460)

"Penn was cajoled into bearing a part in some unjustifiable transactions of which others enjoyed the profit". Macaulay says "these transactions" must be condemned by the general sense of all honest men. These things took place when he was on good terms with the Court.

Laws of Charles II. against Quakers 1662 - Con. & Misc. 1. 184

Penn's connections with James - his attendance when men & women were executed - innocent persons - he went to see a woman burnt at the stake. See Macaulay  
His agency for maid of honor in a scandalous transaction.



## Things in England.

Musc. 1. 64

**The Laws.** The expense & delay of the law are proverbial, and occasion great discontent embittered by a sense of injustice, in those below the more wealthy classes. He refers particularly to the court of Chancery. The lawyers grow fat by the cumbrous machinery. The master in Chancery & the Taxing Master received £72. 2 35 for fees, from Nov. 1848 to Nov. 1849.

Musc. 1. 64

**Ecclesiastical Courts** have an income of £86.000 a year, derived almost entirely from matters of probate. The business is badly performed, fees not sanctioned by law, wills & records placed in buildings exposed to danger. — The present system is a denial of justice & causes wretchedness & ruin. The bill of a proctor & attorney for obtaining letters of Administration on an estate, a little over 100, was £19. 12. 0. This was not a contentious case, but one in common form. W. Review. 1850

The Reviewer refers to the Probate Courts of Massachusetts by way of contrast.

Musc. 1. 64

**Lawyers.** Shakspeare paid a compliment to popular instinct, when he made Jack Cade's insurgents say, "The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers" as trading politicians, as bad law makers, as vile tools of party, as seekers of high office by vile indirection, as men fed by and supporting the worst administration of justice. Lawyers are the especial pests of the commonwealth. London Weekly Despatch, Jan 5. 1851

**London in old Times.** Streets were unpaved, and unlighted, except by lanterns in the steeple of St. Bow Church. The inhabitants, & children threw the offal into the streets, & swine revelled in the gutters. The streets or thoroughfares, "in the absence of water closets or drains" became the sewers, or common sewerage, of the city. Principal streets were paved in 12th century. Minor streets were hardly passable. Some streets were "foul & full of pits, & sloughs" in time of Henry VIII.

**Queen Elizabeth** fastened her garments with skewers, breakfasted upon salt fish & beer, using her fingers at this & all other times; the rooms in her palace were strewn, not with carpets, but dead rushes & dried leaves. her carriage did not require so many cabs; and she was sometimes mounted on a pillion. London paper.



# Things in England.

*Tithe*. &c. The means of the established church divided amongst all, give about 250£ each. It may be taken at 4,000,000£. The income of bishops is undergoing diminution; when a bishop dies, some of the income is transferred to the working clergy.

Tithe rigorously exacted would amount to 10 millions a year; but the law obliges the clergy to take <sup>only</sup> what they have been accustomed to take from time out of mind. Only  $\frac{1}{4}$  of the tithe are taken in full, or in kind, amounting to 700,000£; the rest of the clergy take about 2,500,000£ as compensation for tithe. [He does not tell whence the remaining 800,000£ is derived.]

He makes the clergy 16,000; that is,  $16,000 \times 250$  is equal to 4 millions. *Weekly Dispatch Jan. 1857.*

*Illegitimacy* and *Unchastity* in England. See *Nat. Hist.* page 324 p. 306. Blackwood says the common notion prevalent in Wales, among the lower classes, is, that want of chastity before marriage is no vice, though afterwards considered a crime, & rarely committed. The existence of these lax notions goes back many centuries. "In England the same ideas and practices exist universally, among the male portion, at least of the people, and pass without any thing beyond 'a formal, we might almost say, a legal reprimand'." In France, Spain, Portugal, Italy, and, it may be, other countries of Europe this laxity exists not so much before as after marriage.

*Illegitimate Children* in N. Wales show an excess of  $12\frac{3}{4}$  per cent above the average of all England & Wales, in the registered births. — In a union of 48 parishes in Wales, there are 500 bastard children supported out of the poor rates. Yet the married state is duly honored. "We could pick out county after county in England where the morality of the lower orders is little, if at all, elevated above the Welsh standard, and where a pregnant bride is of the most ordinary occurrence." (Blackwood.)

Browning in his account of England, says the illegitimates are 1 to 19 legitimate births, in all England. The Prussian traveller, von Raumer, who copies this from him, says England is not worse than other countries in this respect. This is only  $5\frac{1}{4}$  per cent. (1835.) See Estimate of 5 per cent for London, Postlethwaite 1757, *Misc.* 4. 299.

*Illegitimates* in Sweden & various parts of Europe. *Nat. Hist.* 2. 19 See *Misc.* 8. 366, as to several countries. See France, *Misc.* 12. p. 16.

" 2. 284.  
" 5. 133.

*Illegitimate Nobles* — *M. G.* 327.  
Influence in the Throning *M. H.* 263



*Peervants* &c. Mr. Witley, a Recorder in London  
 p. 333. attributes the increase of thefts among domestic servants  
 h. 309. to insufficient wages: this exposes the parties to great  
 temptation, he says. There is a great want of good  
 treatment; also, the Dispatch says.

1308 Paley says:—It is a mistake to suppose  
 the rich man maintaining his servants, tradesmen,  
 tenants and laborers; the truth is, they maintain him.  
 Their industry supplies his table, furnishes his wardrobe,  
 builds his houses, adorns his equipage, provides his  
 amusements.

Paley says there is <sup>no</sup> foundation for the opinion that  
 good usage is thrown away upon men in low and  
 ordinary stations; they are affected by benefits in  
 the same way that all others are!

Weekly Dispatch

p. 183.  
 301 Crimmes & their causes. Much depends upon  
 the physical condition of the people. When employment  
 is easy to be had, crimes are scarce; when men  
 are in want, crimes are greatly increased.

No lasting moral impression can be made  
 on an empty stomach!

The Crimmes in England, as published in *The*  
*Weekly Dispatch* are innumerable, and  
 a storming; and the Dispatch says, increasing.

The Oppression of the great in Church & State,  
 of the feeble & the poor, is not uncommon.  
 The former are paid extravagantly for every thing  
 they do, or pretend to do; the others are paid for  
 nothing sufficiently.

Crimmes—See Miscel 5. v. 98-99. 133. Miscel 8. 363. <sup>crimes in England.</sup>  
 m. 15. 230. Miscel 2. 251. Con. 9. 405.  
 crimes from bad laws. Con. 9. 402. & Miscel 6. 344  
 Augustin's notion about crimes. Nat. Hist. 2. 87. Misc. 2. 159.  
 Crimes to be prevented. Nat. Hist. 2. 86  
 Crimes & punishments. Holinshead. Misc. 1. 64-66.  
 Causes of poverty & crime. Con. 9. 394.  
 crimes & criminals in England p. 398 of this  
 Thieves in England and what rules have made them  
 Middleton 1806. Misc. 9. 43.  
 Crimes greater in villages than in cities. Sol. ques. Misc. 10. 41.  
 Crimes & convicts made by social evils. Misc. 11. 240

Index of criminals. G. W. Peck, on examining faces of convicts at  
 Chatham, & Dublin, says they are clearly distinguished "one  
 rich cheek bones with a gay, alerting, unsuspicious, and forward  
 expression, low." He thinks such faces are hereditary and "tell  
 of a series of crimes." Says such faces are not to be seen in U.S.  
 "Some of the convicts had faces of m. had eyes with pupils no bigger  
 than pin aples!"

[Crimes cont. in m. 15. 230]



Things in England  
Burning London  
"Kitchen's"

22<sup>nd</sup> Bury lodged in a small room with a sanded floor in Edinburgh 1797  
"kitchen sanded & lightly swept over in waves" ill. 8.33.4

"Sandal ParLOUR" - is an expression used by

Min. 2 26.5

" 2.267

2.24

4. 2370

7.523

Mr. Borrow, in "Lancashire", in reference to England,

In the present century it was an urn.  
The nicely sanded floor," a Goldsmith - see Miscel. 2. 265. M. 4. 239.  
<sup>"Jenkins for "our parish" has "sanded on the floor"</sup>

papers. Patching papers seems common in

Com. g. 239.

11. 2. 2420

England now, or since this century commenced  
Blinpat was esteemed valuable as a medicine.

*Ed. Thores in England,* from Kenilworth. see con. q. 308.

"Old Things in England," from Kenilworth. See Con. 9. 308.

м. л. 20807

The Old Stews, or Brothels. [Miscell. 2. p. 28. 137. 144

Stews are mentioned by P. Plowman, Chaucer, Gower, &c. in connection with taverns, & riots. "Wine taverns, Ale taverns, and stews" used by Th. More, as places of wickedness — "Tavern or a stew". B. Jonson.

Latimer said in a sermon before the king;—"Ye  
have put down the stews; but what is the matter  
mouled? ye have but changed the place."

Poussant says the stewardholder was not to admit married women, nor those who had the infirmity of burning, nor were they to keep open their houses on Sundays. He says the stews were licensed by government, under certain regulations and farmed out.

Strawberries

Mar. 2, 20

12. 182

all three together went,

{ Spenser. Fairy Queen.  
Did they grow in woods?

To the green wood to gather strawberries

Penance, enjoined by priests, is to go naked on pilgrimage, or barefoot. Chaucer  
To strip Naked, or nearly so - seems to have  
Chaucer notices a

Ms. 2.29

5. A woman who stripped herself "before the folk," and in her smock with foot & head all bare" went to visit her father's house. (R. Dix under strips).

For Th. More says "I caused a servant to strip himself  
before mine household, for amendment of himself and  
example of such other";

in Gormer - perhaps a priestly pendance. They went "as those folk of ...".

original notes. [To keep stark naked, but with a]

(To Sleep stark naked, old way. Com. 4. 263.

Marginal notes

ist. - 1744. v.

Milton refers to men "whose learning dwells in  
quaint stuffings". South refers to authors "whose margin  
is stuffed".

6.  
Oct. 2, 1998

Spirits. Glanville thinks Spirits have a kindness for us, and may be inclined to give us some general notice of uncommon events which they foresee. A. die.

12337

servants. Leighton says of them; "the greater part are either closely fraudulent & deceitful, or grossly stubborn and disobedient, abusing the mildness and lenity of their masters, or murmuring at their just severity." Com. in 1 Pet. II. 18-20



## Richard Hooker.

Author of "The Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity".

His life was written by Izaak Walton, 1664.

"It is not to be doubted" that Richard Hooker was born at Heavitree near or in Exeter, "about" the year 1553. His father's name not given. R.H. had an uncle, John Hooker, chamberlain of Exeter. R.H. married a wife, of whom no good is said.

Walton says hard things of Nonconformists.

He says there were many atheists in England in time of Elizabeth, "the slaves of vice," -

The common people and women & shopkeepers began to think they were able to judge about religious matters.

The Earl of Leicester favored the Nonconformists.

Richard Hooker is said to have died in 1600 but his birth & death seem somewhat uncertain.

Had 4 daughters, Alice, Cicily, Jane, Margaret. Two died before adult age.

He published 5 Books & left 3 more unfinished. 2 large Vols. 8vo. published 1694, 1698.

People are nothing in his view. "If it be granted ~~as~~ that it is unlawful for private men to dispute which is the best state of civil polity, is there any reason in the world why they should be to judge what kind of ecclesiastical government is best?" [He attributes the former part to Calvin & quotes his Institution. He seems to follow Calvin in that, & to extend the same exclusion of the people from religious subjects.].

Women. Hooker says the Puritans bestow most labor "to win & retain them whose judgments are commonly weakest by reason of their sex." He admits that there are good women. [See Jer. Taylor. Misc. 9. 33.]

Clergy & Licency. He says the clergy are no more required to live in poverty as the Apostles did, than the laity are required to be as those who lived under the Apostles.

He thinks some things not done in the Apostles' times may be done now, & some things done under the Apostles would not now be proper.

m. 2. 230 | Anabaptists. He is severe upon them, and attributes many, to him, strange opinions to them. He says they called the days of the week. He st. S. Second Third Day, &c. Does not allude to the manna. They received the Eucharist after supper. They went against magistrates & oaths, & for community of goods. They were for relieving the miseries of the common sort. (He is evidently treating of the German Anabaptists.)



# Richard Hooker's Eccles. Polity.

P. 366 Puritans maintained that scripture is the only rule of all things which in this life may be done by man. (Too rigid)  
 Hooker says, "What God doth neither command nor forbid, the same he permitteth with approbation either to be done or left undone." (A loose principle.) [See *genuine*, or *Denon*, 17398. *another thing*, 1738.  
 Both parties quoted the Fathers.

Puritans maintained that there must be in scripture a form of church polity, which may not be altered.

Hooker maintained that the scripture left some things to the discretion of the church.

The Puritans objected to Marrying with a Ring, Crossing in Baptism, Kneeling at the Lords Supper, observing Festivals, enjoining abstinence from meats, Churching of women after child birth, degrees taken by divines in Universities, Sundry church offices dignities & callings. [Bacon objects to several of these, *ibid.* 11. 400.]

Hooker said that articles of faith or belief must always remain the same; but as to outward polity, the church had power to make canons, laws, decrees, which laws may be changed.

## Mosaic Laws.

1st. Moral. Hooker says these cannot be altered, because the end for which they were made, doth always remain the same.

2 Ceremonial. The end of laws having ceased, they cease.

3 Judicial. If the end continue, as in a great part of ancient judicials, yet as there is not in all respects the same subject or matter for which they were first made, they may be changed. — Laws ordained of God, & the end continuing, may cease if by alterations of persons or times they are insufficient for that end. By the law, the thief was to restore fourfold; this proving insufficient, a more severe punishment may be resorted to.

Hooker says, "God never ordained anything that could be bettered." "Man cannot better any thing that God hath done." "Yet many things he hath ordained, that have been changed, & that for the better."

Hooker is constantly appealing to past ages and all ages

Rites & Ceremonies. He says, "words both because they are common and do not so strongly move the fancy of man, are for the most part but slightly heard: and therefore it hath been provided that the deeds of men should pass with words, & with certain sensible actions, the memory of which is more easy & durable than the memory of speech."



**Ceremonies.** Hooker says one council decrees "that Christians should not deck their houses with bay leaves and green boughs because the Pagans did use to do so."

u. 232  
109  
M. 2. 1. 34  
u. 2. 1. 35  
"To rectify a crooked stick we bend it on the contrary side as far as it was at the first on that side from whence we draw it, & so in the end it cometh to a middle between both."

[Hooker abridges this from Cartwright.]

Misc. 2.  
273.  
"The use of wafers & cakes, the custom of godfathers and godmothers in baptism, are things not commanded nor forbidden in scripture, things which have been of old and are retained in the church of Rome at this very hour. Singular reasoning! So they may be continued in the church of England. Other things are supported on similar grounds. [Supplement argument 348.]

Hooker & the Puritans both seemed to think that Faith must be the same everywhere, but rites and ceremonies might differ in different churches and nations. — Hooker did not admit that they might vary in the same church, as the Church of England.

Misc. 2.  
209  
u. 2. 1. 35  
u. 2. 1. 36  
**Standing in Prayer.** "The ancient use of the church throughout all Christendom was for 50 Days after Easter, (in Pentecost,) in like sort on all the Sundays throughout the whole year, their manner was to stand at prayer, whereupon their meetings unto that purpose on those days had the name of Stations given them." "Of which custom Tertullian speaketh in this wise; — 'It is not with us thought fit either to fast on the Lord's day, or to pray kneeling.' The Council of Nice decreed that standing we make our prayers to the Lord throughout all churches." Hooker says or quotes all this; he does it to show that each church should be uniform; and that the church of England might differ from others.

Misc. 2. 188  
**Religion & Justice.** "So natural is the union of religion with justice that we may boldly deem there is neither where both are not." — "The formalities of justice do but serve to smother right, and that ordained for the common good, is through shameful abuse, made the cause of common misery!" where judges follow the business as a trade with unconscionable thirst of gain.

**True Religion** of all true virtues, is the root. It maketh better governors, & more obedient inferiors. He admits that Turks & Pagans impute the same effects to religion, not without truth.

**Atheists in Eng.** — he notices. He wished to have their liberty restrained.



**Zeal** - unless rightly guided, does much harm; it needeth a sober guide.

**Fear** - breedeth superstition likewise, if it has not the true light. It is a good solicitor to devotion.

**Superstition** knoweth not the right kind, nor the due measure, of actions belonging to the service of God.

Many Rites & customs, become superstitions, some in their beginnings not evil.

He is inclined to call men of old and old customs, wise. He thinks "ancient ordinances, rites & long approved customs" should not be changed without urgent necessity. He mentions "our venerable predecessors."

"The love of things ancient doth argue stayed men";

"Levity & want of experience maketh apt unto innovations";

The Church. "That which the church by her ecclesiastical authority shall probably think & define to be true & good, must in congruency & reason overrule all other inferior judgments whatsoever."

[He is full popery.]

Puritans argued against splendid churches and the dedication of churches.

Hooker justifies dedications by the Jews, the Christians after Constantine, &c. He says some held that "the presence of a Christian multitude, and the duties of religion performed amongst them made the place of their assembly public" [that is, a place appropriated to religious worship, I suppose]. He thinks differently.

**Dedication.** "When we sanctify or hallow churches, it is only to testify that we make them places of public resort, that we invest God himself with them that we sever them from common uses."

We not to forsake this custom, he says, because idolaters dedicate temples.

**Naming Churches from Saints & Angels.**

This is an ancient custom. That is his reason. He ~~says~~ they are consecrated not to the saint but to the Lord.

**Form of Churches.** Some fancy they are formed after the Jewish Temple. He does not deny this. He says our churches are divided by certain partitions like the temple but not so many. We have one partition, to separate the clergy from the rest.

**Sumptuousness of Churches.** Here he goes to Solomon's Temple; and asks "if God hath revealed that it is his delight to dwell beggarly? and that he taketh no pleasure to be worshipped saving only in poor cottages?"

**Noiness of Churches.** "Churches receive as every thing else their chief perfection from the end whereunto they serve, which is, and being the public worship of God, they are in this consideration houses of greater dignity than any provided for meaner purposes." [See Consecration, Prayers, & the like. Publications of Ed. Soc.]



## Holiness of Churches - continued

He does not boldly take the ground that Churches are more holy than other buildings because they have been consecrated; but intimates that places not consecrated have less dignity and honor.

He thinks "it is a sensible help to stir up devotion" to believe in the majesty & holiness of the place.

Preaching is openly publishing the truth of God. Reading the Scriptures is a second kind of preaching.

In some foreign churches, the scriptures are read before the preaching or service.

Catechizing may be in schools, private families, or it may be a kind of preaching - in the open hearing place.

Preaching, he says, is publishing.

Teaching, he intimates, is not preaching.

Reading the Bible in the church was observed by some Puritans, but not by all.

Apocrypha. He says this is read in the church, though contrary to his opinion. He says it is not read as scripture, but as a human composition. He tries to justify the church. Puritans were strongly opposed. - Some of the church lessons were chosen from the Apocrypha. - Judith, Tobit, Baruch, Wisdom and Ecclesiasticus.

Sermons much esteemed by the Puritans - "overvalued" as Hooker thought, & Reading the scriptures undervalued. He labors much on these subjects.

Public Prayer - he refers to Scriptures, but more to the fathers.

His arguments for a form of prayer are some of them very flimsy. - Adduces Moses song after the destruction of Pharaoh to justify forms of prayer. Refers to the Jewish "books of common prayer".

Puritans objected to many things in the Prayer Book - to praying for deliverance from sudden death, &c.

Attire of Priests. He uses the old argument, that the scriptures do not condemn the wearing of such garments as are allowed by the church of England. Goes back to past ages, &c.

Gesture in Prayer, &c. He leaves objections unanswered mostly. Length of Service. Shortness of sermons, is objected to by Puritans. Cartwright, the Puritan, says an hour and a half for the whole service is ordinarily thought reasonable in Reformed Churches.

Hooker says the services of the church <sup>of England</sup> are only two hours long, when an hour is allowed for a sermon. It seems that the whole form of prayer required an hour. He insists that the church service is only half an hour longer than that of the reformed church, which he seems to think of little consequence!



Lessons & Prayers intermingled was disliked by the Puritans.

Puritans thought there were too many prayers for earthly things in the Liturgy; & that the Lord's Prayer was repeated too often. The repetitions after the minister they objected to.

Singing the Hymns & Psalms of Scripture, and manner of reading them. [The objections & the reply I do not fully comprehend.]

Music with Psalms. Hooker maintaining that mere harmony of sounds, "without Ditty or matter", being carried by the ear to the soul, is greatly available to bring to a perfect temper whatever is troubled, sovereign against melancholy, forcible to draw forth tears of devotion, able to move & moderate all affections.

It seems that some of the Church public prayer was sung. "Singing or saying Psalms" was a part of common prayer. The people repeated; there was singing of one party, then of another; of the minister, then of the people, one part answering another.

Cartwright says this form of singing is banished from all reformed churches (England of course excepted). Hooker justifies it as does every thing else done by the Church of England. This way of singing has been received in all Christian churches for many ages - this is his argument - always sufficient. The Fathers of the Church, meaning those who lived centuries after Christ, did so & so. "Let ancient customs prevail," he says.

Cartwright says it is lawful for the people, all of them jointly, to sing psalms to praise God. Yet in the manner of singing used by the Church only a few sang. Hooker does not reply to this, except by referring to the ancient custom; does not say whether all or only a few should sing.

Psalmody, or singing psalms or Hymns in metre. *M. 4. 294* is not alluded to by Hooker; there evidently was not much if any of this done in the Epis. Church. The Psalms & Hymns were in prose. The Hymns were only parts of Scripture, not in the Psalms of David.

Sacraments, are "visible signs of invisible grace". So he terms them. He attributes great things to them.

*M. 2. 128*  
*Con. 9. 360.*

He hardly allows of salvation without Baptism - has a long argument to show that uncaptised infants of Christian parents may be saved.

Hooker says, Tertullian & Augustine allowed of baptism by any man in case of necessity; and he thinks women are also included.

*Con. 9. 366*

Cartwright went against all baptizers, but ministers, he said it was most false that infants that died unbaptized were damned.

Women might baptize in case of necessity, according to Hooker. but not according to Cartwright. Those baptized by laymen were not to be re-baptized, according to Hooker & others.



\* Baptism with him is regeneration -  
 11.2.126 The Cross in Baptism, he admits, has no authority  
 in Scripture - He justifies it as he does other things.  
 Has many pages of (to me) nonsense on the subject.

The Eucharist as well as Baptism giveth grace.  
 His notions are popish.

Kneeling he calls "the gesture of piety," "which fitness  
 and great decency hath made usual." He admits  
 that Christ did not kneel - but approved the common  
 custom.

The Eucharist given to the sick near death is for their  
 comfort. That is the main reason assigned, though it  
 has other efficacy.

11.2.276 Festival Days. Festival solemnity is a due  
 mixture of Praise, Bounty and Rest. God  
 was offended with the manner in which the  
 Jews kept their Sabbaths & Solemn Days. Ba. 1. 13.  
 Hooker, as elsewhere, goes back to the Jews, and to the  
 fathers, as Augustine, &c.  
 Fasts are sustained in the same manner.

### Matrimony.

p. 306 "Woman was even in her first estate framed  
 by nature not only after in time, but inferior in  
 excellency also unto man."

"The very imbecility of their nature & sex doth bind  
 women to a duty, viz. to be always directed, guided  
 and ordered by others."

2. 335 The Ring is a pledge of faith & fidelity, & was so used  
 by the heathen. The sponsors (future husband) gave  
 the woman a ring as assurance of future marriage.  
 This heathen custom came into the Church, and is  
 "harmless". Hooker thinks.

To end the solemnity of marriage with receiving  
 the Sacrament is a holy custom, Hooker thinks,  
 & he thinks the Church of England is blameable in  
 not putting it more in use.

Churching of Women. He goes for this of course  
 11.4.226 He thinks women should return thanks.

Cartwright said that if it was the custom to give  
 thanks in the Church for every benefit either equal  
 or greater than this, there would be no time for  
 preaching.

Oblations to the Clergy on this & other occasions "is an  
 ancient & convenient custom". "For the life of  
 the clergy is spent in the service of God".

Whatever ministers receive, he considers as offered  
 to God.

\* Hammond says - "Baptism is an initiation into the church, is an entrance  
 into a Christian & eternal life". Absurdity!



Burial.

M. 18. 294

The Puritans found fault with mourning apparel (at least Cartwright did) and with funeral sermons; and with a prescribed form of service at burials.

Hooker goes for all, but not on <sup>god's</sup> Scripture grounds. He admits that the people of God under the Law and the Church in the Apostles times did not use any form of service in burials; that is, he admits there is no record of any such thing. Yet he is so weak as to say that it cannot be proved that some did not use them! And if they did not, the church in later ages might devise rules and orders.

He says the scriptures do not affirm nor deny that the Jews had any such form. But he admits that the priests were forbidden to be present at burials; and yet affects to think it not improbable that the Jews had such a form of service.

"While the world both stand, they shall never be able to prove that all things which the one or the other did (Jews & church in apostles times) use at burials are set down in the scripture."

[He resorts to most flimsy arguments—

The Clergy a distinct Order, he maintains. He calls them the "Order of God's Clergy" in opposition to the laity. He believes they can give the Holy Ghost! Goes back to the Levitical Priesthood.

A Priest is a sacrificer — he admits, and that sacrifice is now no part of the church's ministry. He says Presbyter is more fit than Priest. That they are not called Priests in the New Testament. Deacons, he allows were at first chosen to take care of the church goods, &c. Their ministry has since been extended.

Tithes, Oblations, &c. are all proper & necessary. "Ten is the number of nature's perfections" Therefore Tithes or Tenths are proper! What reasoning! All is given to God, which the clergy receive!

Hooker is against Nonresidence & Pluralities. <sup>(with some exceptions)</sup>

Many Presbyters of the Church of E. he allows, were ignorant, or unable to preach, but they could administer the sacraments, marry, attend burials, &c. read prayers.

He justifies many Nonresidences & Pluralities after all or excuses them.

Nobility. He talks about their majesty & greatness says religion no way seeketh to make them vulgar; no way diminisheth their dignity & greatness. They must have great chaplains.

Common People. He tells us, "how dull, how heavy and almost how without sense the greater part of the common multitude every where is."

p 309



342. Richard Hooker.

He is very near the Purseyites of the present day. - very near Rome. See Life of Baxter Vol. 1. 23.

King Lucie of England, who lived about 200 years after Christ, he refers to as a real personage, who favored Christianity.

Bishops - abundance of words about them. He goes back to the Law, the High Priest, &c.

The people formerly chose bishops & others. This he allows. But in England, the people have no voice in electing them. He finds arguments for thus excluding the people, though he says the Apostles ordained whom the people had first chosen. He says, the Puritans did hold to popular election, viz. Presbyterians.

"Pride is the spring of enmity to bishops", he says.

"Honor all men": Hooker explains this to mean that we are to honor each according to his degree or dignity, or his usefulness.

"Prelates are spiritual guides to the hierarchy" Kings & Princes require clergy of high rank, or "honorable personages".

"The sorting of Clergy into degrees" is necessary for the nobility; the prelates being matched in a kind of equal yoke with the nobility.

"Mean men's actions, be they good or evil, reach not far, & are not greatly improved into."

p. 350. "Miserable times of confusion" were coming on, Hooker thought, because less respect was paid to the honorable. "Prelacy hath all extremity of disgrace, instead of deserved honor."

"Dishonoring prelates is a step to atheism."

Christ's words against Titles. Hooker evades this objection, does not answer it. Says emperors have given bishops high titles.

Possessions, lands & livings of the clergy are the lords, & not to be claimed by men. Goes back to the Jewish Hierarchy to justify Church of England.

Sacrilege he calls all taking away of the property now possessed by the clergy.

Some very unworthy persons, have been made bishops, he admits, & this is one cause of their decayed estimation.



The Church, as he uses the word, is only the clergy in many places.

He has a long book about the King as head of the church, or the ecclesiastical Dominion of the Sovereign.

[I have not found much to interest me in Hooker. He may be judicious in some things, but he is constantly using arguments that are not judicious, though his faults were of the age in which he lived perhaps.

The arguments of the Puritans (Presbyterians) whom he opposed were far from being conclusive. Neither side would convince a discriminating mind at this day.

Hooker was for things as they were; he had not the faintest idea of any progress. He was conservative entirely. Things of that day were right because they were old; had been long established. He does not speak so contemptibly of the people as some others do, but he seems not to have any sympathy for them. He favored the upper classes always. Yet he was not of a malignant disposition - but rather mild.

The Puritans must have been influential ~~and~~ numerous when he wrote, and were able disputants, but often severe and censorious.

[See Ormer's opinion of Hooker in life of Baxter Vol. I, p. 23.  
See Arnold's opinion of Hooker, p. 172.  
See Andrew Charles's opinion - Misc. 2. 277.  
See Hallam's opinion of Hooker Misc. 11. 412

Sacraments. "The sacraments & ceremonies of the gospel operate not without the concurrent actions and moral influence of the suscipient."

Bp. Taylor. Holy Dying C. 5. 5

"It is possible a man may have a saving faith before baptism. Abraham believed before he was circumcised. Some dying men receive their baptism may, yea, must be saved". Bp. Hall. Works.

See the Newgate Chaplain's argument for punishment on page 398 - very much like many of Hooker's arguments.

Wm. Hooker Taylor says Hooker's work was the first Protestant work in England in which the theology of Geneva was attacked and discarded. He was more tolerant than others of that age, when all persecuted.

Isaac Walton & the Bp. of Chichester both mention that Pope Clement VII and several eminent men of the Romish persuasion valued the books of Richard Hooker very highly. See Walton's life of Hooker & Bp. of Chichester's letter to Walton.



Leam 1857.

344  
sup. 360. Burnet's "History of the Reformation  
of the Church of England" In 3 Volumes.

First volume comes down to death of Henry VIII.  
Second and third volumes come down to 1567.  
The first ~~second~~ volumes were published ~~in 1679~~ <sup>under Giffard's Ed.</sup> in 1679, and in 1681. The third in 1714.  
Bishop of Salisbury 1689. — Born 1643. Died 1715.

Popes & Priests and Monks, he exposes their  
rascality, vices & crimes.

"Pope Paul III was a vile and lewd priest, who not only  
kept his whore but gloried in it, and raised one of his  
bastards to a high dignity". He speaks similarly  
of other popes.

"In those days, he was esteemed a good pope that did  
not exceed the wickedness of the worst of men".

Guicciardini, quoted by Bp Burnet

Com. 9. 394. Truth. "It is certain that the nature of man is such  
that truth separated from interest, hath few  
votaries; but when opposed to it, it must have a  
very small party." Most of the things that needed  
reforming, added to the wealth and power of the  
clergy, and it had been a wonder if the greater part had  
not opposed the reformation.

"One Great Scandal of the Reformation": That there  
are in England "some hundreds of parishes that  
pay not 10<sup>l</sup> a year to their pastors; and  
perhaps some thousands not fifty pounds".

Burnet calls these crying sins, but says nothing about  
the great income of some bishops & others. He says  
that tithes of the secular clergy had been taken from  
them in many places, & given to the monasteries,  
by the pope, & thus they followed the fate of the monas-  
teries, some not restored to the clergy by Henry VIII.

"Some of the manifest corruptions of Popery, which  
they are recommended by the advantages which  
accompany them, are not yet thoroughly purged out".  
Though matters of far less consequence have been  
reformed. He refers to nonresidence, pluralities and  
other things of that nature.

"Public vice & scandal are but little improved after, or  
punished." The clergy do not know how to direct the  
lives and manners of their flocks, to any great  
extent. No public penance for scandalous offences.  
Ecclesiastical courts are in the hands of civilians.  
Excommunication is a kind of secular sentence  
given out by lay men, often on insufficient grounds.  
The clergy of Church of E. only many of them, look upon their  
charge as embracing only the performance of divine  
offices and making sermons, rather than the care  
of souls, visiting the sick, reproofing the scandalous, &c.



Plurality of Benefices & Nonresidences, Burnet goes against ~~which~~ thinks they provoke the wrath of God. Says Rome is ashamed of such abuse &.

p. 309 People & Clergy. The people <sup>in this age</sup> have been poisoned with ill impressions of some of the clergy, from these inexcusable faults, which are conspicuous in too many that are called shepherds, "who clothe themselves with the wool, but have not fed the flock." Burnet says "God is angry with us (ie, the clergy,) and has made us base & contemptible among the people" yet he says there is a great number of exemplary clergymen; both high & low.

"This debauched age," is a term he uses, 1680.  
See Locke 414p. see below.

p. 309 Edward VI's time. There were then learned & zealous Divines, "yet still the greater part of the clergy was very ignorant and very corrupt." & generally addicted to former superstitions, though otherwise men that would comply with any thing rather than forfeit their livings!"

The burning & cruelties of Mary made the people averse to her government, very generally.

Better clergymen were obtained under Elizabeth, & men better educated.

"Religion - is chiefly designed for perfecting the nature of man, for improving his faculties, governing his actions, & securing the peace of every man's conscience, and of the societies of mankind in common".

The Puritans, he complains of, but does not spare the churchmen. He thought the wrath of God hung over them. (1680)

to 414. State of the Nation. "It cannot be denied that <sup>See above</sup> ~~universally~~ the whole nation is corrupted. Our progenitors reformed our doctrine and worship, but we have not reformed our lives and manners. Gross sensuality and impurity is so avowedly practiced that it is become a fashion, so far is it from being a reproach" (1680)

"The oppression, injustice, intemperance and many other immoralities" are noticed.

"Blasphemy & Atheism" also

"Some disguise their flagitious lives with a mask of religion -

[all the preceding is from Preface to Volume II. Sept. 1680.]



## 346 Burnet's Reformation.

p. 349 Singing of Psalms brought in, 1548, which were translated into verse; much sung by reformers "and were in many places used in the churches". The poetry was low.

p. 308 Nobility & Gentry (1549). "There seemed to have been a general design among the nobility and gentry to bring the inferior sort to that low and servile state to which the peasants in many other kingdoms are reduced". — Inclosing lands and turning them to pasture went on. The commons were in great misery. No care taken to educate youth, except those bred for learning.

Theft and Adultery. Bucer, with advice to Edward VI., thought putting thieves to death was too severe; whereas Adultery was too slightly passed over in England. He said "Adultery was a greater wrong to the suffering party than any theft".

Sermons on working days began 1550. Forbidden, and only prayers allowed.

"Vice and Impiety, together with much Iniquity, have overrun the land?" [This in 1680.]

p. 309 Clergymen — great disorders among them owing to misery & poverty. 1552. Many were carpenters and tailors and some kept alehouses. — The greater part of country clergy could do little more than read. Livings were scandalously sold. Poor school and places were filled with sons of the rich.

Sins of England 1553, according to Ridley. Secrecy, Oppression, Pride, Covetousness; a hatred and scorn of religion, especially among those of the higher rank, who spoiled the goods of the Church, & oppressed the poor & many of the bishops & most of the clergy, Ridley said, were papists at heart.

Some Anabaptists were in England under Edward VI. and after. Latimer estimates 500 at one time. Some were executed under Edward VI.



# Burnet's Reformation

Parker estimates that there were <sup>(good & over)</sup> 16,000 clergy men of the Church of England in 1553, when Mary began to reign, and that 12,000 were turned out because they were married, and for other reasons. [Corrected 1713. He thinks not over 3000 were deprived.]

Those most furious for celibacy of the clergy were at all times lewd priests, who kept concubines. [He does not say this, but I infer it from what he does say.]

John Rogers was burnt Feb 4. 1555. He had ten children. — Torture was common.

"Common People are commonly so ignorant or so distracted with other affairs, that they seldom enter exact discussions of speculative points; but take up things upon general notions and prejudices." ~~But~~ The scandalous or strict lives of clergymen have great influence upon them.

In 1555, 67 were burnt, of which 4 were bishops & 13 priests. <sup>6 gentlemen, 2 or 3 women and above 40 in common life</sup>

p. 309. Dissimulation of the Clergy & others. Crammer always told the truth, a rare man in that age, "in which there was a continued course of dissimulation in almost the whole English clergy & nation, they going backward & forward as the court turned."

In 1556, 85 were burnt — 13 at one time. Among them was Crammer, 3 priests, 1 deacon, 1 gentleman. The rest were tradesmen and men in common life, and above 20 women in common life.

In 1557, 79 were burnt — 1 or 2 priests, and about 25 women and the others apparently in common life, as the women were.

[His whole numbers or aggregates, do not agree with the several numbers added.]

In 1558, 39 were burnt, viz. 1 deacon, 1 minister, 5 women, 1 gentleman, and 31 in common life.

Camden is not always to be trusted as an Historian. Note.

## Under Elizabeth.

Of 9400 beneficed men in England, 14 bishops, 6 abbots, 12 deans, 12 archdeacons, 15 heads of colleges, 50 prebendaries, and 80 rectors of parishes, left their benefices on account of religion, & no more. "So compliant were the papists." Yet very many continued at heart favorable to the old superstitions, & would have been about as a Catholic & verger come in in their life time. New bishops were put in.

Bible translated under App. Parker, chiefly done by bishops — printed not till 1572.



# 348 Burnet's Reformation

Volume III - seems finished in 1714 - is dedicated to "the King", not named. Must be George I.

1714 compared with 30 years before in his introduction. (or 1713) - "We are now more insensible & stupid, and much more depraved in all respects than we were then." "We are sunk in our learning, vitiated in principle, tainted, some with atheism, others with superstition, both which prepare us for popery." Old breaches not healed - new ones are raised.

More about the cruel & abominations in England. He endeavors to alarm those who hold abbey and church lands, viz. laymen, intimating that they will be restored to the clergy if popery gets the upper hand.

The Romish Church is rich; but the parochial clergy are poor & despicable, "hewers of wood and drawers of water." This is the cause of the poverty of the present parochial clergy among us.

He notices a spirit much like modern Puritanism, in the English Church, in 1680 & in 1713.

Flattery. Men love to be flattered. Flattery is the natural growth of courts. The flattered prince goes into the hands of those who humor & please him.

Under Edward VI, "There was a scandalous venality of all offices & employments."

517/1  
214.21  
To schools, no hospitals, were ~~not~~ yet endowed out of the church property seized. "Many pretended to love & promote a reformation, whose impious and flagitious lives were a reproach to it." Many lived in open lewdness. Many favored the reformation, for robbery of church property, were very active, in Edward's reign. Some of the clergy that promoted the reformation had very visible blemishes.

Good men lamented over the times. Others talked of purity & wallowed in sensuality & uncleanness. The best reformers were obliged to use most unprincipled tools. There were great hindrances to all good designs.

Comparisons of the present time - 1713. To the viciousness of life, open immoralities, & neglect of religion, that were the sins of a former age, many now add studied impiety; opposition to all revealed religion. We of the clergy have for 150 years talked about restoring discipline, but have not made one step towards it. The venality of advowsons! Few labor in the gospel as they ought.

generally says Burnet was honest, but vain, blundering, indiscreet, audacious - but he was learned, industrious, - a spirited and interesting writer. Though misled by prejudice or passion, he was emphatically an honest man. He was above cupidity or fear. He was humane & tolerant - looked with indifference on rites & forms. Strongly opposed to popery. Much read at this day. Vol. IV. 163.



# Burnet's Reformation

549

"Executions for Treason" under Mary - according to Lord Burghley - 400 in all, executed, besides those secretly murdered in prison; of these 20 were bishops and dignified clergymen; 60 were women, more than 40 were children, some women big with child, one bore a child in the fire and the child was burned.

This cruelty struck the people with horror, and excited their hatreds against the government.

Singing of Psalms. Jewel writes Feb. 1560.

1534/6. "Nothing promoted a change in the people more than inviting them to sing psalms; that was begun in one church in London, & did quickly spread not only through the city but in the neighboring places; sometimes at Paul's Cross there would be 3000 people singing together. This is very grievous to the papists." Bishops are called "hangmen to their faces."

1560 Jewel says - a great want of preachers; and schools are forsaken. Anabaptists and Arians had disappeared.

1562. Persecutions against Festivals, Crosses, Baptism, kneeling at the sacrament, surplice, organs, &c. In the Commons 58 voted to do away these things, 59 to retain them. Many of the clergy were opposed to these things.

Cramp Rings; Henry VIII used to bless these, and they were much esteemed.

6282. 15.347. Reading Sermons. Burnet says that under Henry VIII but few were able to preach. Others read homilies; also there were made for them sermons for weddings, christenings and funerals, which they read. Those licensed to preach, being often misrepresented to the king, "came generally to write & read their sermons." This he supposes to be the origin of reading sermons.

Burnt under Mary. Neal's History has 277 in all, viz 5 bishops, 20 other clergymen, 8 gentlemen, 84 tradesmen, 100 husbandmen, laborers & servants, 55 women, 14 children. Neal mentions Burnet's acct. as 284, and Burleigh's 400. He says 16 died in prison.

Douglas attributes to Bp. Burnet the following remark, Misc. 1. 22 "ecclesiastical historians are only historians of the vice of the clergy."

Religion in England 1751. See Bp. Butler Miscel 5. 98. Spectator No 2. 187.



# "History of Civilization in Europe"

By M. Guizot, Paris in England 1837. N. York. 1838.

Philosophy of History, shows the causes and effects of events, and the relation of events with each other. Facts of this kind are an essential part of History.

Civilization includes the progress of society, and the progress of individuals; the amelioration of the social system, or the idea of social well-being and happiness, and the development of man himself, or the expansion of the mind and faculties of man, of individuals.

Christianity, he says, was not addressed to the social condition of man; "it attacked none of the great evils, none of the gross acts of injustice, by which the social system of that day was disfigured," as Sir James Mackintosh. It changed & regenerated man & thus promoted civilization, individual & social. The social and moral development are intimately connected.

"Civilization is still in its infancy." Society is still in its childhood. They have advanced a great distance but that which is before them is greater. Immense progress has been made. Hard has been the lot, and painful and stormy the condition of man for 15 centuries; it is now easy & just compared to what it has been. Barbarism Europe with its brute force, its violence its lies and deceit has passed away.

Ancient Civilization seems to have emanated from a single fact or idea; society was under the influence of a single principle; - in Egypt & India the theocratic principle; the democratic principle in the commonwealth republics of Asia minor, &c.

Modern European Civilization is different; powers temporal & spiritual; theocratic, monarchic, aristocratic & democratic elements are all jumbled together. The ancients had pure monarchy, theocracy or Democracy; modern Europe has all these mixed, and theocratical, monarchic, aristocratic and democratic opinions cross & jostle each other, and limit and modify each other. It is the diversity of these elements of social order, no one being able to exclude the others, that gave birth to the liberty that now prevails. The predominance of one principle produces tyranny. Modern civilization is immensely superior to ancient.

Rome had municipal institutions; she was filled with cities; she conquered & founded cities; In Gall & Spain, as well as Italy, there was nothing but cities. Population was crowded into cities. Country population & dwelling was seldom found. Churches, castles, country seats, & villages were not spread over the country until the middle ages. The unity of a great state was weakened by these numerous cities, the numerous host of little states.



# Guizot's Civilization.

Modern Europe received from Roman civilization the municipal system, and little else, except the remembrance of the empire, or of order and servitude.

Christianity, at first a simple belief, an individual conviction - the pure & simple faith of the gospel, had before A.D. 400, had become a Christian Church, between which and Christianity there is a broad distinction - it had become an institution, a corporate body, with government, revenues, &c. - it had provincial, national, and general councils; it was no longer a religion it was a Church; & this enabled it to withstand the shocks & invasions attending the dissolution of the Roman empire.

Changes of Christianity - 1st, it was a simple association of men, possessing similar or the same faith, opinions and feelings, with no settled form of doctrine, nor rules of discipline, nor magistrates. But there were men who preached & taught, & who morally governed the congregation.

2d epoch. It had gradually a form of doctrine, rules of discipline, & a body of magistrates, called elders, (afterwards priests), overseers afterwards bishops, and deacons. The power, authority and influence still remained in the general body of believers. There was no separation between government and people.

3d period. The whole was changed. The clergy separated from the people, now formed a distinct body, with wealth & jurisdiction, a complete society of itself. The clergy governed almost without control, not only in the Church, but they became chief magistrates in cities & had considerable power over society. The clergy alone possessed moral strength & activity & so succeeded to power, this is the law of the universe. This state of things existed about 400, or the opening of the fifth century. Had it not been for the Church, the world would have been overrun by brute force. - The Church before 500 had some pernicious influence; had vicious principles which were the bane of civilization. They attempted to have the government entirely independent of the people, to take possession of their mind & life; to establish theocracy, to usurp temporal authority, to obtain universal dominion. They leagueed with temporal rulers against the liberty of the subject.

The Barbarians had a fondness for activity without labor, for a life of adventure; for personal independence, for individual liberty. This liberty was unknown to the Romans, & in the Christian Church, liberty was political liberty, liberty as a citizen. But the feeling for personal independence was unknown to ancient civilized nations & to Christians. The Barbarians introduced it into European civilization; also Military patronage.



# 352 Guizot's Civilization

All power owes its existence in part to Force.  
Violence has sullied the birth of all authorities in the world,  
prejudices at the birth of governments & societies.

Violence & Fraud hovered over the birth of monarchy, aristocracy, Democracy; and even over the Church itself. As they abated justice and truth took their place.

Classes after Rome fell in 5th Century, or in Barbarians  
p 382 1. Freeman depending on no superior - their property was their own  
2. Lueder, Fidei, &c. owed fealty & service to others.  
3. Freedmen  
4. Slaves.

There were constantly changing places - passing from one class to another.

Property was allodial or free, and beneficiary or held by tenure, with obligations to a superior, for a few or many years or for life.

The Barbarian period was from the 5th century to the 9th. There was a general jumble of situations, principles, events, races, languages; States & governments were unsettled; there was monarchy, aristocracy, Democracy, but nothing fixed in any of these systems. - The sentiment of personal liberty, of human individualism derived from the Germans, prevailed. In their rudeness and ignorance, the sentiment is more selfishness with its brutality & unsociality.

The fragments of Roman civilization, the name of the great empire, did something against barbarism.

The Christian Church sought to influence the world around it & assimilate it to itself; it attacked barbarism, in order to civilize it and rule over it.

Some Great Men did much, as Charlemagne, Alfred, &c. The attempts to put an end to Barbarism failed until after 900.

After 900, populations become fixed, man's state does not vary from day to day by force or chance; his moral condition began to undergo a change; his sentiments had a more fixed character; he began to have an attachment to place, to home. Little societies began to arise; the proprietor and his family retainers, his serfs & slaves. The Feudal System oozed out of barbarism at last.

The Feudal system was necessary, was the only social system practicable in the 10th century. Everything yielded to the system. Churches became sovereigns, vassals, cities became lords & vassals, the King was a feudal sovereign. All things were given in fief



p. 352 Feudalism did not destroy Theocracy, monarchy or Democracy. The church, royalty and free cities had the feudal form, but sought to be delivered from it.

Feudalism in <sup>both</sup> form & spirit, was extensive. It changed the population. The lords left cities and roaming, each established his residence in the country. Each chose an elevated spot in his domain & built his castle & lived in this with a few peasants, his wife & children. At the foot of the hill were the peasants or serfs who cultivated the lands, huddled together, & ere long, a church & a priest. The Baron the priest, and the peasantry of the domain composed the feudal system.

The Feudal Baron, proud, haughty, at war or hunting, still became more domestic than he had been; and there was a progress in domestic society. There was a home, a wife & children.

p. 306 The importance of woman, the value of the wife and mother, at last, made itself known in the feudal family.

m. 16. 363. Women owe this change to the preponderance of domestic manners in the feudal halls & castles. In none of the ancient communities, did women attain to any thing like the place they acquire under the feudal system.

[He does not believe in the respect said to have been paid to the ancient German women, in the forests of Germany. All this notion is founded, he says, upon a single phrase of Tacitus, — this idea of the purity of manners between the two sexes. "Pure chimeras!" he exclaims. Sentiments and customs similar to those of the Germans of old are found in the narrations of a host of writers, in regard to other savage & barbarous tribes. There is nothing peculiar to a certain race in this matter. The increase and preponderance of domestic manners in Europe gave rise to the importance of the female sex.]

m. 7. 298 The Serfs had nothing morally common with their master, or holder of the fief. They were his property, a part of his estate. He made laws for them, levied taxes, inflicted punishment, & sold them if he pleased. They had no rights, no guarantee. Hence the hatred that country people have always borne to the feudal system. They often chose monarchical or religious despotism in preference to feudal despotism, and they were wise. The latter is the authority of man over man.

The Priest could not soften the hard condition of the serfs except by his words, his instructions. He was made himself & could not influence the lordly baron.

The Serfs had no connection with persons, things, or government, beyond the estate where they dwell. They had no common country; they formed not a nation: they were not people. When we speak of feudal associations we only allude to proprietors.



# 354. Quirats Civilization.

Force was the usual guarantee of right under the Feudal System. No general law was obeyed, unless by force. No institution could succeed under it. Baronial courts & parliaments could effect nothing. It was a world of ignorance and brute passions - there could be no general organization.

The Feudal System was radically vicious, and could not regulate society - could not establish order. yet it was indispensable in the wretched state of society that existed, as a step to something better.

Personal liberty had a wide field under the system, but public authority could do nothing. The right of personal resistance was fully maintained.

Feudalism from 10th to 13<sup>th</sup> centuries gave birth to elevated ideas & feelings, to grand developments of character. Chivalry was its offspring. The first attempts at poetry & literature sprung up under the wings of feudalism.

Feudalism was individualism - derived from Germans.

Religion, or a religious society, need a government, but force or compulsion ~~must~~ be illegal - is strictly forbidden. It needs a government to put forth its doctrines, to teach & preach doctrine & precepts, or religious truth, - administering to religious wants, admonishing, censuring.

The question about the kind of government will not cease; & the debate between others & the Quakers will exist.

Caste. The clergy are not a caste, he says, because castes are hereditary. They are a corporation, not a caste.

From 5th to 12 centuries the low as well as high were received into the clergy. When the tyranny of privilege prevailed, the church alone admitted those of all classes to the possession of power.

The Church had a dread of improvement, yet it did not, could not remain stationary. As a whole the church has been constantly changing, & advancing.

Election to office was of two sorts for a long time; It was done by the superior <sup>clergy</sup>, and in other cases by the inferior clergy or people. There was a long struggle, and the choice of the inferior by the superior gained the day, and the choice of the superior by the inferior ceased.

The church denied the right of individual reason, and assumed the right of compulsion, & forcing belief. She undertook to govern human thought, human liberty, private morals, individual opinions.



The Church converted barbarians by dazzling  
 their senses, & working upon their imaginations  
 by the pomp of grand spectacles. — The brutality  
 and thoughtlessness of the barbarians remained  
 as before, or very slightly altered. — She was afraid  
 of the barbarians, & her danger appeared great, and  
 the object of converting them was to get rid of this  
 danger, or the first object.

The Church first claimed to be free & separate from  
 the temporal; and having gained this point,  
 she next claimed to be superior to all temporal  
 power & arrogated the government of the world.  
 Temporal power was a mere brute force, a system of  
 rapine & violence; and the people favored the  
 assumptions of the Church, over temporal power.

The governed lost all influence in the government  
 of the Church; the clergy were independent of them.  
 The clergy sought this separation at an early date,  
 even in the first century — & finally succeeded.  
 Abuses without number sprung from this  
 circumstance. — To deluge up our conscience,  
 thoughts, our souls, to the authority of others is  
 moral suicide, & much worse than  
 to submit to bodily servitude.

The laity was thrust aside; were mere lookers-on,  
 could do nothing, were not allowed to debate  
 religious questions. The body of Christians had  
 no legal means of doing any thing, of expressing  
 any desire. They had indirect influence however.

The clergy were distributed to all parts of places; this  
 was an advantage over the pagan priesthood who  
 lived in a temple, or by themselves.

The Church for several centuries did nothing  
 to draw forth the capacities of the laity. Her  
 schools & colleges were only for the instruction of  
 the priesthood, were all theological, yet they shed  
 a little light upon the world — but it was slow & indirect.

Slavery long subsisted in Christian society and  
 not much notice was taken of it. The Church  
 finally used its influence to restrain it, but new  
 ideas & new principles from other sources aided.  
 Slavery is the "evil of evils" the iniquity of  
 iniquities.

Violence was suppressed by the Church, at times.

The Church had much influence in the intellectual  
 & moral order of Europe. Their progress was theological.  
 Theology possessed the human mind from 400 to 1500  
 (16th century) Bacon in England and Descartes in France  
 were the first who carried the mind out of the pale of Theology.

Notice — The Church has had a beneficial influence  
 on civil liberty. She has always shown herself the interpreter  
 & defender of two systems equally vicarious, theocracy  
 & the imperial tyranny of Rome — of despotism civil & religious.



# 356 Guizot's Civilization

The Church - from (400 to 1100) - 5th to 12th Centuries

1st State. In the 5th century was the Church of the Roman empire - had vanquished Paganism & Arians. New pagans & new heretics appeared. The Roman empire was gone. She denounced the barbarians & conjured them to re-establish the Roman empire. This was during 5th & 6th Centuries.

2nd State. The attempt could not succeed. "The Church itself sunk into barbarism. The language & civilization of Rome disappeared - all was buried in barbarism. The rude barbarians became bishops & priests, and bishops became marauding barbarians. Monks were everywhere established -

After the Death of Charlemagne, the Church and civil society fell into chaos.

3rd State. Under the feudal system. There was no unity in the members. The clergy were isolated like the barons. Abuses & disorders increased. Sin was common. The morals of the clergy were never more loose & disorderly. A reform desired.

4th State. The Church entered upon the fourth state in the 11th century - that of a Theocracy supported by monastic institutions - under Gregory VII.

11.2.68

## Free Cities.

See Communes. Chron. 5. 76. Bourgeoisie begun.

They do not make any figure until the 11th or 12th Centuries though they previously existed. Between 12th & 15th centuries they attained much influence. The burghers of the towns escaped from the tyranny of the nobles - that was their main object. There are the origin of the third estate, "tiers état" - Before the 12th century towns were neither in a state of freedom nor servitude. They were feeble, & exposed to the depredations of the strong. The Roman institutions gradually disappeared, and barbarism & disorder followed. The state of the towns grew worse from the 5th century till the 12th. Under the feudal system, they were subjected to the control of a lord, were included in some fief. But when the system was fully established, cities began to increase in industry, commerce & population.

The feudal system taught men resistance, or Insurrection. The holders of fiefs rebelled against their overlords, and small proprietors against the greater. This lesson of Insurrection was not lost on the cities. They resisted the lords and in the 11th century, they generally rose against them in war. There were great vicissitudes in these struggles.



Free Cities - These wars eventually ended in peace. These treaties of peace were the Charters between burgesses and lords.

Kings acted a prominent part in these struggles being called in sometimes by the people and sometimes by the lord, especially after the charters were given & violated. France & much of Europe now abounded in charters. - The cities began to form a connection with the King; and consequently became a part of the State.

u. 18. 320. The burgesses in the 12th century were merchants or small traders, and little landed or house proprietors. [He does not allude to mechanics - repeats the preceding.] Had no magistrates. (Luey.) Three centuries later & then were added, lawyers, physicians, men of letters, and local magistrates.

House of a citizen of 12th century - Had 3 stories - one room in each. - That on the ground floor was the general eating room; the first story [The French call first story what English call second] was the habitation of the master and his wife; the second story or upper one, it is supposed, served for the children & servants. The house was flanked with a tower.

p. 368 & Melgale of Classes - "this struggle constitutes the very fact of modern history"; "Modern Europe is born of this struggle between the different classes of society." No class has overcome or subjugated the others; they have progressed, and approached and understood each other, and a sort of unity has issued from variety, enmity & discord.

2. 1980. Walter Scott's picture of the burgo-master of Liege, in Quentin Durward, is very erroneous, only fit for the stage.

A Burgess Aristocracy arose in the cities, of affluent burgesses; they became privileged and there was great inequality between them and the numerous workmen who were turbulent. The former were timid, cautious; the latter furiously Democratic.

No government, no nation in Europe from the 5th to the 12th or 13th century - no such thing as a People, properly so called. There were Kings, aristocracy, clergy, citizens, husbandmen. Now, we have the people of the government. A nation was not really established until the 12th or 13th century.

p. 361. Civilization. Slavery an element in it. Misc. 5. 73. Greek & Roman Civilization was that of castes & classes. dl. 6. 407



## The Crusades

These were the heroic events of modern Europe. At first were bands of people without leaders; next under the feudal nobility; next under kings. Europe was impelled into the crusades by religious feeling and belief; and by a taste for adventures and barbarous freedom.

The effects of the Crusades especially of the later ones, was a step towards the emancipation of the mind. They found in the enervated decaying Greeks, something <sup>more</sup> advanced & enlightened than among themselves. They were struck with the riches and elegance of manners among the Mussulmans, and there were frequent relations between them. Wm. of Tyre & some others place the manners & conduct of the Mussulmans in opposition to those of the Christians, - (making the former the best.) The first crusaders were very far from this.

The Crusades diminished the number of petty fiefs; and larger fiefs became more numerous. This is an important result. Commerce of cities increased.

## Monarchy.

Guizot endeavors to show the general prevalence of monarchy in the world is owing to the analogy between <sup>the nature of</sup> monarchy and the nature of man. Force has done much to establish monarchy, but he says moral influences are hidden under the accidents of force; and that moral power is the true principle of monarchy. He goes for "legitimate sovereignty" and finds this in monarchy. The religious ideas of men and the influence of jurists have been favorable to monarchy.

Monarchy from 5th to 11th Century - was barbarian in France & England; imperial in Italy, religious in Spain. Various changes followed and a miserable feudal monarchy.

A new monarchy began to develop itself in 12th century - the origin of modern monarchy the protector of public order, general justice and the common interest - From 12th to 16th century, the clergy, feudal nobility, & free cities, each at times sought predominance of itself. Some attempts were made for a union of the three interests.

The Church or Theocratic principle failed because it did not possess judicial & ministerial offices, the command of force, and the disposal of revenues. Force of persuasion has great influence & may be very powerful, but it cannot govern. Another obstacle the feudal nobility would not submit to the yoke of the Church. Europe is greatly indebted to them for their opposition to the domination of the Church.



p. 354

The Church has endeavored to obtain unity, and has succeeded in some particulars. But we must not be imposed upon by words. The ecclesiastical nation has suffered from dissensions, divisions, agitations, disputes; national councils and councils have been at variance with the pope; heresies have been innumerable; schism always breaking out—These things have rendered the triumph of Theocracy impossible—Europe was never an immense theocracy, when all were subservient to the pope & clergy, under Gregory VII. near 1100, than at any other time, and this course prospered down to about 1250. From 1100 to 1250 was the time of the greatest power of the church, that is, of pope & clergy—After this arose, Albigensians, Wickliffe, & others, the opposition of emperors, & kings.

The emancipation of the Latin Society of Europe dates from about 1300. The church has since acted on the defensive—trying to keep what she possessed.

The Italian Republics—much superior to other communities in Europe. Yet their history is sad and gloomy—full of dissensions, crimes, and misfortunes. There was no security for life, and liberty was growing less and less. Much inferior to the Grecian republics.

Swiss Republic—Republics in South of France, & in Flanders—Hanseatic towns.

States General of France—Cortes of Spain, did not effect much—did not govern.

Parliament of England did more, & continued—was a power superior to those on the continent.

Germany had elective kings, ecclesiastical sovereigns, and free cities.

Modern Society begins in the 16th Century. Centralization began in 14th century; the 15th tended to this result; it was accomplished in 16th & 17th. The power of the state superseded the feudal power. Royalty triumphed over barons & grandes, and cities. "Security & progress are essential to social existence". The old forms of society failed in these and were abandoned.

Rise of classical learning in Europe. Antiquity as regards politics, philosophy, or literature, was greatly superior to the Europe of the 14th & 15th centuries, and bold thinkers began to appear.

Voyages, Travels, Discoveries, Inventions all helped.



### 360. Guizot's Civilization.

p. 344. Reformation - this was from 1517 to 1520 to the treaty of Westphalia, 1648.

Rise of Sweden, Prussia, Holland.

The Jesuits. Colonies. ~~Robert~~ Charles I. dethroned.

He says the "great Revolution broke out in England, or, as it is sometimes improperly called, the grand Rebellion, which dethroned Charles I."

The Reformation was the leading fact among the great events of this period; it was the most powerful cause of the many powerful effects produced.

The Reformation had a general cause to which other causes were subordinate; it was a vast effort made by the human mind to achieve its freedom; a newborn desire to think and judge freely and independently - an endeavor to emancipate human reason; an insurrection against the absolute power of the spiritual order. It was not merely reforming; it was essentially revolutionary; its nature may be traced in its effects.

The Reformation did not demand political liberty in Germany or elsewhere.

"In England, it consented to the hierarchical constitution of the clergy, and to the existence of a church, as full of abuses as ever the Romish church had been, and much more servile"

The reformation accommodated itself to every form of government & to every situation.

[The reformation was a fact rather than a principle, or rather] the emancipation of the human mind in the course of the Reformation was a fact rather than a principle, a result rather than an intention. It performed more than it undertook.

The Reformers did not understand the true principles of intellectual liberty, they demanded rights for themselves, which they refused to others.

"The Reformation introduced religion into the midst of the laity, into the world of believers. Till then religion had been the exclusive domain of the ecclesiastical order. It threw matters of religious belief into general circulation."

Reformation. Conn. 9. 418. Conn. 6. 390. Conn. 7. 365 its failure in France. Conn. 2. 297. - Burdett's English Ref. page 348. In France C. D. Aubigne Conn. 9. 419. Conn. 5. 50 (Chr. Science).



# Guizot's Civilization

561

## The English Revolution.

M. Guizot denominates the struggle under Charles II and after the Revolution, ending with 1688.

The religious reform in England was much less complete than on the continent. The king ... episcopacy divided between them what they stripped from the pope; and most old abuses continued.

Landed property had undergone a great change in England, in consequence of the ruin of the feudal nobility.

In 1600, the house of commons possessed more wealth than the house of lords. Many had acquired property by trade.

There was a new march of mind in England.

One party was for religious liberty; and one for political liberty. These two formed an alliance. Yet the revolution was essentially political. Three parties.

1. Pure monarchy party, advocating some reforms, but believing in the divine right of the king, in his absolute power, such as Clarendon, &c. This party went over to the king. They were for episcopacy.

2. Political-revolutionary party. This wanted a great change; it desired to limit the power of the king considerably. It contended for the power of the house of commons. The presbyterians were allied to this party - they were seeking for a revolution in the church. Some who were not presbyterians united with them - they could do nothing alone.

3. The Republicans - wished to change the government from the foundation, and the whole social system. There were real republicans as Ludlow, Harrington, Melton, &c. and republicans of circumstance, interested as Ireton, Cromwell, Lambert, &c.; they were sincere at the beginning - This party included the religious sects who acknowledged no power but that of Christ. Also freethinkers, fanatics, Levellers, &c.

Each of these parties failed. Cromwell succeeded, but at his death, no party remained that could carry on the government. The Restoration followed.

The Restoration tried several parties without success, and then Charles II was absolute. James followed.

Guizot thinks the revolution of 1688 would have come if Wm III. had not existed.

He speaks of "the revolution from its outbreak to the restoration, and again in the crisis of 1688".

He has another Chapter or Lecture as to France and the causes of the French Revolution

Civilization Misc. 5. 91. Hist. Hist. 2. 87. Religion & Civ. Misc 5. p. 1. clo. the true, Misc 5. 132. Greek & Roman Civilization. Hist. 2. p. 7.

English Revolutions. both parts of one. according to Guizot above. & Blackwood (N. 5. 140) do p. 100. Carlyle's opinions Misc 5. 141. ...



# 362 Prostitution - in England.

From a long and able article in the Westminster Review, July 1850.

Sexual indulgence, however guilty in its circumstances, when accompanied by love, is a sin according to nature. Fornication is a sin against nature, and brings man below the brutes. In case of prostitution it is brutal desire on one side only, and loathing submission for money on the other. The manner in which prostitutes are regarded in England, and treated, is dishonourable to our religion and our manhood. The prostitute does not enjoy licentious pleasures, does not wallow in ruin because she loves it. Desire ceases, pleasure is changed into repugnance, and she follows a wretched trade for a living, and deadens her abhorrence by perpetual semi-intoxication. Gin alone enables her to live & act. "No girl could lead the life we do without drink" is the common expression. Their career is generally a brief one. In their lowest degradation, they never wholly lose the sense of shame, and their kindness to each other & to others in suffering, has attracted attention. Their affection for children is very strong.

Occasion of their lapse from virtue.

Lust is seldom, if ever, the cause of their fall; it is so rare as to be among the very few exceptions. Women seldom scarcely ever lead to their fall, and scarcely exists in a definite and conscious form till they have fallen (save in a poor, miserable class.) In this point there is a radical difference between the sexes. In man the sexual desire is inherent and spontaneous; in females the desire, if existent, is dormant till excited by undue familiarities; almost always till excited by actual intercourse. Those feelings which licentious minds attribute to girls are almost invariably consequences. This is a general fact in the higher, middle, and to a great extent in the lower classes, where they have come from virtuous parents, or have been carefully brought up. Of the passions of women were ready strong & spontaneous in a degree remotely approach to those of men, the consequences would be frightful, and sexual irregularities would reach a terrible height. Nature has spared the weaker sex this heavy burden.

1. The larger class of prostitutes, or the first class, were born & bred in sin; their parents were thieves, and prostitutes, dwelling in equal misery. They have never had a glimpse of a better life; they have not fallen, for they were always on the lowest level; they had no choice in the matter. These abound in large cities. Their families belong to the French classes languereuses, and furnish recruits for the gaols, low brothels, hulks, &c.
2. Others fall from the snares of Vanity. They are flattered by attentions of those above them, & flutter around the flame till they are burned. There is little apology for these. They have had a defective education.



3 Some sell themselves to shame, & barter chastity and reputation, for carriages, jewels and a luxurious table. No plea can be offered for these where one woman thus sells herself to a lover, ten sell themselves to a husband, for the same gratifications. It is naked barter in both cases.

4. Many - the most wronged & innocent of all - are deceived by hopes & promises of marriage. They confide in their lover; their affections are engaged, and they are led on from one familiarity to another. These yield to desires in which they do not share; they yield to a generosity which cannot refuse anything to the entreaties of the man they love. They show their affection by giving up what they hold dear.

"We believe that nine out of ten originally modest women, who fall from virtue, fall from motives and feelings in which sensuality and self have no share" - had they been more selfish & less generous they would not have fallen. [This 90,000 includes those under 40 & 50.]

5 Want of work and insufficient earnings is a prolific source of prostitution. Not a few become prostitutes from maternal and filial affection; to save children or parents from starvation. It is want, poverty, that drives the largest number into prostitution in both France & England. - This class is more numerous than those abandoned by their seducers.

The gang system in agricultural districts leads to prostitution; the insufficient house accommodation, common to all parts of the country, leads to loss of chastity. This insufficiency is almost universal, except in some manufacturing districts; the rural districts are said to be worse in this respect than the towns.

Cottages inhabited by laboring people, however large the family, seldom have more than one bedroom; a few may have two. The parents & children of various ages and both sexes, sometimes cousins & others, all occupy the same room at night. The evidence on this point is frightful & overwhelming.

He has much to say about the harsh treatment which the world gives to these poor women, and about the means of restoring them & preventing others from falling. "The great majority, he affirms, fall in the first instance from causes in which vice and selfishness have no share."

Numbers of Prostitutes. Colquhoun's estimate of 50,000 in London is now admitted on all hands to be a monstrous exaggeration. He thinks the whole number in England and Scotland & Wales cannot be under 50,000 - "whose sole profession is prostitution," not including many female servants, milliners, & women in the upper & middle ranks of life, who might be classed with prostitutes. The number in Edinburgh is about 800, Glasgow 1800, Liverpool 2900, Leeds 700, Bristol 1300, Manchester 700, Norwich over 500.



# 344. Prostitution.

There are "higher classes of brothels," and prostitutes "of the highest class". There are many procuresses, who entice young women into brothels of the higher class - they are ruined by cajolery, force, drugs, &c. Many become prostitutes from 12 to 15 years of age.

All classes & professions, even the married of both sexes, frequent brothels. Frightful disclosures have been made and rushed up.

Nearly all prostitutes, except the highest class, are Thieves, or connected with thieves. Half of those convicted of larceny are prostitutes or their associates.

Syphilitic diseases prevail to an extent that is perfectly appalling. A great majority of the 50000 prostitutes are diseased, or have been, and the infection is spread on every side - and the innocent are frequently its victims.

Seminaries of learning, nearly all, for all classes, awaken the sexual propensity unnaturally early, owing to their bad condition & regulation. They are initiated into vicious ideas, if not into vice; licentious languages, & coarse and vulgar habits prevail.

Prostitution has existed in all countries and in all times, wherever the population has been congregated in large masses.

Difficult to be eradicated in England; Live linoed is difficult; marriage impeded by scanty means; many thousands on the verge of starvation; idleness prevalent among the rich; education defective among the poor; the vice sanctioned by the custom of ~~carthouses~~ carthouses; hundreds of female devils prowling about for their prey; countless temptations beset the path of the innocent - all these things make the reduction of prostitution a difficult process.

FRANCE - prostitution exists in France to as great an extent as in England, but does not produce near the same amount of mischief to society or to the women themselves. - A large class of prostitutes in Paris are registered & regulated, and diseased ones immediately sent to the hospitals. They live much longer than the English, and many return to other modes of life. ~~They are much more numerous than the English.~~

Lodging houses of London and other large towns are sinks of iniquity & nurseries of prostitution.

[Prostitutes in Paris &c. Miscel. 2. 161.  
do in London 1839 this No. p. 318

1500 prostitutes in an army. Misc. 1. 236

English harlots follow the army of the Duke of Alva to 16th. 1a. D. Misc. 2. 114.

English harlots followed the army of the Duke of Alva to 16th. 1a. D. Misc. 2. 114.

Prostitution in General Misc. 6. 387  
Prostitution from poverty Misc. 11. 2  
and in the article above p. 5  
Harlots. See Misc. 2. 177.

[Continued in Misc. 11. p. 75]



# French Revolution - 1789-1815.

By Archibald Alison - (a native of democracy) - Preface 1833.

The Reformation failed in France, from the scanty numbers fitted to receive its doctrines. It struck its roots in the maritime & commercial cities, on the western coast, but the peasantry of the country were too ignorant, and the nobles of the metropolis too profligate, to embrace its precepts. The most inhuman atrocities were committed. 40,000 were massacred on Bartholomew's day. The Huguenots were not distinguished for moderation. In their early insurrections, they made a general destruction of property & life. The struggle of partial freedom with general servitude, of local intelligence with public ignorance must be fruitless. [Page 360.]

(He enumerates causes enough for the Revolution and for its savage character.)

The Catholic Church in France about 1789 had from tithes 130,000,000 francs, of which the parochial clergy received only 42 millions. The Church also possessed nearly half of the territory of France (He quotes Chateaubriand for this.) The nobles and clergy possessed  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the whole estates of the Kingdom, leaving only one third in the hands of the Third Estate upon whom fell the greater proportion of the burdens of the state (He quotes Thiers.)

There were only two classes in France, the nobility and the ~~ex. elector~~ - the noble & the roturier. No middling class was known. Of the former, were 150,000 privileged individuals; the latter comprised all the French people.

The privileged class enjoyed all situations of importance in the church, army, court, bench, &c. - Yet there were middling ranks - merchants, lawyers, students, surgeons, who hated the nobles.

The cultivators of France were miserably poor. The peasantry were almost as wretched as those of Ireland. The great proprietors lived in Paris in dissipation & amusement, regarded the cultivators "in no other light than as beasts of burden", from whose labor every thing possible was to be extracted. The peasantry were ignorant, not one in 50 could read.

The Administration of Justice was "in some places" partial, venal & infamous. Presents, court favor, the smiles of a woman, &c. swayed the decision of Judges. The decisions of the Parliaments, were not free from corruption.

"In all countries, where public opinion has not its due weight, or where the judges are exempt from its control, the administration of justice is liable to abuses" - such abuses as above mentioned.

The Court & nobility & higher clergy were corrupt and licentious.

"*Le vic. Antoinette* had little education, read hardly any thing but novels & romances, and had a fixed aversion, during her spare days, to every species of business or serious employment" - Louis XVI. was irresolute & vacillating, & displeased both nobility & people.

The nobility occasioned the revolution by their insolence, and then betrayed their sovereignty by their desertion. As emigrants they were vain, frivolous & self-sufficient, & their vices were conspicuous.



# Alison's French Revolution - cont. The Puritans of England. Misc. 2. 296.

"The Puritans were early distinguished by their zeal in the cause of freedom; during the <sup>reign</sup> of Elizabeth, they maintained in silence their inflexible spirit; and so well was her government aware of the dangerous tendency of their principles, that they never were permitted, during the reign of that sagacious princess, to have the smallest share in state affairs. In the reign of James I., their number became greater, and their exertions in the cause of freedom more apparent; the first serious attacks on the government were made through the pulpit, and the only persons in this, as in other countries, at this period, who made any exertions in favor of their liberties, were those who were animated by religious zeal".

"Even in the reign of James I., the Puritans were the only sect who were zealously attached to freedom". In the commotions which followed, the civil contests were subordinate to their religious differences.

Page 398. — Misc. 5. 85. Shakspeare in No 2. p. 142.

No 2. p. 296 — Puritan Dress (con. g. 304. Misc. 8.

Doct. Th. Scott's opinion, Misc. 6. 431.

Puritan Dress (con. g. 304. Misc. 8.

Puritans & Dissenters p. 103. 105. 101. 120. 121

Puritans, 3 sorts, Misc. 11. 392

(Dissenters, from Chr. Examiner, (con. g. 276.

"She would make her puritan of the devil". Nat. m. 177

Harrington's description of a Puritan, page 372

Puritans held to popular election of ministers. 342

Puritans cannot be laughed at now. Misc. 6. 346.

See A. A. Quecheek, reason for beating a Puritan. M. 5. 151

Puritans called saints by opponents. Wood speaks in denunciation of "canting Puritanism & Sanctimony", of the "saintship" of Cromwell

{ The Puritan Cromwell — Blackwood. Misc. 6. 398. 399.

{ The same — this No. p. 106.

{ The same by Cousin. Misc. 2. 130.

Puritan Amusements & manners p. 131. of this.

Puritans. Styrke's account of them Misc. 2. 257.

Praying symptoms of a Puritan. M. 2. 255

Puritan names. No 3. p. 203

Puritan zeal against witchcraft. Misc. 8. 318

Puritans & Dissenters — from Hallam Misc. 11. 416. 417. 411. 409. 408.

Puritans opposed to by Hooker p. 335 after.

Puritans called "Bamfury men", from their numbers at that place, in Bamfury. A Bamfury elder "says a grace as long as his breath lasts him". Johnson's Bartholomew Fair.

Johnson is frequently serving up the Puritans

See Puritans in B. Johnson — Con. g. 381. Misc. 9. 90.

(Dissenters — Chamberlayne's notice of them. Misc. 3. 56

Puritans & Predestinarians. Misc. 4. 319. Calvin on same.

(B. 313 Puritans — Bp. Corbet made fighting on them. He wrote the "Dissident Puritan"

"Thomas Burnet he is a Puritan, yet it will do no hurt." Act. 1. 11.

King's sermon & his sermons influence on the Puritans. Misc. 9. 46.

Puritans in N.E. built good meeting Houses; Misc. 3. 401.

p. 322 "Strength of purpose is the main instance of Puritanism."

"Many of the Puritans, instead of being always solemn & austere, had a strong humorous tendency." Haven's Dedham p. 54.

He alludes to their gentleness & punning; their titles of books, &c.

(B. 313 Occurrences of the Puritans' notices of Puritans.

11. 30 Darwin's notice of them — in his Remarks on 30th. Their opposition

to the Theatre in the 18th. & 19th. c. 8. 24.

Cont. M. 12. 248



# Alison's French Revolution Con.

Prudhomme, republican, estimates that those guillotined by sentence of revolutionary tribunals amounted in all to

Men, women & children slain in La Vendee	18,603.
Victims under Carrier at Nantes	937,000
Victims at Lyons	32,000
Women died of premature childbirth &c	3,748
<u>Several massacres not included.</u>	<u>1,022,351</u>

Nobles guillotined 1278, noble women 750, wives of common persons 1467. Religious 350, priests 1135, Common persons not noble 13,623. These make the 18,603.

Of those killed at Nantes, 2000 children were shot or drowned; 764 women were shot or drowned; 760 priests shot or drowned; Nobles drowned 1400, Artisans drowned 5300.

The lower orders suffered much more than the others.

## m. 2. 40. The Reign of Terror.

Pure, unmixed wickedness never yet appeared in real life. Even the Jacobins of Paris were not destitute of good qualities. With the exception of Collet D'Herbois, Fouché, Carrier and a few others, who were guided mainly by <sup>of some qualities of selfish ambition</sup> base and selfish motives, they were in general possessed of the seeds of a noble character—moral courage, energy and decision of character—a resolution to maintain the independence of France, amid unexampled perils. Some were selfish or rapacious, but Robespierre, St Just and others were entirely free from the desire of private emolument, and in the atrocities they committed were governed, if not by public principle, at least by private ambition. The blood which they shed, was, as they deemed it, essential to the success of freedom. They committed great crimes, while they professed noble intentions, and supposed themselves acting under the influence of pure motives. So did those who slew the Albigenes; and those who massacred 40,000 at Jerusalem under Godfrey de Bouillon.

Those who represent the Jacobins as mere blood thirsty wretches, insatiable vultures are well meaning, weak men. — Napoleon had a favorable opinion of Robespierre—thought his character was misunderstood. "It is clear that Robespierre's abilities were of the highest order," says Alison.

It was the attacks of the Allies that united France and accelerated her triumphs and conquests.

It is a mistake to suppose that France could not have made a transition from despotism to comparative freedom without such a terrible convulsion. [He is mistaken.]

"Little shopkeepers and the more opulent of the artisans" Alison considers as those who are even the most violent and atrocious revolutionists.

[French Revolution Miscel. 6. 408. m. 2. 269.]



## Classes in England.

In 1831. there were of the:-

Aristocracy of Great Britain from 3000 to 4000 families  
 Squires & Gentlemen, who are land propri., } 50 to 60,000  
 Stockholders, money lenders, &c. } families.

Learned Professions:-

Clergy of all denominations... 36,000 } In all  
 Lawyers... 30,000 } 116,000 families  
 Physicians, surgeons, Apothecaries... 50,000 } & half as many  
 more dependents

Farming tenants... about 250,000 families

Their laborers... 400,000 do.

Merchants, Shopkeepers, general traders... 900,000 do

Artisans... 200,000 do

Manufacturers in all lines... 500,000 do

Laborers, porters & Servants... 600,000 do

Destitute paupers, soldiers, &c... 800,000 do

These will make 3,870,000 families. The whole population in 1831 was 24,271,758. There must be great errors in these divisions into families where are the millions of agricultural laborers in Ireland? They cannot be in the 400,000 families. They must be in the laborers, &c. in part, but I imagine they are not in any class. There are more shopkeepers than laborers - this is impossible -

[Classes in 1696. p. 160.]

u. 2. 243/

Classes of men after Rome fell. p. 352

Struggle of the classes. p. 357

Class legislation. p. 308.

Class Divisions in ancient nations. Cor. 9. 397

Class & Caste civilization was that of G. & Rome. M. 6. 407

Classes in Malte Brun Vol. 1. 276.

Productive Class. one who takes his subsistence from the earth or some other element of production useful to society, & cultivation, is human, or invertebrate, or science, or knowledge, the acquirement of knowledge & the use of letters who purifies the taste, refines the sentiments & elevates the morals & manners, &c. & cultivate the production of fine national riches

Operative or Mechanical Class. who convert raw produce into artificial produce. In their processes eminently require genius & taste. They are called fine arts. In this chiefly demand corporal strength & dexterity. It is conducted on a large scale. A manufactory is where this art

Commercial Class. one who buys & sells on a great or small scale, & correspondents, agents, brokers, &c. in buying & selling, & carriers, when proprietors of their means of conveyance.

Class of Public Officers - civil officers, & officers of sea & land forces

Class of Mercenaries - those hired - improved laborers & domestics.

Classes in this part of the nature of Society. but

6. Orders & Orders are great by laws & constitution. A Caste is an hereditary class, in which a species of occupation is generally in sight. In India. Orders in Europe differ from Castes. In India, the Brahmins are an order, the Kshatriyas are a caste, the Vaishyas are an order, the Sudras are a caste. In the same way, the Brahmins are a third order. In Europe, not properly a caste. No Orders in Egypt, India, China & Turkey.



p. 370. English Poets, & Prose Writers (from page 42)  
 Continued. From Robert Chambers' *Cyclopaedia* of English  
 Literature. 1843. 1st Vol. comes to 1727; & is after. About 700 pages in a Vol.  
 woman. See p. 119

In John Mandeville. born 1300. Travelled 34 years before 1356.  
 He represents the Moslems as superior in morality  
 to the Christians. He says, the Saracens were good and  
 faithful. Christians were gluttons, drunkards, proud,  
 inclined to evil, covetous, adulterous, faithless, &c.  
 according to the Sultan of Egypt.  
 11. 384

John Lydgate. about 1430, describes what was selling  
 in London, in shops, streets, &c. - Felt hats; Spectacles  
 to read; cooks of bread, ale, wine, ribs of beef; hot  
 pease pods, strawberries, cherries, pepper, saffron;  
 velvet, silk, lawn, Pais thread, cloth, hot sheep's feet  
 mackerel, mushes green, hood for the head, ribs of beef again  
 "many a pie"; pewter pots; there was harp, pipe, and  
 minstrelsy; much stolen gear; tawnyer & wicker  
 things were cried in the streets, &c.

Thomas Tusser. 1557. His Housewife's Physic.  
 Gen. 9. 244 "Good huswife provides, ere a sickness do come,  
 of sundry good things in her house like some.  
 Good agrima composita and vinegar tart,  
 Rosewater, and heale to comfort thy heart."  
 "Cold herbs in garden": White endive, Succory,  
 Spinage, good pot herbs, water of fumitory to deal  
 the liver, conserves of Carberry & quinces, sirops,  
 "Ask medicus' counsel ere medicine yet take,  
 And honor that man for necessity's sake.  
 Though thousands hate phy, because of the cost,  
 yet thousands it helpeth that also should be lost."  
 Good broth, good diet, be stirring in health; in sickness  
 seek quiet rest, hate trouble, submit to God.  
 His Devises on Christen men, date 1577

In John Fortescue. flourished 1430-1470  
 He says the English have more courage than the French;  
 Hence their insurrections, robberies, manslaughter in  
 England. The French have not courage to rob. More men  
 are hanged in England in a year for robbery & manslaughter  
 than in France in seven years. If an Englishman  
 be poor & see another have riches, he will rob him.  
 Gen. 9. 389 Poor men rise in England; thrifty men are both  
 for die of losing their goods, but are sometimes compelled  
 to join the poor to save their goods. Poverty is the cause  
 of rising.

William Caxton - printed in England 1474-1491

Robert Fabian, sheriff of London, died 1512. a Chronicler.  
 He describes the rising of Jack Cade, June 1450. He  
 & his men were pardoned by arch. of Canterbury, July 1450.  
 & returned to him. Was afterwards taken, killed, & quartered, &c.  
 and some others.

Edward Hall was a Chronicler or Historian; died very old  
 in 1547. A Lawyer & Judge. Superior to Fabian as an historian.  
 was much used by poets, dramatists, &c. Elizabeth's time.

Sir Thomas More, in persecuting protestants, displayed a  
 severity & intolerance, strangely at variance with the  
 opinions of his youth (*Utopia* &c.) & his general mildness  
 all that makes nobility at present is the course that one  
 is descended from rich & needless. (*Utopia*) The rabble of monks  
 look upon hunting, birding & gaming as pleasurable



From Chambers.

*See Saints*  
*at 2. 128*  
 Frischer. bpo of Rochester, 1459-1535. He describes the countess of Richmond. "She kept all the fasts" "and had her shirts & girdles of hair", which she wore some every week, ~~one~~ or the other, so that full often her skin was pierced therewith. She had prayers, masses, &c. most of the time till dinner, which was at 10 on eating day and 11 on fasting days. Rose not long after 5. Breakfast not mentioned. After dinner she had prayers, psalter, and various devotions in chapel & elsewhere. "Her kneeling was to her painful, & caused in her back pain & disordrs", many times. She used daily to say the crown for lady, & knelt at every ~~one~~ of the 63 aves. She had books of meditations also. Her weeping was marvellous. She received the sacrament "full with a dozen times every year."

*at 2. 263.*  
*con. 9. 286*  
 Sir Thomas Elyot physician to Henry VIII. wrote the "Castle of Health". Died 1546.

Exercise - strong - delving, bearing burdens, climbing a steep hill, hanging by the hands, wrestling, and others.

Swift Exercise - running, "playing with weapons tennis or throwing of the ball", "trotting backward and forward", going on the toes & holding up the hands.

Veheement Exercise or violent & swift "as dancing or gallicards", throwing the ball & running after it, for ball play, throwing the long dart, running in harness.

Moderate Exercise - long walking - going a journey.

He notices stooping & rising, lifting weights, taking up plummet on the ends of staves, lifting a spear or swordspike by the ends in each hand.

Singing, playing on wind instruments, loud reading, counterfeit battle, shooting. Plummetts are much used by great men.

Hugh Latimer.

He says "some women be very unnatural and forget their children".

*con. 9. 38*  
 He mentions "jolly clowns with their flardingales".

The nativity of Christ, he says, was first opened to shepherds, not to bishops or great lord. at Bethlehem.

*con. 9. 382*  
 Seventy, he thought, were generally unfaithful, as well as curates, parsons, vicars, bishops, &c. "Our clergymen declaim plainly that they love not Christ, because they feed not his flock". They do not intend to feed the sheep, but to be fed of the sheep - God accepteth men of every occupation that live without fraud or deceit. The pious cobbler was as much esteemed before God as St. Anthony, a great holy man.

John Leland. The first English antiquarian writer. Chaplain of Henry VIII. Died 1552.

George Cavendish - Gentleman usher of Wolsey, and of Henry VIII. Died 1557. wrote life of Wolsey

as well as a pleasant discourse of English Poetrie 1566. See at books in the Bodleian. See also the life of Wolsey by George Cavendish, printed at London, 1566. See also the life of Wolsey by George Cavendish, printed at London, 1566. See also the life of Wolsey by George Cavendish, printed at London, 1566.



John Belland, a Scotchman, about 1500 to 1580—describes the Scots as gluttons & drunkards, the fish, fowl & wild beasts could not have rest: and wine, when brought from France, Spain, Italy, Greece, &c. "And all manner of drugs & electuaries to murther the husband in idleness." Reason was blinded, and the body involved in a cloud of fatness, gave place to all infirmities.

Miles Coverdale, assisted Tyndale. 1st Edition of Bible 1535. The bible gave the first impulse to the practice of reading, in Gt. Britain.

Thomas Wilson. first critical writer upon the English language. Much good sense in him. Died 1581.

Roger Ascham - died 1568. Wrote the Schoolmaster, &c. "Gentlemen have a way at hand their glasses, so as to amend any thing amiss about their faces. Men take more care to obtain a master for their horse, than for their children, & pay more."

After Ascham, it became more common for learned men to write in English, but most of it was religious controversy.

p. 93. 175. Lady Jane Grey told Ascham how severe her father & mother were; she had to do everything in their presence, in weight, measure & number, "as perfectly as God made the world," or else be sharply taunted, cruelly threatened, & sometimes was punished "with pinches, nips, and bobs and other ways, that I think myself in hell" till I go to Mr. Elmer, the schoolmaster. He was gentle and mild (something unusual.)

The Rod 7.415  
b. 387.  
Ch. 2. 299.  
7.296  
Schoolmaster - Elyot says School masters were cruel and irascible. Mr. Hallam says all testimonies show that boys were savagely treated in school. "The fierceness of the Tudor government, the religious intolerance, the polemical brutality, the rigorous justice, when justice it was, of our laws, seem to have engendered a hardness of character, which displayed itself in a severity of discipline," when it did not reach arbitrary cruelty. (Introduction to Lit. of 15. 16. & 17th Cent. Vol. 1. 534)

John Bale was a bigoted & strenuous & scrupulous reformer. He wrote a play, *King John*, about 1550, in which he set forth the faults of the papacy. He was executed in 1542.

John Bell lived 1495-1563. Strype says of him. "His pen was sharp & foul enough sometimes, when he had such foul subjects to deal with, as the cruelty and uncleanness of many of the popish priests, and prelates and cloisterers."

John Skelton died 1529. Poems published 1568. Wrote a poem on the death of Cardinal Beaufort, &c. & on the death of Cardinal Beaufort, &c. & on the death of Cardinal Beaufort, &c.

Stephen Hawes a poet wrote 1505, &c. in the service of the Duke of Norfolk. Some of his poetry is in Percy's *Reliques*.

George Gascoigne, a poet, died 1577, in middle life. A collection of his pieces, published 1572 is entitled, "a hundred sundry flowers bound up in one small rose."



# 372 English Poets ~~1558-1649~~ - Writers -

Period from 1558 to 1649 - [Some on 42 page are not here.]

Thomas Sackville - 1536-1608. Poet.

John Harrington - 1534-1582. Poet.

Nicholas Breton - 1555-1624. Poet

Henry Constable - died 1594, etc. Poet

44.2.7126 Town & Country by Breton -

In Town he had gallant damers and lads; - lute, recorder, cittern, harp & flute; stamping steed - and gallant geldings; spear, shield, pistol, arquebus and rapier; games of primero & imperiale, in which he passed the time with courtly dames; Dainty dishes, sugared wine, fine flesh of fish, Dinner at noon; & dainty dinners; gay garments, and rich jewels; dreams of sweet Delight.

In Country he would have, instead of those, country jills; "old tobacco asses" (instead of gallant lads); music on a reed; ride a carting tit on a strawen pannal; Ditching spade (instead of arms); country plays & ale & cakes on holidays; "make good cheer with bread & cheese"; "leeks, onions, whigowshey" instead of dainty dinners; green or grey coat; in a place where is no pleasure, "sing the song of woe away".

Joshua Sylvester - died 1618 aged 55. Poet.

Richard Barnfield - published 1594-1597. Poet

Sylvester in his "Soul's Errand", says the court "shines like rotten wood"; the church "shows w<sup>th</sup> its good and doth no good"; statesmen influenced by ambition & hatred; "zeal lacks devotion"; "love is but lust"; physic is bold; arts have no soundness; schools want profundness, etc.

Edmund Spenser & John Milton united Grecian philosophy with Puritanism. - Spenser was an advocate of arbitrary power.

Robert Southwell, born 1560 - a catholic priest - executed at Tyburn. - a poet - wrote in prison.

John Harrington, son of above J.H. died about 1612. Poet.

p 366 He represents a "precise tailor" (probably a puritan) as reading his bible, walking manfully talking meekly; hearing three lectures & two sermons weekly; he shunned bad company, used no oaths, zealously kept the Sabbath's rest, his meat for that day was dressed out the eve before. - yet being strongly tempted, he cableaged cloth. (Cableaged = to be tempted or seduced) - *querry David of Edinburgh*

Michael Drayton - 1563 - 1631 wrote Drama, etc. *whole Polyglotton*

Sir Henry Wotton - 1568 - 1639. Poet &c. *Robert Wilson, dramatist*

Sir John Davies 1570 - 1620. Poet. *Robert Wilson, dramatist*

Richard Corbet, bp. 1582 - 1635 Poet. *Robert Wilson, dramatist*

Sir John Beaumont - 1582. 1628. Poet, with Francis

Dr Henry King, chaplain to James I. Poet.

Thomas Carew - 1589 - 1639. Poet. *Robert Wilson, dramatist*

poet & chemist - often immoral & irreverent

heartless. *William Shakespeare* "Flatt'ring" *Robert Wilson, dramatist*

some had such rich hair, flowing on cheeks, red coral lips, teeth of pearl, silver



Phineas Fletcher 1584-1650 } brother - poets - cousins of  
 Giles Fletcher, younger } the dramatist

one of these makes his shepherd's bed of wool -  
 he is waked by the lark, & note, of other birds: he  
 sings, dances, & country plays. "The smooth  
 p. 398 leaves beeches in the forest receive them, with cool  
 shades" - when he dies "green turfs with grassy tomb  
 content him".

19.3.2

374

Achaste & beautiful female - has a silver arch upon  
 her forehead, lilac roses on her cheeks, ruby lips, teeth  
 are pearls, &c. Lily hand, yellow locks,  
 [like the golden hair of] Sandys' Ovid

George Wither - 1588-1667. He was imprisoned  
 for his satire "Shift or Shift" 1613. He was on  
 the popular side - was imprisoned by royalists,  
 and again after the Restoration - continued to  
 write satires in prison. [a Puritan poet]

Waggon

p. 175

p. 301

M. 1. 365

M. 2. 743

His Christmas Poem gives a picture of the times:  
 Every man was to be jolly; each room with  
 ivy leaves & orest of every post with holly; & [land],  
 round the foreheads; all be merry & drown sorrow  
 in a cup of wine.

"Now all our neighbors' chimneys smoke,  
 and Christmas blocks are burning,  
 Their ovens thry with baked meat choke,  
 and all their spits are turning."

There was a Christmas pie. Young men, maids and  
 girls & boys were all merry; "Jack shall pipe and  
 Gill shall dance"; They bought new things.

Those that hardly had bread to eat or rag to wear  
 all the year, will now have cloth & dainty fare.

Poor men carry capons to justices - if their feil they  
 have warrants - Good farmers in the country nurse  
 the poor; some landlords spend their money on  
 lust & pride in London, and "drab & dice their  
 lands away. The client forbears his suit,  
 the prisoners heart is eased; the debtor drinks  
 away his cares - We say, "hang sorrow! care  
 will kill a cat, and therefore let's be merry!"

They ramble abroad, they scramble for nuts &  
 apples in the hall, "the roofs with laughter sound",  
 They drink & think the house good & sound.

Wenchers sing about the streets with Wassail bowls.

The boys come to catch the owls, the kitchen boy  
 broke his box (to get his money?) & neighbors come  
 by flocks "to the dealing of the ox".

Sheepcotes have king and queen; some go a  
 murrning; some play at Rowland & o & twelve, other  
 games; they sing roundelays, & the streets with  
 echoing ring; and all witness that they are merry.

Francis Quarles, 1592-1644. on the Royal side.  
 yet his writings have a tinge of puritanism. Poet.  
 (Puritanism meant serious piety.)

To Chastity - he says

"Sure thou art not; or kept when no man shows thee;  
 Or changed so much, scarce man or woman knows thee".

Long. 352

In his Decay of Life - The storms have forced the  
 quaking trees, to wrap their trembling limbs in suits of  
 mossy frieze; in autumn or winter.



174 English Poets ~~of the 17th century~~.

p. 294 m. 18 George Herbert, 1593 - 1633. Poet - brother of Lord Herbert of Cherbury. was a rector &c.

William Halcington - 1605 - 1654. Poet, a Catholic.

ll. 8. 328. Sir John Suckling - 1608. 1641. Poet, a cavalier & voluptuous.  
He alludes to the Sun's dancing on Easter day.

Com. 9. 376 His Ballad upon a Wedding.

The party came down stairs forty pairs at least,  
The maid described - round, plump, full of juice.  
Finger small - the ring would not stay on.

p. 379 Little feet - cheeks red & white - lips red - small mouth.

Great wedding feast - meat on the table. The company  
was seated before the parson could say grace. Hats fly  
off and yet the carouse [after the eating?] healths go  
round, & then the house. They rise up & dance &c.  
Then sit again; then dance again and kiss.  
The bride was undressed, &c.

John Chalkhill - - died 1679 & 280. Poet.

William Cartwright. - 161 - 1643. Poet. Royalist.

Robert Herrick b. 1591 - died after 1661. Poet, & a gay one.

He was vicar 20 years - then became a poet, - and  
lived a loose life like other royalists, & drank wine &c.  
Restored to his vicarage after the Restoration, when about 70.  
He has some "unbaptized" or "ynges" as he calls them - that  
is, obscene &c. - not to be printed. - some beautiful ones.

p. 5. The Cock, he calls, the ploughman's horn, which  
calls for the "lily wristed morn".

Those that ploughed whistled & sung.

Com. 9. 286 The Country sports were on eves & holy-days -  
The young men & maids dance, tripping the "country  
round" (a kind of dance) crowned with daffodils & daisies.

They had wakes, quintils, May poles graced  
with garlands, morris dance, Whitman ale,  
Shearing feast, Harvest home, Wassail bowl,  
"that is tossed up after fox in the hole". Mummers,  
Twelfth night Kings & Queens, Christmas Revellings,  
rust brown mirth, russet wit - have haies  
in the snow, catch larks in a ~~stomach~~ammel net  
Cock-rood & glade, to take the pheasant, lime-twig,  
snare, pitfall, to catch pilfering birds.  
"O happy life." &c.

p. 379 He like all the rest calls Julia's lips rubies, her  
teeth pearls, her cheeks roses.

His house, as he describes it, had a low porch,  
m. 15. 147 small Hall, parlor and kitchen, and  
a little Buttery, and in it a little bin for bread, &c.  
He ate worts, plums - and water cress, and beet,  
He drank wassail bowls spiced to the brim &c.

May Morning he describes.

[Herrick's "sworn to modigalitie" is a line in Th Lodge's Satire]



English Poets of ~~Poese~~ Writers.

Richard Lovelace 1618-1658 - a royalist poet.  
 died poor & miserable. He had the licentiousness of  
 the cavaliers.

Thomas Randolph - 1605-1634. Poet. Intemperate.  
 p. 379  
 Cor. 9. 353 He refers to the "stately forehead smooth & high"  
 of a lady - sparkling eye compared to Venus (Aster)  
 cheek of both roses, (white & red) cherry lips.

Sir William Davenant 1605-1668. Poet. The writer  
 thinks he was not a son of Shakespeare, though so  
 reported.

John Cleveland - 1613-1658. Poet & royalist

Jarvis Shirley - published poetry 1646 - a royalist  
 & strange to tell, not licentious.

Richard Crashaw - a religious poet - became a  
 Catholic - died about 1650 at Rome. Wrote his  
 poetry before he changed - published 1646.

"Temperance or the Cheep Physician", is  
 one of his poems. By taking drugs, or the  
 "oraculous doctors mystic pills" (compositions)  
 or hard words made into pills, you will  
 only gain a costlier disease.

Sir Richard Fanshawe - 1607-1666. Poet.  
 Royalist.

King James VI of Scotland; published poetry 1584.  
 Milton remarks that kings "are strong in  
 legions, but weak at arguments."

William Drummond, of Scotland - 1585-1649

Dramatists. [M. 2. 259. Of this p. 375. 376. 377. 378. 380. 386. 391. 329  
 M. 8. 321.]

The old miracles or miracle plays  
 were superintended by the clergy, & taken  
 from Scripture & lives of Saints, yet were  
 very profane & indecorous. The deity  
 was sometimes one of the persons introduced.

Moral Plays followed, in which Mercy  
 Truth, Justice, &c. were the players. An  
 improvement. The devil was retained.  
 These were popular under Henry VIII. called  
 moralities, & found of information.

Next human beings with human names  
 were introduced, & the English drama took  
 its rise, in first half of 16th century.

John Heywood wrote plays called Interludes  
 some were acted before 1521. Heywood satirized  
 the clergy, and favored the Reformation.

Nicholas Udall, master of Westminster School,  
 wrote a Comedy before 1551.  
 M. 8. 319

John Still wrote Gammer Gurton's Needle, 1565.

Thomas Sackville, afterwards Earl of Dorset & They wrote the

Thomas Norton  
 first known English Tragedy - was acted before Elizabeth, Jan. 1561.



Dramatists -

Richard Edwards wrote a Tragedy,  
Panor & Pythias, which was acted before the  
Queen at Oxford 1566.

*Other Tragedies & Comedies appeared about this time  
and after his death, as he had done, Hughes &c.  
First licensed Theatre at London, at Blackfriars, 1576.*

Then were five Theatres in London, about  
the time Shakespeare commenced, & very many  
actors, besides private establishments.

The Globe Theatre was open on top, except a thatched roof over the stage - was circular - others were of this form - were of wood.

were of this form. - were of wood.  
 The Cavaliers & Officers of Elizabeth's Court sat  
 in boxes below the gallery, or were on stools  
 on the stage. The floor was rush strewn, and  
 some gallants lay on the floor, & their pages  
 brought them pipes & tobacco.

The Middle Class were in the pit on  
 yard, had no seats.

350. yard, & had no seats.  
No moveable Scenery till after the Restoration.

No churches till after the ~~Reformation~~<sup>stor</sup>.

The female parts were played by boys and delicate looking young men, who had gross language put in their mouths.

John Lily - wrote 9 plays between 1579 & 1600  
 4 Pl. <sup>they were the other 9 not poor & neglected.</sup>  
 1581 left + died. June 8, 30

George Peck, wrote 1584 & after & acted. [unc. 8. 307]

Thomas Kyd produced a play 1588, Pericles: Prince of Tyre  
1592

Thomas Nash wrote Plays - one 1592

Robert Greene wrote plays + died 1592

Thomas Lodge enacted 1584. - wrote a play 1594

Christopher Marlowe, the greatest dramatist  
before Shakespeare, an actor. born abt 1562.

He wrote the Life & Death of Dr. Faustus, a play  
Dr. F. sold his soul to the devil. [with a killing by a  
style in a finished  
June 1873

Anthony Munday - wrote 1574. <sup>after</sup> <sup>a good doctor,</sup> <sup>the same 1573</sup>  
Henry Chettle (and others) <sup>inferior persons.</sup>  
<sup>(with them in green - and</sup> <sup>inferior persons.</sup> <sup>in black were performed</sup>

Between 1591 and 1597 about 100 plays were performed

William Shakespeare - 1564 - 1616

William Shakespeare - 1564 - 1616  
 married Ann Hathaway 7 years older than  
 himself in a hurry, before he was 18 - first  
 child born 6 months after the marriage.  
 Remained in London 1586 or 1587

Hallam says he is prone to quibble & play with words -  
"is sometimes indelicate where indelicacy is  
least pardonable, and where it jars most painfully  
with the associations of the scene."

with the associations of the scene. I repeat the story of the man wounded, experience of men's wickedness or nature of the world as we see it, all these associations often made his heart beat at ease, and his mind calm. Many of these associations were actual.

Mr Taylor in the letter says his name was John Taylor born 1580 died 1650



# English Poets & Prose Writers Dramatists

377

Ben Jonson - 1574 - 1637.

Cor. 9. 378 He was habitually intemperate - rough in manners, often in bitter feuds. He was the centre of wit & revellers. He was poor. He had much more learning than Shakespeare.

He uses the words "as I guess": "Turtle-billing lovers".  
"Hastur makes waltz": "Bedstaff": "Stools to sit on".  
"Hail shot": "Pipe of Tobacco".  
"Philosophers Stone", or "Eliscir, & their wonders".  
[He calls James I. "the best of his roof of foot" - which was pronounced]

M. 2. 294  
Cor. 9. 379 Court Masques - common under Henry VIII. on remarkable occasions; reached their height under James I and Charles I. - had their dialogue, song, music. Usually took place in the hall of the palace. They had gods, goddesses, nymphs, such personages as Night, Day, Beauty, Fortitude. Elizabeth had masques. The Queen, princes, nobles, and ladies of the highest rank took part in them. They were in their glory under James I. Jonson wrote for masques. (see his works).

Beaumont and Fletcher. { B. 1586 - 1616  
F. 1576 - 1625

Miscel. 11  
B. 3. 447 They wrote 52 Dramas. Country people held that every flower signified some thing - so said in a play.

Licentiousness was the master vice of the theatre of B. and F. - Fletcher wrote after Beaumont's death & was still more indecent. Their Dramas are "a rank, unweeded garden". They were gentle-men, and imitated gentlemen better than Shakespeare.

Thomas Dekker - died about 1638. Wrote more than 20 plays. Lived in irregularity & poverty.

John Webster - lived & died about with Dekker - wrote some plays with him & with others. Wrote 1602 & after.  
M. 2. 279 "Hell" is a word used by all dramatists with great frequency and levity.

Thomas Middleton. Wrote 20 plays. Died 1627. Active in 1603.  
Cor. 9. 422 He wrote the "Witch", a play. The witches going about the cauldron sing -

"Black spirits and white; red spirits and grey;  
mingle, mingle, mingle, you that mingle may."  
They throw in the blood of a bat, juice of a toad, oil of adder &c. Shakespeare

John Marston, wrote 1600, 1602 &c.  
Robert Taylor. William Rowley. Cyril Tourneur.  
Cor. 9. 422 The "Witch of Edmonton" written by 3 or 4 - Extract:  
[Rowley, Dekker, Ford.]

Altogether Sawyer says

And why on me? why should the envious word  
Throw all their scandalous malice upon me?  
'Cause I am poor, deformed and ignorant.  
And like a bow buckled about together,  
By some men strong in mischief, themselves.  
Some call me witch,  
and being ignorant of myself, they go about  
To teach me how to be one; urging  
That my bad tongue (by their bad usage made so,) <sup>Shakespeare</sup>  
Does speak their cattle, doth bewitch their corn,  
Themselves, their servants and their horses at murrice;  
This they enforce upon me, and in part  
make me to credit it.

13 lines in  
the  
1607, 1607

The play is called  
of the  
1607, 1607



## The Witch of Edmonton — continued.

She was so much abused and injured that she desired to be a witch, to be avenged. Wished to get a familiar, & to learn spells, charms & incantations.

"I am shunned  
and hated like a sickness, made a scorn  
To all degrees and sexes."

She had heard of familiars in shape of mice, rats  
ferrets, weasels. She longed for revenge.

"'Tis all one  
To be a witch as to be accounted one." she said.

George Cooke; Thomas Nabbes; Nathaniel Field  
John Day; Henry Glapthorne, Thos. Randolph,  
Richard Brome — all wrote plays & comedies & tragedies.  
Phillips Massinger — a tragic poet & obscure & poor.  
born about 1584 — died 1640.

John Ford. 1586 — 1639. His best play is devoted  
to incestuous passion — brother & sister. "The old  
Dramatist loved to sport with forbidden themes,  
which tempted the imagination, and awoke those  
slumbering fires of pride, passion & wickedness, that  
were in the human heart." They were free from ordi-  
nary restraints, flung themselves into the full  
of the passions, and gave expression to wild thoughts and  
unnatural promptings, which should have been repressed.

"The passion of love was an all-pervading fire, with them,  
that consumed the decencies of life; sometimes, gross and  
sensual, at other sweet & fervent. There were glimpses  
of the light of religion in the midst of the darkest vice  
and debauchery. — Shakspeare was generally above  
this region, but had been soiled by its impurities in his  
Sonnets and Venus and Adonis.

Thomas Heywood — wrote 1596 & after to 1640. Claimed to have written  
the whole or a part of 225 dramas.

"The Shepherd with his homely lass,  
As many merry hours doth pass,  
As courtiers with their costly girls  
Though richly decked in gold & pearls."

His description of a drunken frolic — The party thought  
they were in a storm at sea, & began to throw overboard,

"Stools, tables, tressels, trenchers, bedsteads, cups,  
Pots, plate and glasses."

They had a bass-viol and a stick for the fiddler to play with.

They had a gittern. The people outside seized the spoil  
as it was thrown out.

James Shirley — 1596 born; died about 1666.

Less impure than most of his contemporaries. His females  
express pure, honest

Deighton, Heyday, Gifford, Dekker, Wilson, and Dutton, Holman, Wombourne, Smith.  
2, 3, or 4 of these wrote dramas together often 2, & sometimes 3, 4.

He was censored 1642, and plays suppressed. but — Government  
was permitted to have theatrical performances in 1656, and in a  
Theatre in 1658.



English Poets, &c  
Miscellaneous

379

John Still, bps. (1565) wrote Gammer Gurtons Needle  
In a convivial song, a man loves -  
"nut brown toast" (toast in ale?)  
"a crab laid in the fire". (ie. a crab apple roasted).  
and a little head, and much ale.

William Hunnis wrote "Handful of Honeysuckles" 1585.  
misc. 3.126 The specimens given are very pious - like  
a puritan.

William Warner's "Albion's England" is said  
to be an epitome of English History - published in  
1586. He died at a ripe age in 1607 - was an  
attorney of the common pleas.  
He has a Tale of Argentele and Cervant.  
1620. 1692. improved edition. 1802.

B. 346. "Working days", the old designation of those not Sab-  
baths nor holidays - in this Tale.

misc. 208. "Startups" (uram made his black & soft by bacon's fat.  
Long 9.320)

misc. 412 "Sweet Whie or Growt" (uram had in his bottle.

Brown bread, white Cheese, & wild dings (apples) he had,  
a cur & sheephook - an oaten pipe. in his scrip  
Startups called "greasy shoes".

"Drivel [spittle] on his beard" - he cleaned off. {He as shepherd  
of a shaven (by

misc. 2. 233 He describes a beautiful Lady.

below. "Stature comely tall" - "gait well graced"

p. 403 "a globe like head" - "forehead smooth & high".

p. 399 "Gold-like hair" [yellow hair is often admired by these  
old writers

p. 375 "An even nose", "a greyish eye stood out each side".

Long 9.34 "Rosy Cheeks" - "round ruddy lips"

"9.353 "Just set teeth" - "a mouth in mien" [midding for size

"A round and dimpled chin". "Snowy neck".

Neck & blueish veins, & was "bolt upright upon her  
poaty shoulders" - "her veined breasts" he calls "beating balls"

"her middle wand-like falling still" [tapering?

"Long & limber arms" - "white & azure wrists"

"Slender fingers" - "smooth & lily fists."

"A leg in print, and pretty foot"

"Every star consorting to a pure complexion".

"Malerden wit" - "her tongue of speech was of rare".

"Smiles sober" - "looks cheerful unto all" - "neither  
want nor wayward; mell nor gall"

"Mind quiet" - "patient mood" - "not disdaining any".

"Not gibing, gadding, gaudy"

The higher classes, especially those about the  
Court are very often represented as profligate  
and faithless. Sometimes others are lashed. Women  
are too often represented as unfaithful & unprincipled.  
If they have not gone astray, they deserve to. They must  
be watched. - Warner says -  
"The merchant trafficking abroad, suspects his wife at home."

above. Another beautiful Lady - 1606 - roses & lilies in face [cheeks]  
cherry lips, teeth of orient-pearl, "like rosebuds filled with snow".  
brows are landed bows - [see Cherry Lips. misc. 2. 242

above { P. 411 in Rape of R. gives Belinda "eyes bright as the sun", "smooth ivory neck"  
Warton has "black eyes, cherry lips, ivory teeth".



Miscellaneous.

an Old poet, nameless, describes the—

Or Hall, hung with pikes, guns, bows, swords and bucklers— "old buttery hatch worn off the hooks"—(over the door?) Old Kitchen, &c.

The owner paid his servants wages every quarter.

Old things are praised. 200 + 250 years ago, and new ones condemned. The old were best, they thought, viz old times & things. — There was in the old times less hospitality, fewer servants maintained, more pride in dress, equipage, buildings, French cooks, &c. Poor men suffered by the change. The Christmas feasting in the old halls, for the tenants, & labourers, & the ale drinking, seemed to be changing.

Dramatic Fiction. "The sources of such fictions must ever lie in fact, or in truth; in the detail of actual events; in portraits of existing manners and prevailing habits; in the exhibition of humor and every passion, adapted to the taste of the age. The truth or verisimilitude of these fictions is the cause of their success." Barry Cornwall, *Memoir of Ben Jonson*. Cornwall places Jonson next to Shakespeare.

1639 or Henry Wotton, wrote some poems. Ambassador, James E.  
M. 16 | He gave the famous definition of an ambassador:—  
p. 10. | "An honest man sent to lie abroad for the good of his  
country." Another of his sayings: "the itch of dis-  
putation is the scab of the church". Leigh Hunt.

Richard Corbett! 1582-1635. Was a royal chaplain of James I., a dean, D.D., vicar, prebendary, bps of Oseford 1629, and of Norwich 1632. "He was a complete personification of that jolly, dare devil species of ecclesiastic who flourished in those lax times, when convivial habits promoted a man's progress in the church with greater certainty than the strictest principles and the most decorous conduct!" He was wild, intemperate, irreverent. He caroused at taverns & devoted the night to deep potations at home with his chaplain.

George Graffman, born 1857, wrote *Drum's* *Personal History*,  
often referred to as a satirist.

ms. 16. Howell vis. to Denmark in 1600 - Describes the drunkenness there. 2. Unique. See  
p. 93.

*Cale, by Howell, opposite. [Misc. 2. 230*

"In this island, the old drink was ale, noble ale; then which I heard a great foreign doctor affirm, there is no liquor more increase the radical moisture & prexworth the natural heat, the two pillars that support life."

"The Alepole signifieth there is good ale in the house where the alepole standeth." Frith.

Elleuife - and by B. Jonson.



## English Prose writers.

1558-1644

Sir Philip Sidney - his Arcadian has fallen into neglect.  
 "Gentility (he says) is nothing else but ancient riches."  
 So he would have a gentleman sell no land.  
 "Marry thy daughters in time, lest they  
 marry themselves." This on Education.

Richard Hooker. 1553-1600

Francis Bacon - 1561-1626.

[He had not early and over-estimated worldly cunning. Long. Hall.]

p. 100-101.  
Misc. 2. 158.  
" 2. 131

He was servile, & crouched to those in power.  
 Essex favored him, & did him many friendly deeds,  
 yet he appeared against Essex, & tried to magnify  
 his crimes. — His habits were improvident  
 and ostentatious. He lent himself to the most  
 arbitrary measures of James I., & some cruel  
 ones. He grossly perverted his duty in his  
 political & judicial capacities. He had a  
 great income, but lived in so prodigal a style  
 that he owed £22,000 when he died, 1626.

Sir Walter Raleigh - 1552-1618

He had great failings - promoted the downfall of Essex,  
 - & was shamefully treated by Cecil, Coke, James I.  
 and others. [See also. Poetry also. He overestimated worldly cunning.]

Richard Grafton, a chronicler - under Edward VI. &  
 John Stow - 1525-1605. Died in poverty.

misc. 1. { Raphael Holinshed - died about 1580. Principal.  
 p. 58. { William Harrison, a clergyman & Goadutors in the  
 { John Hooker, uncle of Richard II. Chronicler  
 { Francis Botolph. John Stow continued

The Description of Britain etc. Inhabitantry,  
 giving a picture of the country, & manners of the  
 people, in 16th Century, was written by Harrison.

The History of England to the Norman Conquest was by  
 Holinshed; of Ireland by Richard Sturmihurst, &  
 by the others; of Scotland mostly translated from Boece  
 by Holinshed & Harrison; of England to 1577 when the  
 first edition was published, by Holinshed.

2d Edition 1587. Some omitted. Restored 1807-8

Richard Hakluyt. - 1553-1616. Clergyman

Samuel Purchas. about 1571-1628. Clergyman.

John Davis - a navigator. 1585, &amp;c.

George Sandys. Travels in Turkey &amp;c. 1610. &amp;c. pub. 1615. 1643

Wm Lithgow. - a Scot. A great Traveller. pub. 1640. 1640.

James Howell - a Traveller &amp; writer - 1596-1666.

Con. 9. 351 Buttery - was the place for drinks. Howell says  
 "In the nonage of the world men & beasts had but one  
 buttery - the fountain & river."

Con. 9. 261 Drinks in England, Ale; Beer happen in later. That is,  
 Ale had no hops - beer had hops. — next Ale the glaze,  
 M 16. 293 Braggot and Mead - Cider & Perry. Then  
 are the natural drinks of E.

Uisquebaugh - much drunk in Ireland - less in England,  
 and called aqua vitae for drunk in aqua vitae measures -  
 drunk in Ireland by beer-glassfuls.  
 Beer is common drink in Netherlands, Low Germany, & other parts of  
 Denmark, Swithland (Sweden) Norway, Prussia, Poland,  
 293 Mead in Russia & Tartary. In Turkey, water, sherbet. Cough



1558-1649.

\* James Howell - continued.

p. 24. *Camphe* of the Turks, he says in a letter dated  
 cause. 1. 81 Oct 7. 1634, in England - "is made of a brown berry  
 " 2. 245 and it may be called their clubbing drink between  
 time 9. 224. meals, which though it be not very gustful to the  
 palate, yet it is very comfortable to the stomach &  
 good for the sight" - (Bunton notices Coffea. See p. 24.)

cellar - he uses this as he does bettery for place  
 musc. 2. 240. for drinks - says the Turk goes to "nature's cellar,"  
 either to the well or river, to drink water.  
 Some Turks venture to drink wine. - There is  
 nothing said of his visiting Turkey - perhaps he did.

m. 16. 293 Wines are drunk in France, Spain, & other wine countries,  
 and not much beer. Some bydromel in Spain.  
 con. 9. 261 Cider is used in Normandy, where wine is not made.  
 Some beerhouses in Paris & elsewhere.

Some one said "good wine carried a man to heaven"  
 Howell thought that if this were true, "more English  
 go to heaven this way than any other." He says  
 m. 15. 245. "wines go down every one's throat, both young  
 and old, like milk". This in letter of 1634.  
 much of the wine in England was mixed or adul-  
 terated. - Wines were formerly drunk in  
 aqua vitae measures; but now, as above.

m. 16. 193. Excess of drinking. Spain & Italy are freest.  
 Greeks & Germans drink deepest.

m. 16. 293 He relates the story of those who when drunk, thought  
 they were at sea in a gale, & began to throw things  
 out of the window. Says it was a company of low Dutch.

Sir Thomas Herbert - a Traveller. died 1682.  
 began to travel 1626.

William Camden, Antiquarian, 1551-1623. unus.  
 His great work published 1586. 6th Edit. 1607. Latin  
 English Translation published 1610.

Sir Henry Spelman. Antiquary. 1562-1641

Sir Robert Cotton. same. 1570-1631

John Speed. Historian of E. 1552-1629  
 a Tailor by trade - yet long his History was the best of E.

Samuel Daniel. History of E. 1562-1619. Poet also

Thomas May. Poet & Historian. 1595-1630.

Sir John Hayward Historian pub 1599 died 1627

Richard Knolles. History of Turks. died 1610

Arthur Wilson. Historian - 1596-1652

Sir Richard Baker. Chronicle of E. 1568-1645

m. 330 Sir Henry Watton. Historian &c.

\* James Howell defended the King & his episcopacy - he did not hate a  
 Turk or Infidel, but said he "could be content to see an Anabaptist  
 go to hell on a Brownist's back". He afterwards became a  
 Refuser of Communion, & after the restoration returned to his  
 old friends. Grahamet. 439



## Prose Writers.

Thomas Hobbes - 1588 - 1679 - age 91 or 2.

a zealous royalist - a friend of despotism -  
detestable political and religious doctrines.  
an able man. Was not an atheist. He had  
to flee from Paris, & returned to England, where  
no one disturbed <sup>him</sup> under Cromwell, &c.

Lord Herbert of Cherbury - a deist - intimate  
with Hobbes 1581 - 1633.

He was the first that reduced deism to  
a system, in a publication, 1624, printed  
at Paris in Latin. Reprinted in London  
1645, and other works.

King James I.

His principal works were Basilicon Doron;  
Daemonology, and A Counterblast to  
Tobacco.

Robert Burton - Thomas Dekker.

Joseph Hall, bps. - Sir Thomas Overbury.

The Tinker is described by Overbury (then of James I.)  
He travels about & carries all his wealth in his  
back. Likes good ale. Always has a song.  
Had rather steal than beg.

The Milkmaid (Overbury) rises with Chaucer;  
Her breath is sweet like a new-made haycock.  
In winter evenings, she sits at her wheel & sings  
She bestows her years wages at the next fair  
- in garments. - The garden & beehive are  
all her physic & surgery. Her companions  
are old songs, honest thoughts & prayers.

A Franklin seems an ancient yeoman.  
He goes to the field & oversees all. His fold gives  
him food & raiment. Does not go to law. Does  
not sit up late. He hunts the gadger & hare,  
setteth snares for snipes & pitfalls for  
blackbirds. Shears his sheep in July. Allows  
pastime, & lets country lasses dance in the  
churchyard - but lads wakes, &c. Is ready  
to die.

John Earle, bps. of Worcester, & next of Salisbury.  
agreeable & facetious. Born 1601. died 1665.  
His Essays 1628 & Character

The Clown he describes or "plain country fellow."  
His conversation is among beasts. His talons long  
He guides the plough & the plough his thoughts  
His ditch & landmark is the ground of his  
meditations. His habitation is a poor thatched  
roof & has loop holes to let out the smoke.  
Abundance of bacon within. He is a great eater.  
He thanks a Sunday a day to make merry in.  
He salutes his neighbors with a blunt curse.  
He thinks nothing to be vice but pride and ill  
husbandry. He is a rigged all the week  
on market day, if corn sells well, he thinks he  
may be drunk with a good conscience. He cares  
not for death, if his harvest is in.



Owen Feltham - published 1628.

Peter Heylin - 1600 - 1662.

Con. 3. 115 His account of the French - Was in France 1625.

They feed not the belly, but the palate.

Private grace is common. There is no method in their eating, and no carver. The cooking is Scottish. They are inconstant at church.

Very fond of dancing

John Sellden, a lawyer - 1584 - 1654.

An excellent man - sided with the people.

Of great learning. He was in advance of his age.

James Usher, bps. - 1581 - 1656.

He was Calvinistic - Did not believe that bps. were a distinct order.

William Chillingworth - 1602 - 1644. Tolerant.

John Hales - 1584. 1656. Tolerant.

Hales said he would renounce the church of E. if it required him to believe other Christians were damned; he said those who concluded other men to be damned, wished them so.

Antiquity - is means authority born some ages before us. Time makes no alteration as to the truth of things; they are the same. Things ancient were once new. If false, time cannot make them true; if true, time does not make them more true. Hales.

Con. 3. 384 Prevalence of an opinion is no argument for its truth. Universality is not a proof of truth. The beginning of error is mostly from private persons; the continuer of error is the multitude.

John Gardener 1605 - 1662.

He wrote Hon Basilike.

Jeremy Taylor - 1613 - 1667.

Con. 4. 17 His Liberty of Prophesying is said to be the first avowed defence of Toleration in England. 1647.

Sir Thomas Browne. Physician. Vulgar Errors. 1646.

He believed in apparitions & ghosts, but thought they were not souls of men, but the inquiet walks of devils.

Style under Elizabeth & James - a propensity to false wit & disfigured poetry under E. and prose

under J. This fashion arose at court, & consisted in the indulgence of every monstrous & overstrained conceit. Outrages on language were committed in all places - bar, pulpit, &c. It was a propensity to substitute strange and unexpected connections of sound & idea for real humor - A sermon before University of Oxford by a layman says "I have brought you some fine biscuits, baked in the oven of charity, carefully conserved for the chickens of the church, the sparrows of the spirit, and the sweet swallows of salvation". It was applauded by the learned body. Language assumed a facility and clearness, a fluency & grace, before strangers to it, after the Restoration.

See in  
Ed. Scott's  
Life of  
Dryden

Con. 2. 247  
2. 187



1649 to 1689.

The great events in England, Civil wars, abolition of monarchy, &c. did not make much change in literature & taste. Authors were a select class, and literature, the delight of the learned & ingenious, had not become a food for the multitude. The chivalrous & romantic spirit that prevailed under Elizabeth, had begun to yield to more sober & practical views of human life & society; a spirit of inquiry was extending. The peaceful reign of James was favourable to this change. The old style was revived under Charles I. partially, but did not extend much beyond court & nobility. Poetry & the drama did not flourish in the civil war & protectorate; England was at home & abroad -

Charles II. was indolent & sensual, and his taste perverted, & was injurious to art, literature & morals. Poetry declined & became a courtly amusement or pandar to immorality. Yet science was cultivated, all genius was not tainted; and there were great triumphs of poetry, learning & philosophy. Milton, Taylor, Locke, Clarendon, Burnet, Bunyan, &c. flourished. Poets.

Abraham Cowley; Henry Vaughan 1614-1695.  
Thomas Stanley - was <sup>only</sup> son of Thomas Stanley  
of Camberlain Green in Hertfordshire, pub. 1651.

In his *Vote to Anacreon*, he shows the  
Wine drinking & its accompaniments.  
We'll sing, laugh, revel, rant, & quaff all night.  
- he has, red noses, jovial carnival,  
tunes of the quartet, hot, broken riccaps,  
incense of Indian smoke, gammon, sausages,  
magnificent flaggons, flap dragons, Deepbowl, &c.

Sir John Denham 1615-1668. Royalist. Gambler.

William Chamberlayne 1619-1689. Physician, Royalist.

Edmund Waller - 1605-1687. He praised Cromwell  
and then Charles II.

John Milton 1608-1674.

Andrew Marvell 1620-1678

Wages for serving in Parliament, was formerly  
for a burgess of a day, a knight of the shire 4s. Reduced  
to this under Edward II. Marvell was paid by his  
constituents of Hull about the Restoration - said to  
be the last that received wages. Wages given up  
by some, or many, in time of civil war.

Garden. Marvell's Garden was an orchard -  
flowers cut in these trees their mistress's name;  
Fair trees; ripe apples, nectarine, peach,  
melons, flowers, green grass, &c.

Marvell ridicules the Dutch for many things - one way  
their toleration of all religions - *Amsterdam*  
was "Tink, Christian, Pagan, Jew, staple of sects  
and mint of schism". Every strange opinion finds  
credit - "the universe & church is only there". This was  
in the Dutch war, under Cromwell.

Samuel Butler 1612-1680. Died in poverty.

Charles Cotton - 1630-1687. He translated Montaigne

Earl of Roscommon 1633-1684.

"He was a gambler - but his poetry was decent."

Edm. 11. 477. Pope says Roscommon was the only moral writer of the  
age of Charles II.



"The Reign of Charles II was a period fraught with evil and danger to all the sober restraints, the decencies and homely virtues of domestic life": "Poetry suffered in the general deterioration."

Earl of Rochester (John Wilmot) the voluptuary.

He was the most profligate in 1647-1688. the profligate court of Charles II. was 5 years in a state of inebriety. Yet in his letter to his son, he exhorted him to serve God.

Sir Charles Sedley - 1639-1704. James II seduced his daughter, & made her Countess of Rochester. Sedley opposed James' measures, & aided Wm III.

Margaret, Dutchess of Newcastle, died 1673, wrote some Poetry.

Mrs Katherine Philips - 1631-1664 wife of J. P.

John Dryden, son of a Puritan, 1631 -

Dr. Isaac Cromwell - then with the throne went over to Charles II.

He disliked his wife, and revenged himself by constantly inveighing against matrimony. He says "woman was made from the cross & refused a man". All his plays are licentious; he fostered that vice of the age. He became a Catholic after 1684.

John Philips 1676-1708. John Pomfret 1667-1703.

Earl of Dorset (Sackville) 1637-1706.

John Sheffield, Duke of Buckinghamshire 1649-1721.

Dr. Samuel Butler. 1649-1689

John Dryden. "His love is always licentiousness". The female character was beyond his reach.

Thomas Otway. 1651-1685. Died in poverty.

Nathaniel Lee - died 1692. Insane.

Thomas Shadwell. 1640-1692.

Sir George Etherege 1636. 1694 - a libertine - died by falling.

William Wycherley. 1640, 1715. Dissolute. No moral feeling. His plays corrupt & profligate. No propriety of conduct.

Mrs. Aphra Behn, a female Wycherley - called *Astrea*. Her comedies grossly indecent. Died 1689

Prose Writers. 1649-1689 -

Milton, Cowley, James Harrington 1611-1677

Alexander Sidney - 1621-1683. *Calist* *Libertarian*. *Chambers* doubtly the all count of his writing in France.

Lady (Rachel Russell) Her Letters.

Samuel Butler (Hudibras), Walter Charleton. 1619-1707 *Physician*

Dr Thomas Fuller - 1608-1661.

His "Worthies of England", his principal work. Great Memory. much gossip - part of a joke, not always correct

Schoolmasters. Fuller says "young scholars make their calling their refuge". sometimes, before they have taken their degree. Others use it as a passport to better preferment, to patch their fortune. The reward in some places is miserable.



p 386, 387 **Schoolmasters** - continued by Fuller.

Misc. 2. 299. Fuller mentions that "Cooper's Dictionary and Scapula's Lexicon are chained to the desk" in the school.

Some good Schoolmasters, who love the work.

Scholars - 1. Those ingenious & industrious. They need only fawns - no whipping.

2. Those ingenious & idle. They need a good rod.

3. Those dull & diligent. Whipping will do them no good - will not improve their dullness. They may become good scholars in time.

4. Those dull & negligent. Corrections may help the negligence, not the dullness. They may make merchants & mechanics but not scholars.

The Master is our "absolute monarch in his school" and must be. Will not permit mothers & others to purchase exemption from the rod by money. Yet in some places, lately, it is the custom to compensate whipping with money. Fuller disliked this.

Many masters are very severe in whipping, tearing the flesh, &c. The good master inflicts deserved correction - moderately.

He alludes to the damage done by tyrannical masters - to the scholars being "dulled" by mauling about their heads.

The good master makes his school free to one in poverty, who seeks knowledge.

Fuller refers to the scholars of the Universities saying - The master does not teach logic - that may encroach on Grammar. Logic is for the University.

The master is not pedantic out of school, in carriage or discourse - "content to be rich in Latin," though he does not gingle it every where.

A. 2. 2086 **Recreation**, Fuller says, is not good in the morning nor on the Lord's Day. Recreation is useful when weariness hath overcome, or business stilled.

b. 416. **Education**, he thought was too much confined to Greek and Latin. Wisdom speaks in other languages besides Latin, Greek and Hebrew.

**Memory**. He thought the memory & note books should divide the learning - it should not all be carried in the head or attempted. He goes for common place books, though some declaimed against them.

**Good Housewifery**, he says, is the most useful and honorable knowledge for the mother of a family. Very few women are saving, though some are covetous. "I require in married women, the economical virtue above all other virtues," let men say what they will. "It is ridiculous & unjust that the lawiness of our wives should be maintained with our sweat and labor."

Housewifery. Misc. 2. 282. 283.

"For nothing lovelier can be found, In woman, than to study household good," &c. Milton. English Housewife. Misc. 3. 10-32. Markham



Isaac Walton - 1593 - 1683 - lived 90 years.  
 His Complete Angler appeared 1653. at age of 60. Life  
 of Hooker 1662; of G. Herbert 1670; of W. Sanderson 1678.  
 He published "Distempers of the Times" wrote it. 1680 (aged 87)  
 and published a work by another 1680, aged 90.  
 He was a linen draper until 1643.

Misc. 2. 230  
 " 1. 366 The Ale House of Walton - had "a cleanly room,  
 lavender in windows, & 20 ballads stuck against  
 the wall". The hostess cleanly, handsome, civil.  
 Dressed their fish, & Walton & companion eat trout,  
 drink ale, tell tales, sing ballads, or  
 join with a brother angler in a merry catch.  
 The linen of the beds is white & smells of lavender.  
 Walton was inhuman towards his live bait.

p 403  
 Misc. 2. 296  
 " 8. 343  
 " 8. 351 The Highest Pew. Walton notices a long & expensive  
 lawsuit, between two men whose wives were  
 purse-proud & peevish, & both desired the highest  
 pew in the church; & that caused the lawsuit.

John Evelyn - 1620-1706. Amiable.

Sylva 1664. Terra 1675. His Diary publis. 1818.  
 His diary shows that the Court dissoluteness  
 of m. was affected a narrower circle than  
 is generally supposed. £

p. 398  
 Misc. 2. 281  
 " 11. 290 Honesty. Evelyn mentions an estate of 200,000  
 "honestly gotten & unenvied", which is next to a miracle

Evelyn's daughter died of small pox 1685. She  
 had read history & geography; understood French and  
 Italian - pious & of much religious reading, and  
 writing; played on the harpsichord, & sang also.  
 The communion was monthly. Disliked  
 cards & licentious plays - danced with grace.  
 Prayed much. Read history, poets, Homer, Virgil, &c.

Press. Evelyn disliked the fashions & changes - ridiculed  
 some extravagancies. "Let men change their  
 habits as oft as they please, so the change be for the  
 better. We need no French inventions" he says.

Sir Roger L'Estrange - 1616-1704 - a political  
 writer in behalf of the Court - "sold his services  
 in defence of any measure, good or bad" - thought  
 to be the first that did so. Was licenser of the Press after 1660.  
 Did not regard truth in his writings.

Dr Ralph Cudworth 1617-1688. Opposer of Hobbs.

Dr Richard Cumberland 1632-1718.

Dr Isaac Barrow 1630-1677. John Tillotson 1630-1694.

Misc. 2. 205  
 Singularity. "To be singular in any thing that is wise  
 worthy & excellent is not a disparagement but a praise"  
 Tillotson

Edward Stillingfleet 1635-1699.

Dr William Sherlock - 1641-1707



Dr Robert South - 1633.

a witty divine, & powerful. He was ultra-loyal and a zealous advocate of passive obedience and the divine right of sovereigns. He attributed the absolute subjection "of us" to royalty to a secret work of divine power, investing sovereigns with certain marks & rays of the divine image."

(Sermon 1675)

He hated all sectaries - opposed the slightest concession to them - poured forth unbounded ridicule against Independents & Presbyterians. His disposition was that of a persecutor - and he was utterly opposed to the toleration act. He satirises the Puritans mercilessly. Had an acrimonious & indecent controversy with Dr. Sherlock - and the latter manifested the same spirit.

Dr. John Wilkins b.p. 1614-1672 - a puritan - married a sister of Cromwell - was one of the getting up of the Royal Society. A man of eminent virtues.

Dr John Pearson b.p. 1613-1686. (made b.p. 1668)

Dr Thomas Sprat b.p. 1636-1713 - Royal Society, &c.

Dr Thomas Burnet 1635-1715. Heterodox.

Dr Henry More. 1614-1687.

Dissenters -

Richard Baxter - 1615-1691 - Justice is done to him in this work.

Witches. He published - "The certainty of the world of Spirits fully evinced by unquestionable Histories of Apparitions and Witchcraft, Operations, Voices, &c."

John Owen - 1616-1683. Justice to him.

Edmund Calamy. 1600-1666.

John Flavel 1627-1691

Matthew Henry 1662-1714.

George Foxe - 1624-1690. Quaker. Wrote 3 Vols folio.

He often affirmed that he was sent by God - that he was moved by the Lord to do this & that. He acted as a prophet, & assumed the power of working miracles - claims to have cured various persons - & the power of discerning Witches. Mentions several instances when he discerned women to be Witches who were strangers to him.

Con. 9. 422  
Ill. 4. 332.

Robert Barclay a country Gentleman of Scotland an Educated Quaker - a writer. 1648-1690

His chapter against Titles. is given.

William Penn. 1644-1718.

His chapter against pride of Noble Birth.

Thomas Chwood, a Quaker writer. 1639-1713. (is given.)

His account of his intercourse with Milton.

Quakers were imprisoned long after Restoration.



## 390 Prose Writers 1649-1689

*Con. 9. 352* John Bunyan 1628-1688. Like his father, travelled about the country, as a repairer of metal utensils, [i.e. a tinker.] was taught to read & write in childhood. Was baptised and admitted to Baptist Church, Bedford, about 1655, and was induced by others to become a preacher. Imprisoned in Bedford jail 12 years - then released. "Glean of Cal" he played on Sunday - "stuck it from the hole". Swore terribly. Loved Dancing.

Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon - 1608-1674.  
His History not published until 1707, & then altered.  
Correct edition 1826.

Bulstrode Whitelocke - 1605-1676. Lawyer.  
Was on the popular side.

Gilbert Burnet, *b. a Scot.* 1643-1715.  
History of his Own Times not published till 1723.

John Dryden - a prose writer as well as poet.  
Vicious men. "It is an action of virtue to make examples of vicious men. They may & ought to be upbraided with their crimes & follies". Dryden

Sir Wm Temple - 1628-1698.  
William Wotton - 1666-1726.  
Samuel Purchas - 1609-1676.  
John Locke - 1632-1704

*Con. 9. 384.* "Truth - scarce ever earned it any wins by vote at its first appearance: new opinions are always suspected & usually opposed, because they are not already common". "But truth, like gold, is not the less so for being newly brought out of the mine". Locke

Hon. Robert Boyle - 1627-1691. Royal Society.

"Religion, he valued chiefly for its practical influence in improving the moral character of men".  
Persecution he was strongly opposed to.

*Con. 9. 376.* Marriage - Boyle says, "I have observed few happy matches, & so many unfortunate ones and have so rarely seen men love their wives at the rate they did while they were their mistresses, that I wonder not that legislators thought it necessary to make marriages irrevocable, to make them lasting".  
He compares marriage to a lottery, where there is a "pretty store of blanks for every prize". He was doubtless a bachelor.

Sir Isaac Newton - 1642-1727

John Ray - 1628-1705

Thomas Stanley 1625-1678 - Sir Wm Dugdale 1605-1686

John Wood 1632-1695 - Elias Ashmole - 1617-1692

John Aubrey 1629-1700 - Thomas Rymer - died 1704

D'Urfey - under Wm III. died 1723. Henry Colledge - died 1704

Tom Brown - died 1704. many other names.



Tolpacco - (Brown-continued)

En. 9. 777

Tom Brown (died 1717) says - "The generality of parsons can no more write a sermon without a pipe in their mouths, than a concordance in their hands."

"War is a nursery for the gallows"

H. 30. 2. 152

Hour glasses. "A clergyman ought to consider that two hour glasses of divinity are too much at once for the most patient constitution." B

H. 30. 2. 237

Calumnies - that befel the Pagans or Roman empire were laid to the charge of Christians; when Christians had the power, they laid the public calumnies to the charge of the Pagans.

Carves, our bea<sup>x</sup> us for more ornament or show.  
Sir George Mackenzie, Scotland - 1636 - 1691

p. 321. Newspapers -

A paper 1662 had more variety - a sort of obituary & some curious advertisements.

London Gazette began 1665 - [ad 2. 1. Gazette] Advertisements in 1683 (no tax) were 1/ for house or Coach, and 6d for renewing. Another paper advertised 8 lines for 1/; the 1685 advertisements were advanced to 2d a line or 1/4 for 8 lines.

Publishers were puzzled to find matter to fill their papers, small as they were. Some in 1695 were advertised at 2d each, one half on fine blank paper, so that one could write and send both printed & written news to friends. One filled up the blank part with portions of scripture. Less than half was left blank in any times, to write upon. These were printed on writing paper.

Poets 1689-1727

m. 8. 325 Matthew Prior 1664-1721. Joseph Addison 1672-1719

m. 8. 325 Jonathan Swift 1667-1745 - Alexander Pope 1688-1744

Thomas Tickell 1686-1740 - Sir Samuel Garth Physician

m. 8. 329 Sir Richard Blackmore Phys. D. 1729 - Ambrose Philips 1671-1749

m. 8. 328 John Gay 1688-1732 - Thomas Parnell 1679-1718

Matthew Green 1696-1737 - Anne, Countess of Winchelsea 1720

Wm Somerville 1682-1742 - Allan Ramsay Scot. 1686-1758

p. 375 Dramatists.

Thomas Southerne 1659-1746. Nicholas Rowe 1673-1718

William Lillo 1693-1739. - Aaron Hill

m. 8. 325 William Congreve 1672-1729. Haswit &amp; liveliness, but is sensual. [Had the gout.]

m. 8. 326 Sir John Vanbrugh 1666-1726. Architect &amp; Poet. [and profane]

George Farquhar 1678 - ... Colley Cibber 1671-1757.

p. 392 Essayists. [H. 30. 2. 167]

Sir Richard Steele - died 1729. Addison. Swift. Pope

Eustace Budgell suicide 1739. John Hughes 1677-1720.

miscellaneous

p. 393 Daniel Defoe 1661-1731. Andrew Fletcher Scot. 1653-1716

Bernard Mandeville 1670-1733. Dr John Arbuthnot Phys. [m. 8. 329]

m. 8. 328 Lord Bolingbroke 1672-1751. Lady M. Montague died 1762

C. 394. Early Staff. Henry 1671. Dr George Berkeley. 6p - 1684-1753.



Lawrence Echard - 1691-1730. Historian.  
John Strype - 1643-1737. Antiquary. In 94th year.  
Abp. Potter of Cant. 1674-1747. Antiquities of Greece  
Basil Kennett - 1674-1714. Roman antiquities.  
Richard Bentley - 1662-1742. E. scholar, & critic  
Dr Francis Atterbury 1662-1731. High Churchman. Bp. of Bath & Wells  
Dr Samuel Clarke. 1675-1729. Divine & Scholar.  
Dr Wm Lowth - 1661. 1732. Learned.  
Dr Benjamin Hoadley bp 1676-.... able, whig, liberal.  
Charles Leslie 1650. 1722. "Short method with Deists."  
Wm Whitiston - 1667. 1752. - Jacobite - fully. Excellent & able scholar.  
Dr Philip Doddridge 1702-1751. Dissenter.  
Dr Wm Nicholson bp 1655. 1727. Antiquary.  
Dr Matthew Tindal. 1657. 1733. became Catholic, & finally Infidel.  
Dr Humphrey Prideaux 1648. 1724. Historian, &c.

Second Volume 1727. to 1780

Poets	Dramatists
Richard Savage - 1698-1743.	E. and Moore. John Home
Robert Blair <sup>Scot.</sup> 1699-1746. wrote the Grave	R. B. Sheridan. D. Garrick
Grace Watts. 1674-1748. married in 1698. 1712 to death, married with Sir Thomas Abney	Samuel Foote - 1721-1791 Essays & p. 391.
Edward Young. 1681-1765	Dr Johnson. & more
James Thomson Scot. 1700-1748	Dr John Hawksworth. 1715. 1773
John Dyer - 1700-1758.	None
Wm Hamilton Scot. 1704. 1754	Samuel Richardson. 1689-1761. Pamela appeared 1740. 5. 1741. Clarissa Harlowe. 1749. In Charles Greville. 1753.
Dr Samuel Johnson - 1709-1784	Henry Fielding - 1707-1754.
William Collins - 1720-1756	Nov. Andam. ap. 1742.
William Warburton - 1714-1763	Tom Jones 1750.
David Mallet. Scot. 1700-1765	4. 1751.
Clark Akenhead .... 1721-1770.	Novels. 1751. 1752. 1753.
Lord Lyttleton .... 1709. 1773.	Samuel Johnson - 1713-1768.
Thomas Gray .... 1716. 1771	Historians
William Mason 1725. 1797	Dr Conyers Middleton 1683-1750
Oliver Goldsmith - 1728. 1774	David Hume 1711. 1776.
Tobias George Smollet. Scot. 1721. 1771	Dr Wm Robertson. 1721. - 1793.
John Armstrong Scot 1740. 1779	Edward Gibbon. 1737. 1794
Wm. Collins & C. 1734. 1788	Adam Smith. Dr Reid. Lord Karnes Dr Beattie Dr Price. bp Butler, &c.

Goldsmith's daily life diminishes our respect for him. His temper was jealous & he could not bear a rival. His quarrels with Pope, Steele & others are not to his credit. His "noble" wife Anne Dryden's did not add to his happiness. Both men had wives not made for them. His resolution to support a tavern life when it commenced.

Before the Tetters. 1709 - the ignorance & immorality of the great mass of society in England were gross and disgusting. The generality of fashionable persons of both sexes despised literary & scientific attainments as pedantic and vulgar. "The general knowledge that now circulates in common talk was rarely to be found. Men not professing learning were not ashamed of ignorance; and in the female world any acquaintance with books was distinguished only to be censured." (Johnson's life of Addison). Politics were the topic of conversation of gentlemen, and scandal of ladies. Swear & indecency were fashionable vices; gaming & drunkenness abounded. Duelling was carried to excess.

Johnson refers to Essayists and their master Montaigne, in his day.



Various Remarks from the  
 Vol E Cyclopaedia of English Literature. 1845.  
 from 1689-1727.

Essays. [Colls. 2. 263.]

The Tattler was begun by Steele April 12. 1709.  
 3 times a week - a small sheet at a penny.  
 It was published 90<sup>3</sup> weeks, 271 numbers to Jan. 2  
 1711. Then discontinued. Addison aided.

The Spectator was commenced March 1. 1711, daily.  
 by Steele & Addison. Thomas Tickell and  
 Eustace Budgell aided. Spectator extended  
 to 635 numbers, or 9 days over 2 years.  
 It was a single leaf and appeared at the  
 breakfast table in the morning. It was  
 suspended, and -

[Guardian No 198 is quoted in R.]

The Guardian was begun in 1713, daily, and  
 extended to 175 numbers - about 29 weeks.

Addison wrote in the Tattler 42 papers - Specta. 274. Quar. 53

Steele " " " do - 188 " - do. 240. do 82

Both " " - do 36

266

514. 135.

Eustace Budgell, John Hughes, and Th.  
 Tickell wrote some papers of these Essays

Steele began the English Spectator 1713. The Spectator  
 These Essays produced an improvement in  
 literature, taste & society. The meddling  
 class were much benefitted. Virtue and  
 decorum received a former tone.

Defoe, as an Essayist, suggested the "Tattler"  
 and "Spectator". He published a "Review"  
 twice a week in prison - 1702 or 3 (from 1704 to 1713)  
 Novels. [Colls. 2. 295.]

Defoe wrote Robinson Crusoe, 1719, and  
 other fictitious works after, as Moll Flanders,  
 Capt. Singleton, <sup>1720</sup>Democritus Campbell, Col. Jack,  
 Great Plague in London, The Apparition  
 of Mrs. Veal, &c. - He was the father  
 of the English Novel - was the father  
 of Richardson & partly of Fielding.

Mrs. Aphra Behn in reign of Charles II. wrote tales which are almost  
 the females in Congreve, Vanbrugh & Farquhar  
 one free spoke in that is foul mouthed and  
 frail, though fine bred ladies.

Steele was reckless through life. He wrote the Christian  
 Hero during a course of dissipation, for the purpose of  
 self admonition, it is a fail. His conduct did not improve.  
 He was a rake in practice, but served virtue in his  
 writings - was the first to introduce virtue on the stage, after  
 the licentiousness of age of Ch. II

The Tattler  
 When this appeared, "in the theatre of society, the corrupt  
 of Charles II's reign continued to prevail". Men in the highest  
 rank were habitual encouragers of bull-baiting, bear-baiting  
 and prize fighting. Steele & Addison did much to better the  
 wretched state of public taste & manners.



## Poverty &amp; Happiness

addison who had visited France, says there was nothing but mirth & poverty among the people. Every one sings, laughs & starves - the women always gay & sprightly - Great Pomp about the king, but the people go barefoot. Yet the people are the happiest in the world. Such magnificence, and poverty he had never met with.

haspy montague describes France in same manner. 1718 & people all watched king's halcyon with 150000000.

all. 2. 299 Slavery. Mr Hallam says Southorne, in his play of Oronoko, was the first English writer that denounced the traffic in slaves and the cruelty of W. I. Slavery

A Woman of Fashion - by Vambrough.

con. 9. 346 She wakes at 2 P.M. Drinks 3 cups of Chocolate. After a while gets into the great chair, & when tea is brought in, drinks 12 clippers, with 8 slices of bread & butter. Next has dinner, & after that calls for her coach. Plays at dice in the evening stakes 100£.

con. 9. 261. Usquebaugh, mentioned by Farguhar as brought from Ireland in bottles.

p. 176 all. 2. 234. Bell-ringing. Gifts of liquor were made to bell ringers sometimes! - as Prior says.  
"Their jug was to the ringers, carried  
Whoever either died or married"

all. 2. 235 Billits of wood were sent also on some occasions. Prior has  
"Their billet at the fire was found, } seems to refer to a  
Whoever was deposed or crowned" } bonfire.  
"Fetch me wood to the fire" Ben Jonson. Tale of a Tub. to roast meat.

Beauty of a man, by Prior.  
all. 2. 233. con. 9. 346. "Eyes bright as solar beams" - "Ruddy as yucca his cheek" -  
"Bosom fair as silver" - "curled ringlets of black hair"  
"Lips red as coral of the east" - "teeth white as ivory"  
White hands & blue veins - (Probably from Solomon's Song. It is  
"is not without example that in 'S. Lomen' for thousands of years." all. 2. 233. con. 9. 346. "The ornaments of the face descend from Rape of the Lock. Belinda

con. 9. 346 at the Toilet she has her glass, casket of Indian gums, box of ointment or perfume from Arabia. Cosmetics, Combs from tortoise & ivory, or speckled and white. Pins, puffs, powders, patches, Gills, billet doux are about her, and assisting maids. "Noreguy in her breast!"

all. 9. 59. also, ~~brother~~ - powder, essences, washer, necklace, the fluttering fan, the drops, (earrings) the watch, Petticout, stiff with hoops & lined with ribs of whale.  
all. 2. 261. "Pendants of her ear" - the same as the drops - called also diamonds.

Fashionable Mourning (Pope). Friendlessable weeds  
grieve an hour, then mourn a year,  
"and hear about the mockery of wo,  
To midnight dances & the public show."



From Chambers English Literature.

1689-1727. The Man of Ross. Mr. John Ross, Hertfordshire. 1729-1730.

The lay physician (from Pope's "man of Ross, (Hertfordshire).  
"Is any sick? the man of Ross relieves  
Prescribes, attends and med'cine makes & gives."  
*(See Pope's whole description of this Philanthropist, in "The Dunciad")*

Con. 9. 242

Con. 9. 244

Apothecaries & Physicians } A war between them 1696.  
The former ventured to prescribe  
as well as compound medicines. The  
latter then advertised to give advice to the poor  
gratis, & to establish a Dispensary for sale  
of cheap medicines. Dr. Samuel Garth  
wrote the Dispensary, 1696. a poem, to aid  
the college of Physicians. The college triumphed  
at the time, but in 1703, the House of Lords  
decided that the Apothecaries had a right  
to prescribe.

Al. 8. 325.

p. 309.

Two lines of Garth's Poem.  
"Little villains must submit to fate,  
That great ones may enjoy the world in state."

Al. 2. 2126.

The Winter at Copenhagen 1709. all snow & ice.  
Also other trees, shrubs, & herbs all covered with ice.  
Description by Ambrose Philips in poetry. p. 569

Misc. 2. 291

Gay's Shepherd's Week was written to throw  
ridicule on the Pastorals of Ambrose Philips.  
But they became popular, not for their satire, but  
for their entertaining pictures of nature and  
country life. He gave a matter of fact view  
of rural life -

Gay was a dandy in dress & living - Some  
of his poetry is licentious. His fables are good.

Misc. 2. 184.

2. 292

Al. 3. 358

"Children in the Wood" are sung by Gay's ballad-  
singer. They came to their deaths by a barbarous  
riddle - they plucked blackberries before they  
were murdered.  
Their little corpse the robin redbreast found,  
and strewed with pious bill the leaves around.  
(Ah, gentle birds! if this verse last... long,  
your names shall live forever in my song.)

"Twas when the seas were roaring,  
with hollow blasts of wind" &c } is one of Gay's  
Ballads

Con. 9. 322

The Ballad Singer in Gay had a "rosined bow"  
to torment the string. That is he carried a fiddle.

Al. 2. 773

Glow-worms are frequent in poetry, but none  
with wings.

Con. 9. 350

Middle Life "It is certainly on the virtues of  
the middling rank of life, that the strength  
and comforts of society chiefly depend." We look  
for harvests not on cliffs, but on gentle slopes, & plains.

"A Brass farthing" - said by Fargue. (Mr Campbell

Money getting. - A passion for getting money reigns most  
in those who have few good qualities. This weed grows  
in a barren soil. Humanity is incompatible with avarice!  
Hughes on Ambition.

Al. 2. 773

"A benevolent man was born in Ryde, of 1733 in  
Hertfordshire



*Great Men.* The virtues of great men are like  
large China jars; they make a fine show, and  
all ornamented even to a chimney. Look into  
them, & you will find them full of dust & cobwebs.  
A man may be far beneath the good,  
yet far above the great. Gray. Mandeville.

*Clergy.* The great ones of the clergy as well as of the laity  
manifest the envy & revenge & other passions of court  
and princes; their repasts, recreations & whole man-  
ner of living are like those of the most sensual people,  
and they make use of all the toys & decorations of  
luxury. "I shall never believe that humility  
is so ponderous a virtue that it requires six horses  
to draw it." Mandeville.

### Fletcher of Saltoun & Scotland.

He represents the slavery of Greece & Rome as better than the  
misery of the low class in Scotland (1698). He says  
there are at this day, 200,000 begging from door to door,  
besides many meanly provided for by church boxes.  
There were then, 1698, more than usual, "yet in all  
times there have been about 100,000 of those vagabonds".  
They are a bad & dangerous - thieves, murderers, drunkards,  
- fighting & blaspheming.

*Sunday* - is represented by Swift as a day con-  
venient for taking physic, for traders to sum up accounts,  
for lawyers to prepare briefs; and churches are  
places for gallantry, to show dresses, to drive cars,  
and to sleep.

*Broomstick.* Swift's meditation on a Broomstick,  
(to ridicule the manner of Mr Boyle's meditations)  
makes it a stick from the forest, or tree turned upside  
down; the branches on the earth, the root in the air; handled  
by every dirty wench, to make her things clean & be  
nasty itself. When worn to the stumps it is thrown out of  
doors or used to kindle a fire. The branches referred to are  
"those birchen spoils it never bore, all covered with  
dust; from the sweepings of the finest ladies chamber."  
A broomstick is a tree standing on its head - it is a  
"withered bundle of twigs tied to a sapless trunk".  
[It is clear that the broom of those days, even  
for a ladies chamber, was made of birch twigs fastened  
to one end of a broomstick.]

Deat. Said Pope at 24 - "The morning after my  
exit, the sun will rise as bright as ever, the flowers smell  
as sweet, the plants spring as green, the world will  
proceed in its old course, people will laugh as heartily,  
and marry as fast as they were used to do."

"Beech is one of the best & most useful of our native trees" Johnson. Agri-  
culture - was a tree under which lovers sat.  
Seemed to a poet tree. Addresses made to it.  
Fairfax's female "engraved sonnets in bark of beech & holly"  
"Beechen coal" "Beechen bowl" "Beechy garland" R. Red  
Prior's beech had "extended boughs & a row of shade", but the  
"smooth leaved beeches" p. 373. "Broad beech" Ben Jon. 2. 2. 5.  
"dreams we beneath the spreading beech"



An Old Mansion - Pope describes the house of Stanlow Harcourt in Oxfordshire, & the old church near it; 1718. & near the two towers were killed under a haycock of lightning, July 31. 1718.

u. 2. 276.

The great hall is high & spacious, has long tables; it is ornamented with horns, broken pikes, matchlock muskets, & a large window with painted glass. You step up from the hall & down, over a high threshold, into the parlor, which has tapestry, a broken virginal, two embroidered velvet chairs, mildewed pictures of sweethearts. Next to the parlor is a pigeon house, by the side of which runs an entry to a bed chamber, a buttery and a chaplains study. Then follows a brew-house, a green & gilt parlor, small; the great stairs & clairy under them; further is servants hall, & up 6 steps the old ladies closet, with a lattice into the hall, that she might see the men & maids when she said her prayers. — There are on the ground floor in all 14 apartments, headed to bed & distinguished by names — one chamber has a large quantity of timber which seems to have been a bedstead or a cedar press. — These chambers &c. were below.

Above is a long low room, with fine hangings made by spiders — rain comes in, every shower. The upper story has no inhabitants but rats, who seem to live on some old books of a library.

Com. 9. 350 The Cellar formerly had triple rows of bottles of sack — and bottles of stout for toasts in the morning — and iron hoops hogheads of strong beer.

The Tower has several little rooms — some ghost stories. "Iron nailed door" mentioned, leading into pigeon house.

Two chimneys, one each side the porch? that wear their greens on the outside? From the porch you enter the brew-house — Jackdaws build in the tower.

The old seat was going to ruin — but Pope translated part of the Odyssey here. The place seems to have had no regular human inhabitants.

There is an engraving of the House, & Church near by. but not very distinct. The church is small — belonged to the House or manor.

John Bull, Dr Arbuthnot, <sup>a story</sup> published his "History of John Bull" 1712, to ridicule the Duke of Marlborough, and the War. He put names, England "John Bull, the clothier"; Holland is "Nicholas Strog"; the linen draper; France or the King, is "Lewis Baleoon"; &c. Is this the beginning of "John Bull", as applied to England? Scotland is "Sister Peg".

2394 Gold Watch (see p. 304). Arbuthnot has a lady <sup>with</sup> a gold watch for time — not said that it was carried ~~lost~~

Learning and } Lady Montague advised the Countess of Bute  
Hools } to have her daughter well educated — learned — but enjoined her the daughter to conceal her learning, as she would crooked her neck or learn; the parade of it would draw on her the envy & hatred of all the old she fools, which will beat least three parts in four of her acquaintance. <sup>Letter 1753.</sup>  
Her son the married Lord Bute. Lady M. born 1690. died 1762.

Com. 9. 382

Ann. 8. 324. 325.



398 Chambers English Literature  
1689-1727

Bp. Berkeley.

Chambers says he sailed to Rhode Island in 1728, and remained 7 years, & then returned & was made Bp. of Cloyne in 1734. There is a contradiction here — He seems to have written his prophetic lines about the New World before he came to America.

Prejudices are opinions taken upon trust. } This is the distinction.  
Other opinions are acquired by reasoning. } Not all prejudices  
are false; not all opinions true. There is a difference  
between prejudices & errors. — Berkeley.

"Religious awe, the precepts of parents & masters, the wisdom of legislators, & the experience of ages, supply the place of proofs & reasonings with the vulgar of all ranks!"

Honesty. He who says, there is no honest man, is himself a knave.

The Patriot aims at his private good in the public.  
The knave makes the public interest subservient to his private interest.

Church Music (from Atterbury).

The use of vocal & instrumental harmony contributes to awaken the attention and eliven the devotion of Christians; they remove ordinary hindrances & distractions, and supply helps to quicken devotion. They relieve the wearisomeness of the service. They are more needed in the morning devotions, which are much the longest. "Music adds dignity & solemnity to public worship." "To it, we in good measure owe the dignity and solemnity of public worship, which else, in its natural simplicity & plainness, would not so strongly strike or so deeply affect the minds, as it ought to do, of the greatest part of mankind." The melody of sounds serves to guide our passions and elevate them to proper objects. Church music makes our duty a pleasure; & whatever contributes to make our devotion taking, & not at the same time to dissipate it, contributes to our attention and holy warfare of mind. What we delight in is no longer a task.

1727-1780. Vol II.

Puritans. Atterbury's parents were puritan, and the puritanism imbibed in his early years seems, as the case of Milton, to have given a gravity and earnestness to his character and a love of freedom to his thoughts and imagination.

Argument for Punch. The ordinary of Newgate, who administered consolation to Wild before his execution, "preferred a bowl of punch to any other liquor, as it is nowhere spoken against in scripture."

Amusement. "Here innocent amusement is in itself a good, when it interperes with no greater good." Dr. A. Hately.



Chambers English Literature.

Apr 1727 or Vol 4.

p. 386 Charles I & II - "Charles I lived & died a hypocrite; Charles II was a hypocrite of another sort, and should have died on the same scaffold." Junius to the Duke ofrafton.

p. 308. Labor. Adam Smith "showed that the source of the opulence of nations is Labor." labor employed in manufactures, commerce & agriculture. J. C. Cullock.

u. 2. 248 "Nobility is a graceful ornament to a civil order. It is the Corinthian capital of polished society." Burke

Magazines & Reviews.

Gentleman's Magazine, began 1731. Still published. Literary Magazine 1735. began by Edm. Chambers. London Magazine, British M. & Town & Country M. followed. Scots Magazine began 1739. continued to 1826.

Monthly Review (Whig). began 1749.

Critical Review (Tory) " 1756

Critica Britica " 1793.

Annual Register began. 1758 - still continued.

Edinburgh Review Oct 1802; London Quarterly 1804. Westminster R. 1824.

Golden or yellow hair for females. (see p. 379.

"Her golden locks" - is in Spenser.

"Her hair as yellow as many a son" same r.

"His amber colored locks" Dryden

Queen Elizabeth wore false red hair.

Red Hair - Ray uses - says some black haired parents have red haired children because their ancestors had red hair.

Cl Forest - described by Shelley, has "brown magnificence" in the noon-day sun. Embosoms "narrow vale".

"Huge caves in airy rocks". "The meeting boughs & leaves weave twilight over the path". "The oak expands its immense & knotted arms". "Pyramids of tall cedar".

"Parasites flow around gray trunks, and twine their tendrils with the weedled boughs". There are "soft mossy lawns" beneath "canopies" of leaves.

"A dark glen". "Silence & twilight reign in a dell at noonday. Water translucent "images all the woven boughs above", and each leaf, and specks of sky that (obit between the charms of the trees.

"Undulating woods" - "rippling rivulet" - "wanton and wild rivulet, flowing through green ravines beneath the forest, & danced on polished stones, then crept through the plain in tranquil wanderings reflecting every overhanging bough & leaf". "Grassy shore & green mossy viel babbling rivulet". "Forests" - "copies". "Gr - rocks".

"Gnarled roots of ancient trees". "Musical motions of the green groves". "The stony jaws" of a mountain pass. "overhanging crags". "lead colored hills".

Gray precipice. rock rooted pine, its boughs swinging in the blast. Ivy clasped the fissured stones, & had dark berries.

"Autumnal leaves, red, yellow, or ethereally pale, rival the pride of summer".

The Skylark is a bird that is often in English poets, and always begins to sing with the dawn, & often ascends high in the air - Procter has "sky-climbing bird, waker of morn".

"Inhumanity of the Rich" in the song of Edgar Gray by Holcroft. "The poor man alone" will give "his moral, a shawl to the poor".

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305

u. 2. 294

u. 8. 305



valued 1  
p. 70  
3/3

Gable Ends are very numerous—sometimes on three or four sides of the building. Some are ends with a window, coming out even with front or other side of the building, and extending back, that is, the roof connected with them, extending back to the main roof, going the other way. In some buildings the main roof is composed of two or three or more of these steep roofs extending quite across the building, with gable ends each side. — Some had small windows in roof without a gable end. — Some gable ends were lower down, and some placed irregularly. [These gables abundant in Howell

Old Cottages, one story or two, had square windows.  
small. Farm Houses the same. Usually thatched. J. H. Small

[illegible]


Houses seem to be beech timber, which shows itself at the ends - upright & horizontal sticks, filled between with clay or something else, which seems to be white or white washed. Roofs thatched. - Milton's Cottage or many others show the timbers, which cut up the fronts, seem into squares or parallelograms. (Same in Howitt's some timbers are placed obliquely - in a lattice work.)

Churches had grave stones standing about them with circular or other tops, & standing some erect, and some obliquely. Some churches have singular wings & sides.

The square windows of houses, or wider than high, are in two or three divisions.

The birth place of Locke is two stories high, two rooms in front, one each side of the door, one front window in each room and a chamber over them. No gable ends. Windows wider than long, in three divisions. Wood shutters before the door, and birds in the roof. Roof perhaps thatched perhaps not. A chimney near one end, and another in the middle. Not timber seen. <sup>16th. Dec. 1844</sup>

The north side of the house is two story; one front room has 2 front windows, and one has but one; gable ends are a chimney at each end. Windows, the longest way, is horizontal - one in 3 divisions. Gables about the house. No timber seen.

The Leasowes, Shemstone's house, has two gable ends to the highway, & two complete roofs.  Windows about seven in 3 divisions, up & down: lower ones 4 divisions, or parts. A chimney about in the middle of each ridge or back of middle.

cottages with square windows, small, have the <sup>top</sup> of window  
about 5' high as the top of door - as in the cottage of Shemstone's Schoolmistress.

Wiley's House at Chautauque. It is apparently clapboarded like  
the England House. 2 stories in elevation, but over the windows below, on the  
second story, there is a balcony. The balcony is 10 ft. wide, and is  
fenced with a little better than one story  
high. The balcony is 10 ft. wide, and is  
fenced with a little better than one story  
high. The balcony is 10 ft. wide, and is  
fenced with a little better than one story  
high.



Apr 1727.

"To attack the mere superficialities of life is not calculated to check vice or encourage virtue." "The mocking, bitter spirit is unfeminine, and often misplaced."

Geese. "A common for the village geese, whose white feathers during the summer lay scattered over its green surface." Carlston's Irish village.

Irish Farm House (much superior to the cottages) Has ornamental thatching, glazed windows, hay stacks, & cornstacks around it. The bread is oatmeal or wheat; bacon is boiled in a pot; a well swept hearthstone, a white settle and chairs, and the dresser with noggins, wooden benches & pewter dishes, well polished. Carlston's Irish Village of this count.

Progress. "Society is inevitably progressive." Suff. Measures.

Chivalry. "The age of chivalry is gone" said Burke in his Reflections on the French Revolution, & he lamented it. "The glory of chivalry is extinguished forever." "Never more shall we behold that generous loyalty to rank & sex, that proud submission, that dignified obedience; &c."

Sir Walter Scott, owing to his cavalier predilections looked with more regard on heartless & cruel royalists, than on poor persecuted peasants. Chambers.

Scott was accustomed to the dazzling creations of fiction rather than to the sober plodding of historical inquiry.

Mohammedans & women } woman is not regarded as without a soul, nor is she debarred from Paradise, as represented. She may not be in the mosque in time of public prayer, because the meeting of the two sexes in a sacred place is supposed to be unfavorable to devotion. This is an Oriental prejudice not peculiar to Mohammedans. The custom is nearly the same among Christians. In the Greek churches, the females are kept from the altar & concealed behind a lattice; & there is something of the same kind among Christians in Mesopotamia.

In Jewish Synagogues, the women are not allowed to sit with the men; and they are screened from the notice of men by a wooden lattice. Southgate's Travels in the East. 1840

Norwegians - The peasantry own their lands which they cultivate. They grow or make almost every thing they need - are well supplied with bedding & linen, clothing, fuel, victuals, drink, furniture, farming tools, &c. They must purchase window glass, cast-iron ware, & pottery. They are happier than those in the same condition in America, because they are not so much influenced by the spirit of gain. They have no money-getting spirit, no extravagance. They content themselves with what is necessary to pay taxes & for a few articles of luxury. The servants do not eat nor sit with the family. Laing's Residence in Norway



Joseph Pitson 1752-1803, published valuable  
Collection of "Ancient Songs" in 1783, from  
Henry II to 1688. Also "Pieces of Ancient popular  
Poetry"—and "Scottish Songs": &c.

"A Tree is the grandest & most beautiful of all  
 Gen. 9. 352. the productions of the earth." Rocks & mountains  
 do not contend with it, for they are a part of the earth.  
 Inferior plants, shrubs, flowers, however beautiful,  
 must give place, in point of picturesque beauty  
 to the form, foliage & ramifications of the tree.  
 [He describes "Forest Scenery" in all its parts.  
 Rev. Wm Gilpin on Forest Scenery.

He describes beauties in storm & sunshine, in sunrise & sunset, &c. Shakespeare says the sun -  
"Stands tiptoe on the misty mountain's top."

3. 1. Hist. 2. 3/5. Gilpin refers to the "varied tints of the autumnal leaf."

"Singing Birds of England" Collett missed in the  
 West. I have missed them in 6 made. ...  
 ... gale not found in Ireland. Ill. 11. 322.

Utility is the leading & pervading principle of Benthamism. "The greatest happiness of the greatest number", first used by Priestly, Bentham considered the true standard of right & wrong, of useful & useless. "The phrase is a good one" says Chambers, "but it leaves the means by which happiness is to be extended, as undecided as ever."

Novelist - see pages 392. 393. [Novels, receipt to make a whole.  
 early days of Romance - flourish. D in France. [Misc. 2. 297  
 [See old Romances. Misc. 5. 160.]

early class of Romance - florished in France. [Ms. 2. 29]

2. clanq Prose Fictions, or Heroic Romances, rose in France in  
1606 the 17th century - by D'Urfé & others. Scarron came after.  
[See Contes. See Ampl. de la Rev. V. 461]

In England, Mrs. Aphra Behn wrote *Tales of personal Adventure in reign of Charles II.*, similar to those of Scarron "which are almost the earliest specimens of prose fiction that we possess."

Miss Manley followed her, "whose words are equally humorous & equally licentious".

'Daniel Defoe', Fictions are an improvement upon these Tales, being much more pure, and they contain more interesting pictures of character & situation.

"In England, the first pictures of real life in prose fiction were given by Defoe, all impressed with the strongest appearance of truth & probability."

The older Romances were creations of an imaginative or chivalrous spirit; they did describe real life.

one three of the founders of the novel or improved species of prose fiction, were Richardson, Fielding, & Smollet, who have had no superiors and only one equal (probably Sir W. Scott). They began 1741, 1742, & 1748.



**Country Squire.** (from *Connoisseur* - 1754-1756.)  
 He is a greater man than the parson or the clerk - a sort of head of the church in his own parish. If the benefice be in his gift, the vicar is his creature, & at his devotion. If there be a curate, the squire brings him under by Sunday fees of roast beef and plum pudding, & a liberty to shoot in the manor. "The service must not quit till the squire has strutted up the aisle and seated himself in the great pew in the chancel. The length of the service is measured by the will of the squire, as formerly by the houseless."  
 17.388  
 (con. g. 416.)  
 Lord's Pew

The Clerk in a country church is often a elder in higher veneration than the parson, when the former is a poor curate, who rides post every Sabbath & mounts and dismounts at the church door. (rides from village to village) The clerk leads the prayers with an Assenay, & ushers in the sermon with a stave, & gives away the brides & is standing godfather to all the new-born bawlings.  
*Connoisseur.*

**Angels visits**, "short & far between", is in Blair's *Grave*.  
 Campbell used the expression and altered it, not for the better: - "Like angels visits, few & far between!"  
 Morris used it before Blair - "Angels visits, short & bright!"

**Young** was gay & dissipated in youth; and an indefatigable courtier all his days. He felt the emotions he describes, but they did not permanently influence his conduct. He was a chaplain, and had the living of Welby, & was eager to obtain a preferment. His bereavements did not occur as he represents. (thrice are thrice, &c.) In one case there was an interval of 4 years & in another of 7 months. Lorenzo seems to have written a fancy sketch.

**China Ware** was precious in Pope's day & much esteemed by ladies. It was a serious matter for a "china" to "receive a flaw"; or when "rich china vessels" fell from a high and lay in fragments. Rape of the Lock.  
 Rape of the Lock.  
 Boy a misanthrope & a "china" cup in a thick coffee cup & a "china" cup.

**Whistles** of silver formerly had bells. Rape of Lock.  
 "The bells she jingled, & the whistle blew!"

**Romances**. As the old romances were remarkable for the extravagance of their fictions; romance became applied to any wild, extravagant story, or invention of the imagination. Richardson.

**Beauty of Person.** Ben Jonson gives male & female.  
 "Eyebrows bent like a bow" - man has front or forehead  
 "an ample field of snow", nose & cheek even & smooth, and eyes like Venus & Venus, & crisp hair of chestnut color or gold on a dark ground - female with sparkling eyes, milk & roses in her cheeks, even chin & above it. "The bank of kisses", "breath more sweet than when flowers and west wind meet", white & polished neck.  
 A female has "polished forehead", mild warm eyes, radiant locks, marble neck, fair blooming cheek. "Eyes black as sloe", "a red", "golden hair" unbraided

Many wrote commendatory verses on Ben's plays. - *Richardson*, *Shelley*, *Milnes*, *Selden*, *Hay*, and the *West*, &c.

**Kiss**. There is no end to this in B. Jonson & some others.  
 "Each suck the other's breath!"



See George Crabbe, born Dec 4. 1754, died Feb 3. 1832.  
See also 334, 335. English poetry was destitute of truth & reality. It had departed from life and nature. Crabbe brought it back. He went in to common life; lifted the veil from vice & ignorance & misery, & showed that the multitude had claims on our sympathies. He made us feel that the poor are men, our vindicated humanity, & let in sunshine upon the real condition of the laboring population. — He was a self-made man. Had no college education but had a good common education. Was an apprentice to a surgeon. Published the poem called "The Newspaper" about 1786; and no more for 12 years or about 1803 or 1808. When he published the "Poetical Miscellany" and afterwards the "Borough, Tales of the Hall, &c." Howitt.

James Hoag, the Ettrick Shepherd. Born Dec 3. 1740, and died Nov. 21. 1835. Filled vanity & egotism. Not to be compared with Burns. Published much.

335, Samuel T. Coleridge, born Oct. 21. 1772 — younger. His father a schoolmaster & vicar. He entered college but did not go through. Enlisted as a soldier &c. He went through infidelity, unitarianism, Berkeley, Kant, &c. & came back to Church of E. but fully love & tolerance.

Felicia Hemans, born 1793, died 1835. age 42. "Hermin" & "a lady of the name". Irish. says 3. Her husband took her much to Italy. She had several sons & five

E. H. was a poet. Her maiden name was Hemans. In 1802 she wrote prose as well as poetry, & formed a true estimate of humanity, & fervently advocated the cause of the poor. Her poetry was about love. She committed suicide by taking prussic acid — by mistake Howitt thinks.

Swath Scott born 1771.

Thomas Campbell born in Glasgow. 1777. Died 1844. Wrote "Pleasures of Home" 1799. Wrote "Exile of Erin" which had exile in prison. In 1817. Witnessed Battle of Bohenlindean. Settled in London 1821. 7 miles from London. In London 1821.

Robert Southey, born 1774 died 1843. His young friends and associates were chiefly dissenting, & as once he sought him up, "young dissenters" caught early & well. He called him the "Starchest Churchman". Published "Joan of Arc" 1796. "He entered a high & noble path, & quitted it for the lay of the pleasure-monger & the bitterness of the bigot. Southey when the war & worldly prosperity was close to him it not orthodox and became as all use orthodox. Conscience of the left reach & pursued his sudden suspicious conversion, he grew bitter and intolerant. With a recent intellect & full of great sentiments on the freedom of man & the oppressions of the poor, he went round & gave to opposite doctrines, and supported the machinery of violence & oppression that originated these evils. E. H. says many were severe & angry. The friends of Southey. He says Byron did less harm than Southey — was not like him the cause of more suffering & carnage. Not refused to be searched out & persuaded Southey to accept it. Scott despised it, yet pleased the hypocrite in his title is Southey.

William Lisle Scott born 1770. See also 332. James Montgomery " 1771.



"Memoirs of an American Lady, with sketches of manners & scenery in America, as they existed previous to the Revolution".

By Mrs. Grant, author of "Letters from the Mountains". New York. 1846. from a London Edition - published 1808.

She was a daughter of Duncan McKiekar and was born in Scotland 1755. Her father came to America in 1757, an officer in the army, & his wife & child came in 1758 - lived at Claverack, Albany, Oswego, &c. She lived in Edinburgh the last 30 years of her life and died 1838 aged 85. (wrong dates here)

She is full of errors about old things, which occurred long before she came to America.

Rensselaer, the Patroon, or lord of the manor, she says, had a grant of 12 miles Dutch, in every direction, from the Church - or a tract - 24 Dutch miles each way. - The Schuylers, Courlers and others took extensive leases of land along the river, (of R.) and were to pay every 10th sheaf of grain as long as water runs. They were as independent proprietors, as R. himself. The Schuylers & Courlers had land of their own N. E. of the Patroon's bounds. Philips & Cortlandt had lands, manor like, down the river.

\*  
Corr. & May 2. 85 Col. P. Schuyler accompanied 4 Indians ~~to~~ <sup>on</sup> England. Had conversation with Queen Anne and the great men of England. He brought home the Spectator, tragedy of Cato, Wilds or Forest, Young's Poem on the Last Day, Milton's Paradise Lost, &c.

[He and 4 four] chiefs went before May session, 1710 <sup>Feb. 1710</sup> and returned before May session 1711. <sup>July 1710</sup> Spectator was not begun when he left England. I refer to Sessions of Massachusetts Gen. Court. I

Female Education at Albany. No more wealthy families, the girls learned needle work, to read in Dutch bible & devotional Dutch tracts; and a few, very few, could read English, but they could generally speak it, imperfectly. Very few were taught writing. There was no polish and no vulgarity. There were always exigencies that called forth their powers, in a new settlement.

Fashion had not then erected her standard, to which looks, language & opinions must be adjusted. The "Dress of the people" she speaks of as degraded by poverty, shut out from intercourse with the enlightened, - and their minds debased by exclusion & degradation. <sup>There is much to refer to in this.</sup> Religion. They performed religious duties (the Dutch) irregularly & decently, but calmly & without much fervor. They had neither enthusiasm nor bigotry.

\*. Smith's History of New York says 5 Indians went to England with Schuyler. Had audience with Queen Anne April 19, 1709. Came back with Com. Martin and Col. Nicholson in 1710. See. four in Mass. 1. p. 360. 361.



Gardens, all had, in town & country. Hardy  
m. 2. 27 plants grew in the field among Indian corn.  
-or. cabbages, potatoes, gourds [pumpkins, &c.]  
kidney beans, asparagus, celery,  
salads, sweet herbs, cucumbers, &c.  
grew in the garden. Trees grew in orchard,  
m. 9. 241 For males took care of the garden; sowed  
and weeded it; men only dug it. There were  
were plenty in the woods. [m. 12. 182]

Flower bells, they had in their gardens - each  
m. 12. 392 kind of flowers by themselves, not mixed. The  
Schuylers had gardens in the European manner.

French Huguenots at and about New York  
"had more knowledge & piety than any  
other class of the inhabitants."

Albany. Every house its garden, well, green  
m. 19. 353 behind, and a tree before the door. Some trees  
were very large. Open portico at that door  
surrounded by seats, where they sat summer  
evenings.

Cows fed in a common pasture at the end  
(m. 10. 7. 60) of the town, & in the evening the herd returned  
m. 18. 248 all together, of their own accord, with their  
tinkling bells, to their wonted places, to be  
milked. After being milked again the next  
morning, they went slowly to the pasture. Children  
ate their supper (chiefly of milk) sitting on the  
steps of the porch, or on a my elid.

Bilberries grew plentifully on sandy hills.  
m. 2. 182 The people were not one very rich or very poor,  
very knowing or very ignorant, very rude  
or very polished.

Slaves, she thinks, were kindly treated generally.  
m. 2. 198c and were faithful & kind in return. When they  
were disobedient & refractory, they were sold  
to Jamaica, which they dreaded worse than  
death.

Servants in Europe are deceitful, venal, and  
m. 2. 198 often dishonest; their corruption is to be attributed  
to the example of their superiors.

Albanyans knew little of law, and nothing  
of philosophy. They sought their morality in the  
Bible, & thought they found there the hapless race  
m. 2. 298c of negroes consigned to perpetual slavery.

Amusements of children. Gathering berries, &c. m. 12. 182  
Little Indian baskets used. Girls all knit & sewed.  
Money always scarce.



Hunting & shooting were like . . . Many birds and animals.

*Misc. 9.1* Pigeons feed on the berries of the wax myrtle in the winter; and wild geese & ducks live in the great swamps. ~~At~~ <sup>At</sup> ~~the~~ <sup>the</sup> ~~spring~~ <sup>spring</sup> in the southern provinces. In April they emigrate to the north in countless numbers. The pigeons ~~go~~ <sup>fly</sup> to the Northward, or begin to go, about the vernal equinox & begin to return about the autumnal equinox. They go to the borders of the lakes. Immense numbers are shot by the Albanians & others as they pass north & south, & the people live upon pigeons, dressed in various ways - pies, soups, &c. for some time. Many of the ducks & geese also are shot, and there is in sort of drunken gayety, a carnival.

*Misc. 9.2* The Sturgeons go up the Hudson about 6 weeks <sup>after the passage of the birds in spring, in</sup> great number, and all are in pursuit of them, as they were before of the birds. Every family had a canoe, & all went out catching Sturgeon by torch light; and other fish they also caught. Sturgeon furnished much of the food in summer months; & some were exported.

*Misc. 9.2, 246.* Marriage. The happiness of a people depends much on marriage being early and universal. They married young. The increase of a family did not seem an inconvenience, they had no artificial wants, nor artificial miseries.

Trading with the Indians. A man & negro took a canoe and filled it with articles suited to the Indian trade, & especially with ardent spirits. They unloaded at the Cohoes, and carried canoe, boat and cargo by the falls upon their shoulders, at several times. They continued to pass through woods, swamps, lakes, & on the smaller streams encountered shallows, fallen trees, &c. and passed through vast forests & solitudes; where the trees were majestic & plants beautiful and luxuriant; animals were plenty, and flies and musketoes. Moss was the thickest on the N. side of trees. They obtained peltry and returned.

Inconstancy or indifference among married couples, was unheard of. They bore extreme affection to their children.

Social. They visited each other frequently, besides assembling together in their potches. They knew little of the luxuries of the table, & less of the formalities of good breeding. They were shy of strangers at first.



## The Dutch at Albany, &amp;c.

Tell was served early - and was served up with cakes, cold pastry, sweetmeats, preserved fruits, hickory nuts cracked, &c. when strangers were present: and some of these things at all times. Much sugar was used.

Supper came after tea (when strangers present) - they then had game or poultry, shellfish, fruit, &c.

Diversions of the young - parties with tea, sugar, rum, fruit, made excursions, and caught fish, shot ducks, &c. for dinner. Girls carried their work, gathered berries, &c.

Open Carriages in the form of a gig. Every family had one (she does not say when) Parties in these carriages.

Winter Amusement. Skating and Sledge races on the river, and sledge rides on the snow. These latter were fine at night, when the atmosphere is pure and serene and the snow beautifully reflects the moon and star light.

Sliding down hill in the great street. Every boy from 8 to 18 had a low sledge with a rope to draw it. One or two could sit on this; & many went down the hill together. This pleasure had the drawback of dragging the sled to the top of the declivity every time one slid down. This sport was kept up in the evening till 10 o'clock.

Piñpling at Taverns. Stealing pigs and turkeys.

Aged People. Some reached 100 years, and 90 was frequently attained. These ancients read pious books, engaged in devotional exercises, and delighted in singing psalms, sometimes for hours together.

Indians sometimes came & built wigwams near the whites. The women & children made baking trays, wooden dishes, ladles, spoons, shovels, rakes; "brooms made by splitting a birch block into slender but tough filaments," baskets of all sizes & kinds of similar filaments, painted, &c. &c. of birch bark (of which cradles & canoes are made) they made with embroidery from the sinews of deer; they made leggings & moccasins, an ornamented substitute for shoes & stockings; deer skins embroidered with beads, &c. belts, garters, &c. The men fished, smoked sturgeon, &c. Indians hated negroes.



Indians. Mrs. Grant thinks they were observers of nature, & acquired many ideas from that source.

The women did the tillage, but cultivated only maize, kidney beans & tobacco. Men at the same time caught & dried fish.

Girls gathered wild fruits, berries, grapes, which were dried for winter. The great Cornucopia was gathered, & was used, & sold to settlers.

The Indians had no vegetables, she says, and only now & then a little maize bread.

They had rheumatism, agues, but no cutaneous disease.

The women were slaves, bowed down with burdens & drudgery.

M. 2  
282. "Wherever man is a mere hunter, woman is a mere slave." Schuyler.

Catalina Schuyler, niece of Col Schuyler was born 1701, married her cousin, Philip, son of Col S. 1719. — The Col. resided at the Flats, & left a large estate, with plate, paintings, &c. He had about 2 miles in length on the west side of the river, with lofty cliffs on the high bank. This was north of Albany Col Schuyler's estate included a handsome Island. Bald Eagles, osprey, heron, & curlew used to fish near the island: Ducks were there. The Island had banks fringed with trees and shrubs, where were many shades of color, and much life. It was inundated every spring. The River reflected the pine hills opposite. The trees around the island, bent without wind, were pictured on the river. Vegetation was luxuriant on the island.

On the backside of the estate were rising grounds, "where birch, beech, maple & poplar, cheered the eye with a lighter green, through the prevailing shade of dark pines." On the border of the woods was a shrubbery of sumac, which changed leaves from green to a yellow orange tawny, with clusters of scarlet grains, covered with saline & acrid dust, used by Indians for salt & drying.

Philip Schuyler, son of the Colonel — was born about 1691 — 10 years older than his wife. Had brothers, Jeremiah & Peter. Philip was Colonel. The old Colonel died in 1721.

Mansion of the first & second Col Schuyler at Flats.  
Cons. 17. 4/10. Brick house of two stories & attic, and a sunk story. Lower story 2 rooms with large closets. First story 3 rooms, with the upper 4 rooms. Wide passage through the house, furnished with chairs & pictures. Here the family often sat in wet weather, after opening the doors. — The mirrors, paintings, china, & state bed were secretly worshipped as family Teraphim. Rooms shut to keep out the flies. Large portico at door like other wealthy families, opening inside, & seats around it, & steps to it. Wild vines ran over it & birds built nests there. Seems only one story.



The Dutch at Albany, &c.

Insects + Birds. Mr. Grant thinks insects are much more numerous <sup>new & partially</sup> ~~before~~ <sup>when</sup> the country is cleared than after; and consequently birds are more numerous. Query.

She mentions butterflies, grasshoppers, locusts, flies, and alludes to others, as musketoes, &c.

Birds. She notices wood sparrow, martin, chimney swallow, other hirundines, wren; — in countless numbers. Tree frog.

No morning lark, no mellow thrush, and no deep toned black bird warbles here.

Twilight is very short; no daisy decks the meads, no purple heath, no bonny broom, no sloe nor primrose; —

House continued. Back of the large house was a smaller & lower one, joined to the other, with one or two smaller rooms below, & the same above. This was the winter residence; the great rooms in the other could not be warmed without injury to furniture. — Negroes had oil light out in kitchen.

The great House had only one room for company.

All the rest were bed-chambers for their accommodation; the domestic friends of the family occupied little bedrooms in the Attic, or in the winter-house. — There was no drawing room. The winter rooms had carpets;

the lobby had painted Oil Cloth. The best bedroom was hung with family portraits.

Paintings, sculptural, in the Eating Room, but rarely used for eating. The house fronted the river, & before it ran the road to Saratoga, Stillwater, &c. 300 yards distant, with an avenue of morella cherry trees leading to it. There were hayfields, an orchard garden, surrounded by deal fences. On the stakes to which the deals were bound were the skeleton heads of horses & cattle, in which wrens & other birds built their nests. (Negroes seem to do this.)

Huge Barn of wood. Oak floor, &c.

Manure often cast into the river.

(Not very different from a modern barn. Swallows twitted & built their nests in the beam; and martins had holes & rooms. — A sheep barn separate.

Orchards, barn, &c. often full of soldiers, Indians, &c.

Mrs. C. abuses the New Englanders. She disliked their republicanism — their opposition to England.

The actual entertainments got up at Albany by British Officers, &c. much disliked by the Dutch and by Dominie Freelinghausen, their minister. He died on his return to Holland.

Gov. Philip Schuyler died 1757. His heir was a grandson of his brother Peter.







Restoration 1660, the Mercuries & other newspapers ceased; ~~but~~ others appeared some years later, but without any freedom. Under II in III. the press was free to a certain extent, but newspapers did not discuss politics. Under George I & II, & many years under George III, the newspapers did not contain political discussion, Parliamentary intelligence, nor even proceedings. The Courts of law, in debates in Parliament ~~the~~ seem to have been unknown to the public, the commencement & conclusion of a session were mentioned in a single paragraph. The words are applied to "many subjects" just after the late King's accession, "or after 1760." A person who made additions to Beckmann's history, after he had examined only two papers, that is the old files of 1760.

Liverpool.

- 1756. C. Williamson's first newspaper published at Liverpool, May 25 contained 20 advertisements. This seems the first paper published in Liverpool, which then owned 220 ships, and contained over 10,000 inhabitants - (25,787 computed at 1760)
- 1764 The 1st of 1st newspaper appeared at L. Dec 17. 15 advertisements. Hist. of Liverpool.



The first price current of the value of goods, of which there is any record in Europe, is at Amsterdam, in January 1613. From then, it was gradually extended on the continent, but was not adopted in England until 1634. John Day introduced them, having obtained the exclusive privilege of printing "The third part of the late of prices of all Commodities." See *Annals*

## M. 2. 294<sup>6</sup> Museums

The oldest one known, upon any systematic plan, was that of John Kentmann, a physician at Torgau, in Saxony, 1565. Consisted mostly of minerals & fossil productions. Contained about 1600 articles.

The first in England was formed by John Tradescant, the traveller, towards 1650. He died in 1652. He had collected coins, medals, natural curiosities, &c. Amongst these curiosities in the catalogue are the "egg of a griffin", and "the egg of a dragon", "feathers from the tail of a phoenix", "the claw of a ruck", "a bird able to turn an elephant" - others, as similar in nature, "which do not give us a very high idea of Tradescant's science or discernment." That is now partly the Ashmole museum at Oxford.

Next was Kenning's Museum in the Haymarket, not far from 1700, founded by John Kenning, originally had Egyptian, Greek & Roman antiquities, &c.

The collection founded by Sir Hans Sloane in 1753, was purchased by Parliament for 20,000 £. It is now in the British Museum. To this was added the Harleyan Manuscripts, the Cotton Library, King's Library, Sturgeson vases, Grecian Marbles, &c.



444. Locke on Education.

"Some Thoughts concerning Education."

Dedicatory Epistle dated, 7 March 1690.

"Most childrens constitutions are either spoiled or harmed, by cockering & tenderness." "Gentlemen should use their children as honest farmers and substantial yeomen do theirs."

Nature will fashion the body better than we can direct her. We have few well-shaped, who are strait laced or much tampered with.

Hard bodice & pinching clothes make narrow breasts, short & stinking breaths, ill-lungs and crookedness.

A child in coats should not eat flesh, or at least till he is two or three years old. But parents will not consent to it. Make the child chew his food well. We English are negligent in this.

Childs breakfast & Supper - milk, milk pottage, water gruel, flummery & other things are fit. They should be taken plain; they should not be seasoned with spice and the less sugar that is used the better. Be sparing of salt. - A piece of good brown bread with or without butter or cheese, would be a good breakfast for a boy. Give him dry-bread between meals, if he calls for victuals. Our palates & stomachs become pleased with the things we are used to, be they plain or delicate.

"I impute a great part of our diseases in England to our eating too much flesh and too little bread".

He allows the boy flesh at dinner & small beer for drink.

He should taste no wine or strong drink; yet he says "nothing is so ordinarily given to children".

Severely, he says "leave a great part of their happiness in strong drink" & are always forward to offer it to the child.

Ripe fruit, he would give children; but not such long peaches, & grapes. Apples are good.

Sweetmeats he considers bad & rejects.

Should rise early. 8 hours is rest enough for grown people - children may have more.

Let the bed be hard - rather quilts than feathers. Being buried in feathers melts & dissolves the body. & is often the cause of weakness, & disease. The stone & other indispositions come from downy beds.

Regular Stools, he would induce, & make them habitual at or near a certain hour, every day - one a day. "Going to the necessary house" he uses to call it "making court to madam Gloucina".

Wages.

1694. 166. 244. 248. 249. 250. 251. 252. 253. 254. 255. 256. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. 263. 264. 265. 266. 267. 268. 269. 270. 271. 272. 273. 274. 275. 276. 277. 278. 279. 280. 281. 282. 283. 284. 285. 286. 287. 288. 289. 290. 291. 292. 293. 294. 295. 296. 297. 298. 299. 300. 301. 302. 303. 304. 305. 306. 307. 308. 309. 310. 311. 312. 313. 314. 315. 316. 317. 318. 319. 320. 321. 322. 323. 324. 325. 326. 327. 328. 329. 330. 331. 332. 333. 334. 335. 336. 337. 338. 339. 340. 341. 342. 343. 344. 345. 346. 347. 348. 349. 350. 351. 352. 353. 354. 355. 356. 357. 358. 359. 360. 361. 362. 363. 364. 365. 366. 367. 368. 369. 370. 371. 372. 373. 374. 375. 376. 377. 378. 379. 380. 381. 382. 383. 384. 385. 386. 387. 388. 389. 390. 391. 392. 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398. 399. 400. 401. 402. 403. 404. 405. 406. 407. 408. 409. 410. 411. 412. 413. 414. 415. 416. 417. 418. 419. 420. 421. 422. 423. 424. 425. 426. 427. 428. 429. 430. 431. 432. 433. 434. 435. 436. 437. 438. 439. 440. 441. 442. 443. 444. 445. 446. 447. 448. 449. 450. 451. 452. 453. 454. 455. 456. 457. 458. 459. 460. 461. 462. 463. 464. 465. 466. 467. 468. 469. 470. 471. 472. 473. 474. 475. 476. 477. 478. 479. 480. 481. 482. 483. 484. 485. 486. 487. 488. 489. 490. 491. 492. 493. 494. 495. 496. 497. 498. 499. 500. 501. 502. 503. 504. 505. 506. 507. 508. 509. 510. 511. 512. 513. 514. 515. 516. 517. 518. 519. 520. 521. 522. 523. 524. 525. 526. 527. 528. 529. 530. 531. 532. 533. 534. 535. 536. 537. 538. 539. 540. 541. 542. 543. 544. 545. 546. 547. 548. 549. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847. 848. 849. 850. 851. 852. 853. 854. 855. 856. 857. 858. 859. 860. 861. 862. 863. 864. 865. 866. 867. 868. 869. 870. 871. 872. 873. 874. 875. 876. 877. 878. 879. 880. 881. 882. 883. 884. 885. 886. 887. 888. 889. 890. 891. 892. 893. 894. 895. 896. 897. 898. 899. 900. 901. 902. 903. 904. 905. 906. 907. 908. 909. 910. 911. 912. 913. 914. 915. 916. 917. 918. 919. 920. 921. 922. 923. 924. 925. 926. 927. 928. 929. 930. 931. 932. 933. 934. 935. 936. 937. 938. 939. 940. 941. 942. 943. 944. 945. 946. 947. 948. 949. 950. 951. 952. 953. 954. 955. 956. 957. 958. 959. 960. 961. 962. 963. 964. 965. 966. 967. 968. 969. 970. 971. 972. 973. 974. 975. 976. 977. 978. 979. 980. 981. 982. 983. 984. 985. 986. 987. 988. 989. 990. 991. 992. 993. 994. 995. 996. 997. 998. 999. 1000.



Con. 9. 242 **Physic.** Never give children any physic to prevent Diseases. Have a care of tampering that way. Nor is physic to be given, or the physician called to children, upon every little indisposition; <sup>is frequently</sup> if the physic can be a busy man, that will presently fill their windows with gallipots, and their stomachs with drugs. "It is safer to leave them wholly to nature than to put them into the hands of one forward to tamper, or that thinks children are to be cured in ordinary distempers, by any thing but diet or by a method very little distant from it." Gentle treatment often puts an end to distempers in the beginning, which, by too forward applications, might have been made lusty diseases. When such treatment will not stop the growing mischief, it will be time to seek the advice of some sober & discreet physician. "Nobody can have a pretence to doubt the advice of one who has spent some time in the study of physic, when he counsels you not to be too forward in making use of physic and physicians."

**Rules for Health** - Plenty of open air, exercise & sleep; plain diet, no wine or strong drink, and very little or no physic; not too warm & straight clothing; especially the head and feet kept cold, and the feet often used to cold water.

The difference in the manners & abilities of men is owing more to their education than any thing else.

The foundation of all virtue & worth is placed in this, that a man is able to deny himself his own desires, cross his own inclinations & purely follow what reason directs as best.   
 H. 2. 255  
 H. 5. 32  
 H. 11. 383  
 1. 387  
 15. 452  
 See. 11. 389: "Nothing so deplorable as the want of a want."

p. 371 "The Rod is the only instrument of government that tutors generally know, or ever think of, and is the most unfit to be used in education." Beating should rarely be applied.

Dancing. He thinks children should be taught, but he would not puzzle them about viceties of breeding.   
 1. 255

7. 309 Servants, Locke speaks disparagingly of. He considers them ignorant & often vicious.

Private Tutors, he recommends. Thinks a boy cannot be sent to a public school without loss of innocence & virtue. He calls schools, "herds of silly boys" referring to Grammar Schools.

4. 417 The complaint was that vice was increasing, and piety & virtue every where decaying.

"Lying is so much in fashion amongst all sorts of people that a child can hardly avoid the use made of it on all occasions."

Latin & Greek. He thinks many years are spent in these to little purpose.

The Clerk of the Parish read Sternhold & Hopkins, and thought them the greatest poets in the world.

x. Locke says that vice did not more abound, growing not in indulgence of children's passions. Retaliation, discretion, & so taught them. See Am. ed. of Agassiz No. 46.



**Reading.** When a child begins to read a little, give him Aesop's fables, with pictures. "As soon as he begins to spell", he would get for him pictures of animals with printed names. Reynolds the Fox is another book he may have - let him learn the Lord's prayer, the creed, the ten Commandments. "not by reading them in his Primer, but by somebody's repeating them to him, even before he can read."

He did not know what other books then were fit for a child, besides those above mentioned - refers to "silly ones."

The method of schools, <sup>in teaching to read</sup> has been to add to "the ordinary road of the Horn book, Primer, Psalter, Testament & Bible."

These were only books used "to engage the liking of children & tempt them to read" in the schools. He thinks Aesop, Reynolds & such like have been neglected. "The fear of the rod enforced them to learn."

**The Bible.** "Children are usually employed in the bible, to improve their talent in reading." He thought the promiscuous reading of the bible was a disadvantage to children, but would have them read some parts.

**Writing.** When he can read English well, he can begin to write. He recommends engraved plates to copy from.

**Short Hand** maybe worth learning. Said to be known only in England.

French comes next.

Latin comes next is necessary for a gentleman, but he objects to forcing those that are intended for trade & commerce, or for "trades", or farmers, sons, to learn the rudiments of Latin. It seems that Grammar Schools taught Latin to those intended for trades, & to the children of tradesmen & farmers. They did this because it was the custom. Parents thought "their children had scarce any other education unless they learned that silly Grammar". It seems they learned little but Grammar, & Rudiments. The ordinary way of learning Latin at Grammar Schools, he disapproves entirely. Children were "whipped to it", i.e. Latin. He would not have the child do much with grammar of any sort.

Grammar has its use, but there is more stir about it than in these needs. Grammar is not needed in the ordinary course of society. Much the greatest part of Englishmen have never been taught the grammar of the English language those who are to do business in the world with their tongues and their, as no should study Grammar, but it should be the forced to learn grammar of foreign & dead languages and are never once told of the grammar of their own tongues. They do not know there is such a thing.

He would have men study the grammar of their own language when they studied any, or most men. But if you send your son to school you must submit to what you find there, and he must study Latin.



"Poetry & Gaming, which usually go together, are <sup>all. 2. 270</sup> <sup>" 7. 322</sup> ~~alone in this~~, that they seldom bring any advantage but to those who ~~have nothing~~ <sup>are to be won?</sup>

"I guess" is an expression of Locke. <sup>all. 2. 147</sup>

He condemns much, very much in the Grammar schools. Alludes to no other public schools <sup>all. 2. 274</sup>

Geography, Arithmetick, Astronomy, Geometry, Chronology, History, Ethics, Civil Law, English Law, he would have taught to young men & children.

Rhetorick & Logic, he says, are of little advantage to young people. One does not get the skill of reasoning well or speaking handsomely, by studying those rules that pretend to teach it.

Children's Books. "The fables of AEsop is the only book almost that I know, fit for children".

English is the language that an English Gentleman should chiefly cultivate. Yet, he says, to speak English with facility & purity, is not the work of his education, nor the care of his teacher. If he can do this, it is owing to chance or his genius. "To mind what English his pupil speaks or writes, is below the dignity of a bred up among Greek and Latin." He (the school-master) considers that "English is the language of illiterate vulgar." Locke would have gentlemen understand Greek & Latin, but pay more attention to their own language.

Natural Philosophy.

Dancing, he would have children learn, to acquire graceful motions, manliness & confidence. <sup>all. 2. 285</sup> He counts little or nothing, "the jiggging part and the figures of dances".

Locke speaks blighting of Instrumental Music and Fencing, for a young man.

Recreation. He would have gardening, husbandry <sup>all. 2. 286</sup> working in wood, or some manual art. He dislikes Cards & Dice. The young man should learn to keep accounts. — Travel.

Locke wrote for the "Gentleman's Son", not for the son of the workman.

Pastimes & High Life. "It has been nothing but the vanity and <sup>all. 2. 286</sup> pride of greatness & riches that has brought unprofitable and dangerous pastimes into fashion & persuaded people into a belief that the learning or putting their hands to any thing that was useful, could not be a diversion fit for a gentleman. This has been that which has given cards, dice, drinking, so much credit in the world". many spend their spare hours in them and find fun. custom, then from any delight in them.

Spelling. Locke makes no allusion to learning to spell <sup>all. 3. 142</sup> separately from reading. Uses the word "spell" but once (see top of preceding page) and never refers to a Spelling book.



418. From Locke's Correspondence

Letter from John Locke to Wm. Molyneux, Dated June 5, 1697

Physic & Physicians [Cont. 9. 242]

Second "The true art of Physic is the curing of diseases; This has been made "learned, specious, talkative, but ineffective to its great end - the health of mankind."

"learned Physicians, that went to America from Europe, stored with their hypotheses, borrowed from natural philosophy, which made them great men and admired in the schools, in curing diseases, were outgone [excelled] by the poor illiterate Americans [Indians] who had escaped those splendid clogs. [This is not quite verbatim but nearly.]

"You cannot imagine how far a little observation, made by a man not tied up to the four humors, or Sal, Sulphur & Mercury; or to acid and alkali which has of late prevailed, will carry a man, in curing diseases, though very stubborn & dangerous, and that with very little ~~and~~ common things, and almost no medicines at all." "Of this I could by my own experience convince you."

Locke says - 11th Sept. 1697. "I have now wholly laid aside the study of Physic."

"Truth  
Molyneux said, "that were it man's interest, I would question the truth of Euclid's Elements!" Molyneux to Locke March 15, 1697-8.

Locke had a high opinion of Dr. Sydenham, because he went by practical observation, and not by speculative hypotheses. 1692.

Physick he says is very imperfect though advanced by late English authors. This in 1692. Locke writes like a man giving much attention to Physic. He says, however, 1693, that he does not meddle with the practice of Physic

cont. 381. "In the learned world, methinks wit and invention has much the preference to truth."

Second. "I fear the Galenists' four humors, or the Chymists' Sal, Sulphur and Mercury, or the late prevailing inventions of acid and alkali; or whatever may be substituted for these, will be found but so many learned, empty sounds." Locke. Ibid

"Sal, Sulphur, & Mercury" used by Benj. Jonson's Alchemist, 1610. Those who know not so much as the very principles of religion, cannot be thought to be Christians.

"The late protestant peasantry of France understood religion much better & would say more for it, than those of a higher condition in England." cont. 382

Sc 100. "We send our children to school to learn their Grammar and their Terence, & they learn their play books &c. Ben Jonson, The Staple of News. 1625"



"Locke — had no taste for fiction; he thought Blackmore a great genius as Homer."

"Newton — considered poetry as on a par with 'insanious nonsense'."

Milton loved poetry and loved physics & political truth. We may love matter of fact, and fiction at the same time.

Bright Hunt.

"Bacon wrote verses, but he had not heart enough to write good ones."

L.H.

Bacon versified his maxims. Here is a couplet — below Grub's foot:

M. 4. 294 "With wine man's spirit for to recreate,  
And oil man's face for to exornate."

[See his Verses Ed. Enc. II. 175.]

Several of England's Statesmen have written poetry, as Wyatt, Essex, Sackville, Raleigh, Puckland, Marvell, Campbell, Somers, Bolingbroke, &c.

M. 8. 322. How with Notion of Poetry.

Knowledge —

The school boy with satchel goes with slow pace.

"The haste we make you know,  
To Knowledge & to virtue's slow." Cotton

Jack Cade [Ed. Enc. II. 341].

Shakespeare makes Jack Cade say: —

"Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm, in erecting a grammar school; and whereas before, our forefathers had no other books but the Beccore, and the thing, thou hast caused printing to be used, and contrary to the king, his crowne & religiosity, thou hast built a paper mill!" Henry VI. Act IV.

p. 466 Locke's opinion about Latin & Greek.

Remarks of Edinburgh Encyc. on Locke — under Education. Volume II. p. 173.

p. 389. Pierce or Peire Plowman, was written by Robert Langland [in 1350] & is a severe satire on the times. He wrote a long poem, in old & rough Danish verse, without rhyme. There is alliteration in it, two or three words in every two lines beginning with the same consonant. — an almost every distinct line words begin with the same letter. Langland was a Shropshire man, born in Clebyrie, 8 miles from Malvern Hills. His work was written between 1350 and 1400. Analytic Mag. VI. p. 20







